This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 07591877 5

l

A FRENCH GRAMMAR

BY

LOUIS BEVIER, JR., PH.D.
Professor in Rutgers College

PUBLIC LIBRARY

WITH EXERCISES

BY

THOMAS LOGIE, PH.D.

SECOND EDITION

NEW YORK
HENRY HOLT AND COMPANY
1897

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
65481
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.
R 1914 L

Copyright, 1896,
BY
HENRY HOLT & CO.

ROBERT DRUMMOND, ELECTROTYPER AND PRINTER, NEW YORK.

PREFACE.

A FRENCH grammar for the use of the older students in fitting schools and for colleges should present the facts of the language with reasonable fulness and with the greatest possible fidelity to scientific truth. It should be permeated with the historic spirit, and should not wantonly neglect the results of modern phonetics, and of linguistic science in the Romance field. In the opinion of the author this is quite compatible with practical adaptation to class-room needs. A practical French grammar should be first of all scientific, and a scientific French grammar ought, if intended for the class-room, of course to be practical. The attempt is here made to supply what the author believes to be the most urgent need of French teachers. Attention is called especially to the following points:

The section on Phonology presents, very briefly, the most important phonetic laws which have shaped modern French. The results of Romance Philology have been utilized, as far as space permitted, to place before the student the relation of French to its antecedent Folk-Latin. The student with even an elementary knowledge of Latin, who in learning French ignores its historic growth, loses both a valuable discipline and a useful practical tool. To many minds the table on pages 12 and 13 will have a high educational value as a glimpse into unexplored regions.

The section on Pronunciation approaches the French sounds less by way of rough approximation on the basis of English, than as an independent problem in phonetics.

The French sounds are so simple taken by themselves that it is a great loss to confuse the issue by false analogies. Besides the great matter of quality, especial attention is called to the rules of quantity (§ 59) and of stress accent (§ 38), about which so much that is erroneous is still found in our text-books. A good pronunciation can only be gained by the imitation of a correct model, but that increases the need of a clear statement of facts for comparison and verification. The best-equipped teachers cannot be too careful to ground their pronunciation in phonetics.

The chapter on Inflection keeps in view the historic growth of the language. Everybody knows that the forms of modern French are the result of a long process of evolution. To present them absolutely without any hint of their origin, is, to say the least, misleading, besides, as a practical matter, sacrificing valuable mnemonic associations. A student with one year's Latin will, for example, master the adjective inflection after one reading, provided that he learns it as a partial survival of the Latin adjective declension. If, on the other hand, he be told that "the French adjective adds *e* to the masculine to form the feminine, except as hereinafter specifically set forth, etc.," he is confronted by a mass of rules and exceptions which can only be learned by joyless grubbing. The same principle applies *a fortiori* to the verb conjugation, see particularly §§ 117, 118, as a preparation for the study of the irregular verb.

The Syntax is sharply separated from Inflection, as it ought to be. Here too the historic principle is utilized, but, as historic syntax does not furnish proportionally as much matter for elementary treatment as does inflection, the historic matter in this part is correspondingly subordinated in amount and prominence. The presentation of the uses of the subjunctive is made more clear by the addition of a tabular summary (see p. 177). The prepositions receive more than the cavalier treatment to which they have been too much accustomed. The numerous illustrative sentences have not been made to order to suit

the rules, but have been culled from the actual body of the literature, the large majority particularly for this work.

The exercises, prepared according to the author's plan, by Dr. Thomas Logie, are from the first arranged to secure continuity of thought, and as much of living interest as possible. The introduction of colloquial matter by way of suggestion to teachers will, it is hoped, be supplemented by extemporaneous additions in the class-room and be found useful and stimulating.

The author cannot give in detail the credit for assistance which he has received from many kind friends. Special mention must be made, however, of Dr. Logie, who, besides the preparation of the exercises, revised the chapter on Phonology and made numerous suggestions throughout. I would also most heartily thank Professors A. Marshall Elliott, John E. Matzke and H. C. G. Brandt for their criticisms and useful suggestions. To Mr. E. B. Davis, my colleague, is due an acknowledgment of heavy obligation for his assistance in putting the book through the press, as well as for many suggestions especially in the chapter on Pronunciation.

L. BEVIER, JR.

RUTGERS COLLEGE,
Sept. 1, 1896.

CONTENTS.

INTRODUCTION.

PAGES

THE HISTORY OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE..... 1–8

PART I.

PHONOLOGY (9–46).

SECTION I, PHONOLOGY (10–18).

HISTORY OF THE VOWELS..... 10–14
HISTORY OF THE CONSONANTS..... 14–18

SECTION II, PRONUNCIATION (18–46).

THE SOUNDS OF SPOKEN FRENCH..... 18–21
THE SCRIPT..... 21–23
STRESS-ACCENT..... 23–24
THE PRONUNCIATION OF THE VOWELS, QUALITY..... 24–34
THE QUANTITY OF VOWELS..... 34–35
THE CONSONANTS, INITIAL AND MEDIAL..... 35–41
FINAL CONSONANTS, NOT LINKED..... 41–44
THE LINKING OF CONSONANTS..... 44–45
PHONETIC TRANSLITERATIONS..... 45–46

PART II.

INFLECTION (47–94).

THE ARTICLE..... 48
THE NOUN..... 49–54
Gender..... 49–51
Number..... 51–54
THE ADJECTIVE..... 54–59
Gender..... 54–56
Number..... 56–57

PAGES
Comparison 57–58
Numerals 58–59
PRONOUNS AND PRONOMINAL ADJECTIVES 60–63
Personal Pronouns 60–61
Possessives 61
Demonstratives 62
Relatives 62–63
Interrogatives 63
THE VERB 63–90
The Personal Endings, and their Origin 65–66
The Principal Parts of the Verb 67–68
The Auxiliary Verbs 68–70
The Classification of Verbs 70–71
The First Regular Conjugation 71–75
The Second Regular Conjugation 75–76
The Conjugation of Reflexives 76–77
The Passive Voice 77
Irregular Verbs 77–90
THE ADVERB 90–91
INDEX OF IRREGULAR VERBS 92–94

PART III.

SYNTAX.

GENERAL SYNTAX (95–113).

CLASSIFICATION OF SENTENCES 95–98
THE SIMPLE SENTENCE 98–105
The Subject 98–100
The Predicate 100–101
The Simple Sentence Expanded 101–103
Agreement of Subject and Verb 103–105
THE COMPOUND SENTENCE 105–110
Coördination, or Parataxis 106
Subordination, or Hypotaxis 106–110
Substantive Clauses 106–107
Adverbial Clauses 107–110
Adjective Clauses 110
WORD-ORDER 111–113

SPECIAL SYNTAX (114–216).

THE ARTICLE 114–120
The Definite Article 114–181

CONTENTS.

PA

With Proper Nouns 115–1

The Partitive Article 116–1

The Indefinite Article 118

Repetition of the Articles 118–1

Omission of the Articles 119–1

THE NOUN 120–1

Number 120–1

Case 121–1

THE ADJECTIVE 122–1

Agreement 122–1

Position 125–1

Comparison 126–1

Numeral Adjectives 127–1

PRONOUNS AND PRONOMINAL ADJECTIVES 128–1

Agreement 128

Personal Pronouns 129–1

Conjunctive Personal Pronouns 129–1

As Subject 129–1

As Object 130–1

Reflexives 135

Arrangement of Object-pronouns 135–1

Repetition of Conjunctives 137

Disjunctive Personal Pronouns 137–1

Possessives 139–1

Adjective Forms 139–1

Substantive Forms 140–1

Demonstratives 141–1

Adjective Forms 141

Substantive Forms 142–1

Relatives 145–1

Interrogatives 148–1

Adjective Forms 148

Substantive Forms 148–1

Indefinites 150–1

THE VERB 155–1

Classification 155–1

The Auxiliaries 156–1

Impersonal Verbs 158–1

Reflexive Verbs 159–1

The Passive Voice 160–1

The Indicative Mood 161–

The Tenses of the Indicative 161

PAGES

The Conditional Mood 165–168
The Subjunctive Mood 168–178
In Independent Clauses 168–169
In Dependent Clauses 169–176
The Tenses of the Subjunctive 176–178
The Imperative Mood 178–179
The Infinitive Mood 179–192
As a Nominative 179–181
Complementary Infinitive 181–189
The Infinitive Absolute 189–190
After Adjectives 190–191
After Nouns 191
With Prepositions other than **de** or **à** 191–192
THE PARTICIPLE 192–197
The Present Participle 193–195
The Past Participle 195–197
Agreement in Compound Tenses 195–197
The Compound Participle 197
THE ADVERB 197–206
Adverbs of Quantity 198
Place of the Adverb 198–199
Responsives 199–200
The Negative 200–206
Pas and **Point** 201–202
Other Negative Complements 202–203
Ne without Negative Complement 204–206
THE PREPOSITION 206–215
The Uses of **de** 207–209
The Uses of **à** 209–211
Other Common Prepositions 211–214
Repetition of the Prepositions 214–215
THE CONJUNCTION 215–216
Coördinating Conjunctions 215
Subordinating Conjunctions 216

EXERCISES 217–266
VOCABULARIES AND INDEX 267–341
FRENCH-ENGLISH VOCABULARY 267–326
ENGLISH-FRENCH VOCABULARY 327–338
INDEX 339–341

A FRENCH GRAMMAR

CHARACTERS USED TO INDICATE PRONUNCIATION.

ă, ĕ, ĭ, etc., short **a, e, i**, etc., in the literary Latin.
ā, ē, ī, etc., long **a, e, i**, etc., in the literary Latin.
a·, ę·, i·, etc., long **a, ę, i**, etc., cf. 59.
a, the deep sound of **a**, cf. 30 *b*.
ȧ, palatal **a**, like *a* in *ask*, cf. 30 *a*.
ã, nasalized **a**, cf. 31 *g*.
ę, close **e**, cf. 31 *c*.
ę, open **e**, like *e* in *net, there*.
e, obscure **e**, cf. 31 *f*.
ę̃ or **ẽ**, nasalized **ę**, cf. 31 *b, g* 1.
i or **i̯**, close **i**, like *i* in *pique*.
i̯, consonantal **i**, like *y* in *yet*.
ǫ, close **o**, cf. 31 *c*.
ǫ, open **o**, cf. 31 *d*.
ȯ, palatalized **o**, cf. 31 *e*.
ǫ̇, palatalized **ǫ**, cf. 31 *e*.
ǫ̇, palatalized **ǫ**, cf. 31 *e*.
ǫ̃ or **õ**, nasalized **ǫ**, cf. 31 *b, g*.
œ̃, nasal vowel, cf. 31 *b, g* 3.
u or **u̯**, close **u**, like *u* in *lute*.
ü, palatalized **u**, cf. 31 *e*.
u̯, consonantal **u**, like *w* in *wet*, cf. 32 *a*.
ü̯, consonantal **ü**, cf. 32 *a*.
'h, "aspirate" **h**, cf. 66.
š, the voiceless palatal spirant, like *sh* in *ash*.
ž, the voiced palatal spirant, like *z* in *azure*.
ṅ, the palatal nasal, cf. 32 *e*.
r, l, f, v, s, z, m, n, p, b, t, d, k, g need no explanation, but cf. 32 and 60.

ABBREVIATIONS USED IN CITING FROM AUTHORS.

Acad. . . } The Academy Dictionary.
Bal. . . . . Balzac.
de V. . . . de Vigny.
Chat. or Chateau. } Chateaubriand.
Corn. . . . Corneille.
Ead. . . . eadem, *f.*, the same.
Fén. . . . Fénelon.
Grév. . . Gréville.
G. S. . . . George Sand.
Id. . . . . idem, *m.*, the same.
Iid. . . . iidem, *pl.*, the same.
Lamart. . Lamartine.
L. F. . . . La Fontaine.
Mol. . . . Molière.
Prov. . . Proverb.
Rac. . . . Racine.
Sév. . . . Sévigné.
Ste.-Bve. . Sainte-Beuve.
V. H. . . . Victor Hugo.
Vol. or Volt. . } Voltaire.

INTRODUCTION.

THE HISTORY OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE.

1. **The Indo-European Family of Languages.** Before the dawn of history the Indo-European or Aryan people had dispersed, and their descendants in Europe and Asia spoke languages which, though derived from a common source, already differed widely. The most important divisions were the Asiatic branch, consisting of *Sanskrit* and *Zend; Greek;* the Italic branch, of which *Latin* is the best known member; *Keltic,* represented by Gaelic, Old Irish, etc.; *Teutonic,* living descendants of which are German, Dutch, English (through Anglo-Saxon), Norse, etc.; and *Slavonic,* represented chiefly by Russian.

2. **Keltic and Latin.** The ancient inhabitants of Gaul before the Roman conquest spoke a Keltic dialect which was, after the campaigns of Cæsar (58–51 B.C.), gradually supplanted by Latin, the language of the victors. The people held to their native tongue, but the Latin, becoming the language of the government, of the church, of trade, and of the schools, was adopted in the course of the early centuries of our era by a vast majority even of the uneducated, until finally the Keltic perished utterly, leaving behind some proper names of places and a few isolated words, such as **bec, braie, cervoise, lieue,** etc. Besides this most scholars believe that the change of Latin ṵ to ü is due to Keltic habits of articulation (44).

3. **Latin and Teutonic.** The Teutonic invaders, Franks and Burgundians, in the fourth and succeeding centuries brought with them their native Teutonic dialects, belonging to another branch of the great Indo-European family, to contend for the soil of Gaul, but they found a civilized

people using a cultivated and highly organized tongue, and the Latin as the language of the higher civilization triumphed. Many Teutonic words, however, pertaining to government, war, the chase, etc., were taken up into the current vocabulary, e.g. **sénéchal, guerre, heaume, épervier,** etc. The very names of the country and the people (**France, français**) bear witness to the Teutonic conquest. Nevertheless Latin lived on, and in the course of the centuries has developed into modern French.

4. The Romance Languages. The Latin had a similar history in other lands. Transplanted by conquest and colonization to the countries about the Mediterranean it developed diversely in different places, partly owing to the diversity of language with which it came in contact; in Portugal into the *Portuguese,* in Spain into the *Spanish,* in South France, Provence (the old Roman *Provincia*), into *Provençal,* and in Italy into the *Italian.* These together with *French* and some less important dialects, as the *Catalonian,* the *Rumanian,* the *Rhæto-Romanic* or *Rumansh,* form the group known as the Romance languages, being derived from the "**Lingua Romana**" or *Folk-Latin.*

5. The Folk-Latin. The Latin that was carried to Gaul was not the Latin of Cicero, for even in Rome the people did not talk as Cicero wrote. From the time when Latin was first used for literary purposes there were in Rome two forms of the language, the literary and the spoken. At the beginning of the literature these differed but little, but gradually the written language became more artistic in form and expression, rendering various shades of meaning not discriminated in ordinary speech and employing a larger number of declensional forms than was possessed by the spoken language. The latter too underwent its own development. In this way the literary and spoken forms of the Latin diverged more and more from each other with the course of time till the Augustan age of Latin literature, when they reached their greatest separation. This spoken

Latin or Folk-Latin (**sermo quotidianus, rusticus, vulgaris, militaris**) existed at Rome at all times and is not a corruption of the classic Latin. Out of this the Romance languages have developed. This was the spoken language of the colonists who settled in the various Roman provinces conquered by the legions.

6. The Growth of Dialects. This language, when it had obtained a foothold in Gaul, did not remain stationary, but began at once to change as living languages always do. Moreover the changes were different in different districts, causing the beginnings of dialect diversification. As time went on these differences multiplied, creating greater and greater diversity ; and besides, the area of one peculiarity would not be at all identical with that of another, so that the country could not be divided into definite districts as A, B, C, representing so many distinct dialects, for B would share some peculiarities with A and some with C, and in one feature A and B would be alike and different from C, while in another B and C would be alike and different from A, etc. Notwithstanding this complexity which is always a condition of dialect growth, a most marked line of division arose between North and South France separating the *French* from the *Provençal.*

a. **Langue d'Oïl.** The dialects of Northern France are known as *French* or *Langue d'Oïl* (**oïl** *yes* being the particle of affirmation in the North). The dialects may be divided into three groups:—

1. The Western, (1) *Norman,* (2) *Picard.*
2. The Eastern, (1) *Lorraine,* (2) *Burgundian.*
3. The Central dialect or that of the *Ile de France* and part of *Champagne.*

b. **Langue d'Oc.** The chief dialects of Southern France, grouped as *Provençal* or *Langue d'Oc* (**oc** being the particle of affirmation in the South), are *Gascon, Auvergnat, Limousin, Langue d'Oc, Dauphinois,* and the dialect of *Provence.*

7. Beginnings of Romance Literature. For centuries after the Christian era writers conformed their language as much as possible to that of the Latin classics, but increasing ignorance of Latin and lessening interest in literature made this more and more difficult, until at last the attempt was made to turn to literary ends the language of ordinary life. By this time the latter had been so profoundly modified that it could not be called Latin at all. Moreover, since each writer aimed to write in the particular dialect that he spoke, not guided by any standard authority, the earliest monuments present wide diversity in their orthography.

8. Provençal Literature. In the South, Provençal blossomed forth in the eleventh and twelfth centuries in the rich literature of the *troubadours*. Provençal forms of poetry were transplanted to the court of Marie of Champagne, and this province also became an important literary centre. In the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries the literature of South France declined, and it was only with the first quarter of the present century that energetic attempts were again made to cultivate a literature there,—attempts which have not been wholly unsuccessful.

9. French Literature. The time when French was first used for literary purposes cannot be accurately ascertained, for the earliest productions may have been lost. The same may be said of the Provençal. The earliest remaining specimen of the French language belongs to the year 842, and is a copy of the oaths exchanged at Strassburg between Charles the Bald and Louis the German. But literature proper does not begin till later, and by far the most noteworthy development is the voluminous early epic literature of the eleventh century, the **chansons de geste** of the **trouvères**, of which the most famous is the **Chanson de Roland.** Thus far each author wrote in his own native dialect, and there was no recognized standard language used for literary purposes. In the earliest period the Norman and Picard dialects produced the richest literature, but the

political predominance of Paris and its importance as an intellectual centre soon raised the dialect of the **Ile de France** to a position of supremacy as the literary language of North France.

10. Old French. The language of the old epic literature and of the earliest prose is known as *Old French.* Besides the numerous **trouvères** whose names are for the most part unknown three prose writers must be mentioned, viz. *Villehardouin* (about 1160–1213), *Joinville* (1222–1317), and *Froissart* (about 1337–1410). This Old French formed a stage intermediate between the Latin and the French of to-day. The noun had not wholly lost its inflection. Of the six Latin cases two still remained, a subjective, derived from the Latin nominative, and an objective, generally to be traced to the Folk-Latin oblique case (85 *b*). This allowed great freedom in the order of words, a freedom almost wholly lost in modern French. It had moreover a rich vocabulary and a supple syntax. The next two centuries are both politically and linguistically disastrous. The political disintegration of France due to the long wars of succession with England accompanied by the desertion of the schools and the stifling of literature had a baleful influence also on the language, so that it made but little progress in artistic literary development.

11. Modern French. Modern French cannot be said to date from any one year. The Italian Renaissance, with which the invasions of Italy by Charles VIII. and Louis XII., and the influence of Catharine de Medici, brought the French into intimate contact and sympathy, stimulated greatly the interest in language and literature. The Italian influence became very great at court. A flood of Latin and Italian words and phrases poured into French, and Italian was spoken in polite circles almost as much as the native language. The reaction however came, headed by *Malherbe,* and from this period when the genius of the French nation reasserted its independence we may roughly date modern *French,* the French of *Corneille*, Molière, and

Racine, the French of *Victor Hugo, Théophile Gautier, de Musset,* and *Sainte-Beuve.*

12. **From Latin to French.** When we pass from the Folk-Latin to the French of to-day we cross a great gulf, the sum of minute changes accumulating through the centuries. These changes may be grouped under three heads, viz. in the vocabulary, in the form of words, and in the meaning of words.

a. **Changes in the Vocabulary.** An analysis of the vocabulary of modern French reveals three classes of words:—

1. **The Inherited Stock** received by unbroken tradition from the Folk-Latin. Many of the words in the Folk-Latin vocabulary have not passed into the French, but nevertheless those received from this source are still the determining factor in the language of every-day life, being mostly common words such as **main, pied, oreille, œil, chien, bœuf, vache,** etc.

2. **Additions by Borrowing.** The *loan-words* in French are very numerous. The language has borrowed at various times and from many sources, beginning with Keltic words and ending with those taken in to-day from all sides, e.g. **carbonaro, club, jockey,** etc. We find words in French borrowed from Keltic, Teutonic, Arabic, Italian, Spanish, etc., but more important than all are the words which scholars have introduced from the classic Latin. This gives the language a much closer resemblance to the Latin than it would normally exhibit.

3. **Additions by Word-making.** Some few words such as interjections and onomatopoetic words have been from time to time freshly coined, but the great mass added by word-making are the result either of composition, i.e. of joining two or more independent words to form a new unity, e.g. **printemps, portemonnaie, arc-en-ciel,** etc., or of derivation, i.e. of adding prefixes and suffixes to preëxisting words. These prefixes and suffixes have been to a large

degree inherited from the Latin, but many others have themselves been formed in the French language according to well-known principles of language-growth.

b. **Changes in the Form of Words.** These are wrought chiefly in two ways:—

1. **By Phonetic Law.** The sounds of spoken language depending on the reproduction by the vocal organs of sounds heard and remembered are in a state of unstable equilibrium. Minute unconscious errors accumulate. The changes thus wrought go forward very gradually and do not rise to the consciousness of the speaker. They are independent of individual volition. They are therefore uniform throughout any unit of speech-territory, and *Phonetic Law* so far as it proceeds mechanically suffers no exceptions. The general result upon the form of words is abbreviation. Under phonetic law the inherited stock of Latin words has become largely monosyllabic (21). Borrowed words are swept into the current as soon as they are taken up into the popular speech.

2. **By Analogy, or the Association of Ideas.** The comparison (generally unconscious) of one form with another form, or of one word with another word, is an efficient cause of change. The most important modifications that are due to the workings of analogy may be grouped as "leveling." They have resulted in greatly simplifying the French inflection. A most striking result of these sound-changes is the loss of the Latin declensional system by which French has come to be a highly analytic language employing prepositions to express case-relations.

c. **Changes in the Meaning of Words.** These come about in many ways, but only the most important can be noted here.

1. **By Generalization.** The meaning of a word may become more general, e.g. **arriver** *arrive* < **adripare** *land*, **panier** *basket* < **panariu** *bread-basket*, **cheval** *horse* < **caballu** *pack-horse*, etc.

2. **By Specialization.** The meaning of a word may become more specific, e.g. **viande** *meat* < **vivenda** *edibles*, **traire** *milk* < **tragere** *draw*, etc.

3. **By Metaphor.** A metaphor fades by repetition, and the figurative sense becoming a part of the regular signification of the word sometimes displaces the literal sense and sometimes coexists with it, e.g. **caput** *head* > **chef** *chief*, **testa** *shell* > **tête** *head*, etc.

PART I.

PHONOLOGY.

18. A complete **phonology** of the French language would involve a history of the spoken sounds from the time of the introduction of Latin into Gaul until the present, i.e. a historic and detailed account of the sound-changes that have transformed Latin words into French words. The purpose of this book does not permit this here. A cursory glance at the starting-point, the most characteristic steps, and the goal must suffice. We have three things to consider in the case of each word, viz. the Latin form, the present spelling, and the present pronunciation. For convenience therefore we divide the French phonology into two sections, giving respectively the sound-history (I) from Latin to written French and (II) from written French to spoken French.

a. The justification for this division lies in the fact that *the written form represents an older stage in the language.* The relation between script and sound however is not so simple as such a statement would seem to make it. Some spellings are old and some young. Some letters now silent were pronounced at an earlier period. Hence French spelling does not represent at all accurately the sounds spoken at any particular period. An illustration will make this clear. Latin tonic **ę**[1] in an open syllable (21) developed as follows: **ę** > **ei** > **oi** > **oę** > **oę** > **oa** > **ua**, but the spelling **oi** which was phonetic in the thirteenth century is still retained, e.g. **te** > **tei** > **toi**, now pronounced **tua**. On the other hand the sound **oę** was under certain conditions simplified in the sixteenth century to **ę**, but the old writing **oi** was kept and Voltaire was the first writer to substitute **ai** for **oi**

[1] For the meaning of the various diacritical marks under or above the vowels, see the table facing page 1.

when it had the value of ę. **Ai** never was phonetic but stands for a sound dating from the sixteenth century to replace a sign dating from the thirteenth, e.g. **habebas** > **aveies** > **avois** > **avais**, since the sixteenth century pronounced **avę**. Again, the spelling in very many cases has been changed designedly to conform to an etymology either real or fancied, e.g. O.F. **conter** was rewritten **compter** through the influence of the classic Latin **computare**, although in Folk-Latin **computare** had already been abbreviated to **contare**. By a mistaken etymology O.F. **pois** < **pęsu** (**pensum**) was rewritten **poids** as if < **pondus**.

b. **Section I, Phonology proper**, concerns itself chiefly with the *inherited stock* of words (12 *a* 1) that have had a continuous life from the Latin times to the present, having been gradually modified by the unnoticed action of phonetic laws (12 *b* 1). Borrowed words (12 *a* 2) only concern us in so far as they have followed the stream since their introduction. The very numerous changes due to the working of analogy (12 *b* 2) are also left out of account, since their adequate treatment would demand far more space than can be given here. A single example must suffice in this place. The O.F. **mien** < **meum**, **tuen** < **tuum**, **suen** < **suum** are now **mien**, **tien**, **sien**, the last two having been made over on the pattern of the first. Many individual cases will be noticed in Part II.

c. **Section II** on **Pronunciation** must take account of all words that are in regular use, even the illogical and absurd mistakes that have been ingrafted on the orthography by ignorant grammarians, otherwise the real word, i.e. the uttered sound, would sometimes be unrecognizable under its fantastic garb.

SECTION I.

PHONOLOGY.

VOWELS.

19. The Folk-Latin distinguished sharply the quality of vowels, not the quantity, and it is the quality alone which determines the development from Latin into the Romance languages. Vowels in the Folk-Latin were either open or closed, corresponding in general to the short and long vowels of the literary Latin.

The Gallo-Frankish Folk-Latin (see remark on p. 14) was much less rich in vowel sounds than the literary Latin. The following table shows the correspondence between the two :—

Folk-Latin.			Classic Latin.
a (patre, matre)	corresponds to	**ă, ā**	**(pătrem, mātrem)**
ę (abęre, pęna, fęde)	" "	**ē, œ, ĭ**	**(habēre, pœnam, fĭdem)**
ę (pęde, lętu)	" "	**ĕ, æ**	**(pĕdem, lætum)**
ị (venịre)	" "	**ī**	**(venīre)**
ǫ (ǫra, dịǫrnu)	" "	**ō, ŭ**	**(hōram, diŭrnum)**
ǫ (nǫvu, ǫru)	" "	**ŏ, au**	**(nŏvum, aurum)**
ụ (nụdu)	" "	**ū**	**(nūdum)**

20. The modifications of Latin vowels depend chiefly on two conditions.

a. **Stress-Accent** has played an important part in the development of the Latin into French. Sounds in the atonic syllables did not develop in the same way as sounds in the tonic syllables. The tonic vowels in general had a more distinct articulation and are lengthened and diphthongized. The atonic vowels became weakened in sound-volume and tended to disappear. The part of the word before the tonic syllable has undergone less change than the part following the tonic syllable, because the former had a secondary accent. Thus **a`mo´re, sa`nta´te, e`pe´scpu (episcopum).** In developing into French the unaccented syllables have fallen, but those bearing the primary and secondary accents have remained, e.g. **a`mo´re > amour ; e`pe´scpu > évêque ; sa`nta´te > santé.** The earliest vowel to fall was the first of the two posttonics in proparoxytones, e.g. **seculum > seclu, calidum > caldu, frigidum > fregdu, dominum > domnu,** etc. The dropping of this syllable is one means of distinguishing words of popular origin from Latin loan-words which do not follow the above law.

b. **The Surrounding Consonants.** A syllable is open when it ends in a vowel; it is closed when it ends in a consonant. Thus **ta-le, ma-nu, o-ra** are open syllables, while in **gras-su, por-ta, vac-ca** the first are closed syllables. A vowel in an open syllable has in general a different development from one in a closed syllable. The nasals too modify the preceding vowel, and other consonants have a lesser influence.

21. The Development of the Vowels is indicated in general in the following table. The details of the phonetic development are of necessity excluded.

DEVELOPMENT OF THE VOWELS.

	a	ẹ	ẹ	ị	ọ	ọ	ụ
a. Tonic in an open syllable	> e nasu > nez tale > tel mortale > mortel	> oi[2, 9] abẹre > avoir vẹla > voile	> ie pẹde > pied fẹru > fier	> i rịpa > rive venịre > venir	> eu[3] calọre > chaleur ọra > heure	> eu[3] nọvu > neuf pọtet > peut	> u mụru > mur pụru > pur
b. Tonic in a closed syllable	> a passu > pas vacca > vache valle > val	> e mẹssa > messe lẹttra > lettre	> e pẹrdre > perdre bẹllu > bel	> i vịlla > ville ịsla > île	> ou dịọrnu > jour sọrdu > sourd	> o pọrta > porte sọrte > sort	> u jụdce > juge
c. Tonic in an open syllable before a nasal	> ai (= ẹ̃[1]) fame > faim pane > pain manu > main	> ei (= ẹ̃[1]) plẹnu > plein sẹnu > sein	> ie (= ịẹ̃) bẹne > bien vẹnet > vient	> i (= ẹ̃[1]) fịne > fin pịnu > pin	> o (= ọ̃[1]) nọme > nom dọnu > don	> o (= ọ̃[1]) bọnu > bon tọnu > ton	> u (= œ̃[1]) ụnu > un
d. Tonic in a closed syllable before a nasal	> a (= ã) cantat > chante campu > camp	> e (= ã) ẹntra > entre prẹndre > prendre	> e (= ã) vẹntu > vent tẹmplu > temple	> i (= ẹ̃) sịmja > singe lịnju > linge	> o (= ọ̃) mọnte > mont ọmbra > ombre	> o (= ọ̃) tọndre > tondre cọntat > conte	> u (= œ̃) ụmle > humble
e. In the pretonic syllable	> a clartate > clarté latrone > larron	> e pẹsare > peser sẹccare > sécher	> e lẹvare > lever pẹrdebat > perdait	> i lịbrare > livrer mịrare > mirer	> ou dọtare > douer nọdare > nouer	> ou tọrnare > tourner tọrmentu > tourment	> u jụdcare > juger

f. In the pretonic syllable before a nasal	> a (= ã) **cantare > chanter** **santate > santé**	> e (= ã) **ẹntrare > entrer** **sẹmlare > sembler**	> e (= ã) **trẹmlare > trembler** **sẹntire > sentir**	> i (= ẽ) **prịmtempus > printemps** **lịntịolu > linceul**	> o (= õ) **nọmrare > nombrer** **mọntare > monter**	> o (= õ) **cọntare > conter** **sọmnịare > songer**	> u (= ũ) **lụne + die = lụndie > lundi**
g. In the posttonic syllable	> e (mute) **rosa > rose** **amica > amie**	falls[8] **vendẹs > vends** **rompẹt > rompt**	falls[8] **amarẹ > aimer** **benẹ > bien**	falls[8] **murị > mur(s)** (cf. 85 *a*) **partịs > pars**	falls[8] **sordọ > sourd** (cf. Remark) **murọs > murs**	falls[8] **vendọ > vend(s)** (cf. 105, rem. 1) **omọ > on**	falls[8] **cornụ > cor**
h. Followed by c or g	> a[4] **lacte > lait** **pace > paix**	see [5] below	see [6] below	> i **dịctu > dit** **dịcre > dire**	> o[4] **vọce > voix** **crọce > croix**	see [7] below	> u **dụcre > duire**

[1] When the syllable is followed in French by e mute the vowel is not nasal (cf. 53 *b*): **amat > aime**; **plena > pleine, rima > rime, donat > donne, bona > bonne, una > une, luna > lune.**

[2] For ẹ > **ai** see 18*a*.

[3] Archaic forms of spelling are œu and œ: **sọror > sœur, bọve > bœuf**; **ọvu > œuf, nọdu > nœud, ọculu > œil.**

[4] An epenthetic **i** developed before **c** or **g** giving with **a** and **o** **ai** and **oi** respectively, **c** and **g** falling.

[5] An epenthetic **i** developed before **c** or **g** giving **ei > oi**, **c** and **g** falling. **tectu > teit > toit, rege > rei > roi.**

[6] An epenthetic **i** developed before **c**, which itself fell. As ẹ > **ie** there resulted the combination **iei** which, by the fall of the medial and simplification, became **i**: **lectu > lieit > lit, dece > dix.**

[7] An epenthetic **i** developed before **c**, which itself fell. From this **i** with ọ > **uo** there resulted the combination **uoi** which by the fall of the medial was simplified to **ui**: **nocte > nuoit > nuit, octo > huit, coctu > cuit.**

[8] After a group of consonants all the vowels are represented in posttonic position by **e** mute: **jọngre > joindre, clọstrịu > cloître, trẹmlo > tremble.**

[9] Before ẹ an epenthetic **i** developed after **c**, giving with ẹ > **ei** the group **iei**, which, by the fall of the medial and simplification, became **i**: **cẹra > cieire > cire, mercẹde > merci.**

REMARK.—In the chapter on Phonology Latin words are given for the most part in the forms current in the Gallo-Frankish Folk-Latin. The first of the two posttonics in proparoxytones (cf. 20 *a*), the short pretonic in paroxytones of more than three syllables, the accusative ending **m** (mute already in the Folk-Latin of Cicero's time), and an **n** before **s** are dropped. Classic Latin ĭ, ŭ, æ or œ, **au** appear as **e**, **o**, **e**, **o** respectively. Final **u** however has been allowed to stand in deference to custom, although **o** would there too be more correct. E.g. **tĕpidum** : **tepdu**, **sanitatem** : **santate**, **insulam** : **isla**, **mansionem** : **masione**, **simulare** : **semlare**, **causam** : **cosa**, etc. Minor changes are self-explanatory, but where the Folk-Latin form might not be easily recognizable by the student the literary form is added in brackets.

CONSONANTS.

22. **Initial consonants** generally remain unchanged : **bebre** > **boire**, **cornu** > **cor**, **donu** > **don**, **ferru** > **fer**, **lege** > **loi**, **monte** > **mont**, **nome** > **nom**, **passu** > **pas**, **ripa** > **rive**, **sonu** > **son**, **tondre** > **tondre**, **vivu** > **vif**. The chief exceptions are the palatals.

a. **C** before **a** > **ch**: **cane** > **chien**, **campu** > **champ**, **caballu** > **cheval**.

1. **C** before **a** remains only in loan-words taken in from another language, e g. Latin, Italian, Spanish, etc., or from another dialect, e.g. the Picard : **calomnie**, **calme**, **camarade**.

b. **C** before **e** and **i** > **c** (= **s**, 62 *b*): **centu** > **cent**, **cera** > **cire**.

c. **G** before **a** > **j**: **gamba** > **jambe**, **gardinu** > **jardin**.

d. **G** before **e** and **i** > **g** (= **ž**, 64 *b*): **gelare** > **geler**, **genre** > **gendre**.

e. The aspiration of initial **h** was lost in pure Folk-Latin words. Initial **h** has however in most cases been reintroduced into the spelling of the corresponding French words through classic influence: **ora** > **heure**, **omne** > **homme**, cf. **omo** > **on**, **abere** > **avoir**, **abutu** > **eu**.

1. The so-called aspirate **h** (66) occurs only in words of Germanic origin and in a few others which have been influenced by the German: **hair**, **haut**, **huit**.

f. When the initial groups **sp, st, sc** followed a consonant in the preceding word, an epenthetic **i** was developed before the **s**, owing to the difficulty of pronouncing the group of consonants together. This became later a more open sound, and after the fall of **s** (28 *c*) became **é**: **spata** > **ispata** > **espade** > **espée** > **épée, statu** > **été, scola** > **école.**

THE LABIALS.

23. *a.* Intervocalic **p** and **b** > **v**, and **v** remains: **debere** > **devoir, caballu** > **cheval, capellu** > **cheveu, vivat** > **vive.**

b. **V** in the final syllable before any vowel except **a** (>**e**) becomes **f**: **clave** > **clef, vivu** > **vif, ovu** > **œuf**, cf. **viva** > **vive.**

c. Double labials are simplified: **cappellu** > **chapeau, troppa** > **troupe.**

d. **P** and **b** before **r** > **v**, and **v** remains: **libru** > **livre, librare** > **livrer, capra** > **chèvre, vivre** > **vivre.**

e. Before a dental the labial is assimilated to the dental, which is then simplified: **pd** > **bd** > **dd** > **d, pt** > **tt** > **t, bd** > **dd** > **d, bt** > **pt** > **t, tepdu** > **tiède, dobtare** > **douter, scriptu** > **écrit, malabde** > **malade.**

f. The labials fall before **s** in words of popular origin: **capsa** > **chasse, metepsmu (metipsissimum)** > **même.**

g. The labials remain after consonants: **alba** > **aube, erba** > **herbe, campu** > **champ.**

THE DENTALS.

24. *a.* Intervocalic **t** first becomes voiced (**d**), and then falls; intervocalic **d** falls: **amata** > **aimée, nuda** > **nue.**

b. As finals after a vowel either originally or secondarily they fall: **amat** > **aime, ad** > **a**; **natu** > **né, nudu** > **nu.**

c. Intervocalic **tr** > **dr** > **r**: **patre** > **pedre** > **père**;

dr > **r**: **clodre** > **clore**, **credre** > **croire**; **td** > **tt** > **t**: **netdu (nitidum)** > **net.**

d. The dentals remain after consonants: **partire** > **partir**, **porta** > **porte**, **cantare** > **chanter**, **prendre** > **prendre.**

THE PALATALS.

25. The Palatals in Folk-Latin became differentiated according to the vowel following them into medio-palatals before **e** and **i**, post-palatals before **a**, and velars before **o** and **u**, giving rise to three palatal series which have had slightly different developments.

a. **The Medio-Palatals.**

1. Intervocalic **g** falls: **regina** > **reine**, **fugire** > **fuir**, **rege** > **roi.**

2. Pretonic intervocalic **c** becomes **s** (= **z**): **placere** > **plaisir**, **vecinu** > **voisin.** Posttonic it becomes mute: **pace** > **paix**, **croce** > **croix**, **voce** > **voix.**

b. **The Post-Palatals.**

Intervocalic **c** and **g** fall: **necare** > **noyer**, **ligare** > **lier.**

c. **The Velars.**

Intervocalic **c** and **g** fall: **securu** > **seur** > **sûr**, **jocu** > **jeu**, **agostu** > **aoust** > **août.**

d. Before consonants **c** and **g** fall: **factu** > **fait**, **regdu (rigidum)** > **raide.** For development of epenthetic **i** see 21.

e. Followed by **u̯** in **qu**, **gu** the labial falls and the palatal remains: **quale** > **quel** (68 *a*), **quando** > **quand**, **guastare** > **gâter**; so also after a consonant: **cinque (quinque)** > **cinq**, **lenguatcu (linguaticum)** > **langage.**

THE NASALS.

26. *a.* Intervocalic **m** and **n** remain: **amare** > **aimer**, **una** > **une.**

b. As a French final **m** > **n**; **n** remains: **rem** > **rien**,

meum > **mien, bene** > **bien, non** > **non**; but **m** is often retained in the script: **fame** > **faim, nome** > **nom.**

c. After consonants **m** and **n** remain: **arma** > **arme, galbnu** > **jaune, asnu** > **asne** > **âne.**

d. **M** + labial remains, + dental > **n**; **n** + dental remains: **gamba** > **jambe, templu** > **temple, comte** > **conte, ventu** > **vent.**

e. In the group **mn** the **n** is assimilated to the **m**: **damnatcu (damnaticum)** > **dommage; femna** > **femme, omne** > **homme.**

THE LIQUIDS.

27. *a.* Intervocalic and final **l** and **r** remain: **ala** > **aile, tela** > **toile, malu** > **mal, caru** > **cher, mare** > **mer, cera** > **cire.**

b. After consonants **l** and **r** remain: **isla** > **isle** > **île, Carlus** > **Charles, arbre** > **arbre, librare** > **librer.**

c. In the combinations **m** + **l**, **m** + **r** a **b** is generated, because in passing from the **m** position to the **l** or **r** position the vocal organs pass through the **b** position: **en** + **seml** > **ensemble, comlare** > **combler, tremlare** > **trembler, camra** > **chambre, nomru** > **nombre.** Similarly **nr** > **ndr, lr** > **ldr** (cf. *d*), **sr** > **str** (cf. 28*c*), **sr** (= **zr**) > **sdr; cenre** > **cendre, genre** > **gendre, molre** > **moldre** > **moudre, esre** > **estre** > **être, cosre (zr)** > **cosdre** > **coudre.** Cf. *slumber, cinder; ἀνήρ, ανδρός; ἡμέρα, μεσ-ημβρία; μέλι, βλίττω*; etc.

d. In the combination **l** + consonant an epenthetic **u** developed before the **l** and the latter fell: **caldu** > **chaud, falsu** > **faux, molre** > **moudre, feltru** > **feutre.**

THE SIBILANTS.

28. *a.* Intervocalic **s** becomes voiced: **posare** > **poser** (69*b*); **rosa** > **rose.**

b. **S** in the final syllable except before **a** becomes mute: **misu** > ***mis*** *(74)*; **risu** > **ris.**

c. **S** before a consonant remained in O.F. but fell in modern French: **aspru** > **aspre** > **âpre**, **asnu** > **asne** > **âne**, **isla** > **isle** > **île**.

PALATALIZED CONSONANTS.

29. Consonants followed by **i̯** have a special development, differing somewhat from the ordinary one.

a. **Pi̯** > **ch** (= **š**), **bi̯** and **vi̯** > **g** (= **ž**): **sapia̯** > **sache**, **repropia̯re** > **reprocher**, **robi̯u** > **rouge**, **rabia̯** > **rage**, **cavia̯** > **cage** (cf. 23).

b. **Ti̯** > **c**, **di̯** > **g** (**j**): **gratia̯** > **grâce**, **platia̯** > **place**, **sedia̯** > **siège**, **pedia̯** > **piège** (cf. 24).

c. **Ci̯** > **c**:—**facia̯** > **face**, **glacia̯** > **glace** (cf. 25).

d. **mi̯** and **ni̯** > **ng**: **simia̯** > **singe**, **commia̯tu** > **congé**, **extrani̯u** > **étrange**, **grani̯u** > **grange**; but in the pretonic syllable **ni̯** > **gn**:—**oni̯one** > **oignon** (cf. 26).

e. **Li̯** > **ll** (= **i̯**):—**famili̯a** > **famille**, **foli̯a** > **feuille**, **fili̯a** > **fille** (cf. 27).

SECTION II.

PRONUNCIATION.

THE SOUNDS OF SPOKEN FRENCH.

30. The Vowels. Two series of vowel-sounds are practically most important, the members of which are related both physiologically and audibly, viz. the series from **a** to **i**, and that from **a** to **u**.

a. To produce the vowel **a** the mouth is opened sufficiently to give free passage to the air, the tongue lying at rest. If now the mouth is closed until the teeth nearly meet, the tongue lying flat at the back, but thrust forward and raised at the front so as nearly to touch the hard palate just back of the teeth, and the corners of the mouth drawn apart so that the lips form a flat ellipse, the sound produced is the vowel **i**. Between these two positions an infinite number of steps is possible, each producing its characteristic vowel. The French has no sound exactly like English *a* in *father*, and the **a**—**i** series is represented by the sounds **ȧ**, **ę**, **ę**, **i**.

b. Starting again from the **a** position, if the tongue is humped at the back so as nearly to touch the soft palate, and the lips are brought together (generally rounded) so as to leave a small opening in the centre, the sound produced is **u**. The French sounds in this series are written **a**, **ǫ**, **ǫ**, **u**; but it must be noted that **a** is not the *a* in *father*, but more like *a* in *all* with lips unrounded.

31. The following table gives the French vowels with illustrative words:—

pine	**pur**	**i**			**ü**			**u**	**vous**
pré	**le peu**		**ẹ**		**ö**			**ǫ**	**vôtre**
père	**peur**			**ẹ**	**ö**	**ǫ**			**votre**
pain, lundi					**ẹ̃ œ̃**	**ǫ̃**			**vont**
par					**ȧ**	**a ã**			**vase, vent**
palm						*a*			*father*

a. This form of the vowel-triangle (due to Vietor "El. d. Phonetik") suggests the position of the tongue in forming the sounds given. Thus for **u** it is high-back, for **a** low-back, and for **i** high-front.

b. The positions of **ẹ̃** and **ǫ̃** in the triangle indicate that they are more open than **ẹ** and **ǫ**. The nasal vowel denoted by the special sign **œ̃** has no exact counterpart in the pure (non-nasal) vowels (cf. *g* 3).

c. French **ẹ** and **ǫ** are not exactly the same as our English so-called long **a** and **o**. They are closely articulated and uniform, i.e. there is no change of vocal position during their utterance. This distinction must be mastered before a fair French pronunciation can be acquired.

d. French **ǫ** varies somewhat in degree of openness according to the surrounding consonants. It is especially open before **r** + consonant, e.g. **tort, mort,** etc.

e. The French has three labio-palatal vowels not found in English, i.e. vowels made with tongue forward and raised toward the hard palate as for **i**, **ẹ**, **ẹ**, but with rounded lips as for **u**, **ǫ**, **ǫ**. To pronounce **ü** place the vocal organs in the **i** position, then gradually push forward the lips and round them. Similarly rounded **ẹ** gives **ö**, and rounded **ẹ** gives **ö**. Do not start from approximate English equivalents; this only forms a bad habit that is hard to break.

f. The French **e** is almost exactly the English sound of **e** in *the* pronounced as a proclitic, e.g. in *the man'*, *the boy'*, etc., with the lips somewhat rounded. It has decided palatal quality, i.e. the tongue is brought somewhat forward toward its **e** position. The English **u** in *but* (as usually pronounced in America) has not this palatal quality.

g. Nasal vowels differ from pure vowels in the fact that the veil between mouth-cavity and nasal passages is dropped during their utterance, giving nasal resonance. Hence any vowel may be pronounced at will with nasal timbre. The French employs four such vowels written ã, ẽ, ọ̃, œ̃, or for convenience ã, ẽ, õ, œ̃.

1. The sound ẽ varies somewhat in degree of openness. In the combination **oin** (= u̯ẽ) for example it is a little more open than in **in** (ẽ), but the difference is not important enough to justify a separate character.

2. In learning the nasal vowels start with the corresponding pure vowels and add nasal twang. Do not pronounce instead pure vowels with a nasal consonant following, e.g. **ang** for ã, etc. The habit once formed is very persistent.

3. The nasal vowel written œ̃ is very close to ẽ in vocal position, but the lips are rounded. It can only be learned by imitation.

32. The Consonantal Sounds of French may be tabulated as follows:—

	semi-vowels	open			stops
		liquids	spirants	nasals	
labials	u̯ ü̯		f, v	m	p, b
dentals		r, l	s, z	n	t, d
palatals	i̯		š, ž	ṅ	k, ġ
	voiced (voiceless)	voiced (voiceless)	voiceless voiced	voiced (voiceless)	voiceless voiced

a. The sound ü̯ does not exist in English. It may be learned from the following proportion, viz. u : u̯ = ü : ü̯ = i : i̯, e.g. in **ou** : **oui** = **pu** : **puis** = **vis** : **viens**, phonetically u : u̯i = pü : pü̯i = vi : vi̯ẽ. English **w** is slightly shorter than French u̯, thus **oui** = oŏee in English spelling, rather than *we*.

b. The regular French **r** is made at the tip of the tongue against the palate just back of the teeth. Instead of this, however, a uvular **r** is often heard. This is made at the back of the tongue, the **uvula** *being set in vibration.* It can only be acquired by imitation.

c. The French "**n mouillé**" (ṅ) resembles **n**, except that the tip of the tongue touches the lower teeth, while the middle portion touches the palate. It is usually followed by a **y** sound, e.g. **régner, règne**, etc.

THE SCRIPT.

33. The Alphabet. The French uses the following letters: **a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, j, k, l, m, n, o, p, q, r, s, t, u, v, w, x, y, z**; but **k** and **w** occur only in foreign words.

a. In spelling it is now customary to name the letters by their sounds in the word spelled, the consonants being pronounced with a mute **e** (**e**, 31*f*) following, i.e. **a, be, ke** or **ce** (cf. 62), **de**, etc. Accent-marks are also read. Thus **élève** is spelled as follows, **e** aigu, **le, e** grave, **ve, e**.

b. The old names still occasionally used are **a, bé, cé, dé, é, effe, gé, ache, i, ji, ka, elle, emme, enne, o, pé, ku, erre, esse, té, u, vé, double vé, ix, i grec, zèd.**

34. Use of Capitals. Capitals are used as follows:—

a. At the beginning of a sentence, quotation, line of poetry, etc., as in English.

b. To begin a proper noun or a proper adjective used substantively, e.g. **en Europe** *in Europe,* **le Français** *the Frenchman,* etc., but **le français,** *the French language,* cf. Rem.

REMARK.—Proper adjectives as such are not capitalized, nor are the names of the months, days of the week, *I* or *O*, e.g. **un livre français** *a French book,* **janvier** *January,* **lundi** *Monday,* **ô ma jeunesse écoulée**, etc.

35. Syllabification. In writing and printing words are divided into syllables as follows:—

a. A single consonant between vowels belongs to the vowel that follows it, e.g. **é-vé-ne-ment, é-du-ca-ti-on**, etc.

1. So too a digraph with the value of a single consonant. These are **ch, ph, th, gn** (cf. 32 *c*), e.g. **a-che-ver, di-gni-té**, etc.

b. Also two consonants (of which the latter is **r** or **l**) capable of beginning a French word, viz. **br, bl, cr, cl, dr, fr, fl, gr, gl, pr, pl, tr, vr**, e.g. **ta-ble, ê-tre, ou-vri-er**, etc.

1. Similarly **chr, chl, phl, phr, thr, thl.**

c. Other groups are divided, e.g. **al-ler, con ve-nir, don-ne, bon-heur,** etc.

1. **X** (= **ks**, cf. 72) goes with the vowel that precedes it, e.g. **ex-cel-lent, ex-ac-te-ment,** etc.

36. Various orthographic signs are used in French spelling.

a. **The Accents.** Three accent-marks are used in French, called respectively the *acute* (′ **aigu**), the *grave* (` **grave**), and the *circumflex* (ˆ **circonflex**).

1. The acute occurs only over **e** = **ẹ** (40*a*1), e.g. **été, cédé,** etc.

2. The grave occurs mostly over **e** = **ẹ** (40*b*1), e.g. **père, mère, dès, près,** etc., but is also used to distinguish **à** *to,* **là** *there,* **çà** *there,* **où** *where,* from **a** *has,* **la** *the, her, it,* **ça** *that,* **ou** *or*; also over **a** in **déjà** and **jà**.

3. The circumflex occurs over all the vowels, chiefly when some consonant (oftenest **s**) has been recently dropped, e.g. **tête** < O.F. **teste** < **testa, aimâtes** < **aimastes** < **amastis, maître** < **maistre** < **magestru,** etc.

REMARK.—These accent-marks it will be observed have nothing to do with stress of voice or accent proper (see 38), but are chiefly diacritical in function.

b. **The cedilla** (¸ **cédille**) is placed under **c** when it has the sound of **s** before **a, o, u,** e.g. **ça, façon, reçu,** etc.

c. **The diæresis** (¨ **tréma**) over a vowel shows that it is to begin a new syllable, e.g. **haïr** pronounced **à-ir** not **ẹr.**

1. It is also put over final mute **e** to show that the **gu** preceding is a syllable by itself and that the **u** is not merely the sign of "hard" **g** (64 *a* 1), e g. **aiguë** = **ẹgü, arguë** = **ȧrgü,** cf. **digue** = **dig, longue** = **lõg,** etc.

d. **The hyphen** (**- trait d'union**) is used between the parts of compound words and between words closely connected (cf. 95*b*), e.g. **arc-en-ciel** *rainbow,* **avez-vous** *have you?*

e. **The apostrophe** (**' apostrophe**) indicates elision, e.g. **l'ami** for **le ami, s'il** for **si il, l'eau** for **la eau,** etc.

37. Elision is the dropping of the final vowel of a word

before the initial vowel (or mute **h**, cf. 66) of the next word. **E**, **a**, and **i** sometimes elide in French.

a. **E** mute (cf. 40 *c*, *d*) elides:—

1. In monosyllables as follows:—**le** (article), **de**, **ne**, **que**; and the pronouns **je**, **me**, **te**, **se**, **le**, **ce**, when followed by a verb, by **en** or by **y**. Thus, **qu'il**, **d'un homme**, **j'ai**, **c'est**, but **est-ce un homme?** **ai-je aimé?** etc.

REMARK.—Elision does not take place before **oui**, and **onze**, **onzième**, e.g. **oh que oui**, **le onze**, **la onzième**.

2. In **jusque**, **lorsque**, **puisque**, **quoique** before **il(s)**, **elle(s)**, **on**, **un(e)**, and in **quelqu'un(e)**, e.g. **jusqu'au ciel**, **lorsqu'il**, etc.

3. In a few compound words chiefly with **entre**, e.g. **entr'aider**, **entr'ouvrir**, etc.

b. **A** in the article **la**, and in the pronoun **la** before a verb, **en** or **y**, e.g. **l'histoire**, **je l'aime**, **menez-l'y**, cf. **menez-la ici**, etc.

c. **I** only in **si** before **il(s)**, making **s'il**, **s'ils**.

ACCENT OR STRESS.

38. As here used accent means stress or force of utterance. The tonic or accented syllable in a word or the accented word in a clause or sentence is the syllable or word uttered with greatest force. French accent differs from the English in two important respects:—

a. In kind. The rule of accent is ascending (crescendo <) instead of descending (diminuendo >).

1. The last fully pronounced syllable (i.e. one not containing mute **e**) of a word has the accent, e.g. **ami'**, **perdu'e**, **compa'gne**, **compagno'n**, **camara'de**, **camaraderi'e**, etc.

α. If a word of more than one syllable has especial importance in a word or sentence the stress is placed for emphasis not on the last syllable, but on the first which begins with a consonant, e.g. **C'est un mi'sérable.** **C'est impos'sible.**

2. Similarly the last word of a sentence, clause, or word-group has ordinarily greatest force, so that to English ears French sentences seem to end with a snap.

α. As in the case of a word so too in a clause or sentence special emphatic stress may fall on some other than the last word, e.g. **C'est très' *joli*.** ***C'est trop' fort.***

b. In degree. The word-accent is much less marked than in English, e.g. in the word **intéressant** the force of utterance of the syllables might be represented by the figures 2, 2, 2, 3, whereas *interesting* would be about 4, 1, 1, 1. This applies to all syllables except those that contain mute **e** (cf. 40 *c, d*). Thus the different syllables of a word are pronounced in French with a tolerably regular voice-stress.

REMARK.—As to the important subject of intonation it may be said in general that the changes of pitch from word to word and within the same word are more abrupt in French than in English, and extend through greater intervals.

1. A marked rise of pitch usually occurs before a pause in an unfinished sentence, on the last syllable of an interrogative sentence or phrase, and especially on the last syllable of an exclamation indicating surprise.

2. In the case of an affirmation on the other hand the syllable before the last is raised in pitch and is followed by a very marked fall, occasionally so great that resonant vibration ceases entirely and the last syllable is whispered.

SCRIPT AND SOUND.

VOWELS.

QUALITY.

39. *a.* **A** has generally the sound **à** (cf. 30 *a*), e.g. **à, la, par, canard, cheval, appela,** etc.

b. The sound **a** (cf. 30 *b*) occurs as follows:—

1. When **a** has the circumflex accent, excepting in the verb-endings **-âmes, -âtes, -ât,** e.g. **âme, pâte, pâle, blâme, tâtonner,** etc.

2. Before **s** final, and **s** medial (= **z**,[1] 69 *b*), e.g. **pas, bas, cas, hélas; base, case, vase, écraser,** etc.

3. Usually in the endings **-acle, -avre, -ation,** e.g. **miracle, cadavre, nation;** and in a few words in **-aille** (= **ai̯**, 67 *a* 2),

[1] In the following sections the sign standing after the mark of equation (=) denotes merely the phonetic value of the letters or word to which it is attached.

-abre, e.g. **paille** (= **paj**), **délabre**; but as to these usage is not settled.

4. In some words before **ss**, **c**, or **ç** (= **s**), e.g. **passer**, **lasser**, **lacer**, **maçon**, **classe**, **tasse**, etc., but the rule is **à**, e.g. **masse**, **chasse**, **trace**, **face**, etc.

5. Quite exceptionally before **m** (also **mm** = **m**, **mn** = **n**), e.g. **proclamer**, **réclamer**, **flamme**, **damner**, etc., also in **ah**.

REMARK.—There is a marked tendency to pronounce **à** in all unaccented syllables. Thus **paille** = **paj**, but **paillasse** = **pàjàs**, so often **passage** (**à**) from **passe**, etc. Similarly **nation** (**a**), but **nationalité** (**à**), etc.

c. For **an**, **am** nasal see 54. For silent **a** see 58. **Ouate** is by some pronounced **ụẹt** instead of **ụàt**.

40. **E** has three distinct values: (*a*) a closer sound **ẹ** (**fermé**), (*b*) a more open sound **ẹ** (**ouvert**), (*c*) an obscure sound **ə** (**muet**), which in certain positions (*d*) is wholly silent.

a. It has the value **ẹ**—

1. When written with the acute accent, e.g. **dé**, **cédé**, **décédé**, **été**, **réalité**, etc.

2. Without accent-mark—

α. Before silent finals (74), except **t**, e.g. **pied** (= **pjẹ**), **clef** (76 *b*), **portier**, **aimer**, **les** (Rem. 1 below), **nez**, **aimez**, etc. The plural **s** being likewise silent leaves the sound the same, e.g. **pieds**, **clefs**, **portiers**, etc.

β. In the prefixes **ef-** + **f**, **des-** + **s**, e.g. **effet**, **effort**, **effroi**; **dessert**, **dessiller**, **desservir**, etc. According to some authorities also in **ex-** + vowel (= **ẹgz-**, 72 *a*), e.g. **exile**, **exemple**.

γ. Exceptionally in **et** and in foreign words such as **te deum**, **veto**, etc.

b. It has the value **ẹ**—

1. When written with the grave or circumflex accents, e.g. **père**, **mère**, **cède**, **siège**; **tête**, **fête**, **être**, etc.

2. Without accent-mark—

α. Before pronounced finals (chiefly **c, f, l, r,** 74) and before final **t,** e.g. **bec, sec, bref, ciel, miel, cher, mer, net, valet, est** *is* (= **ę**), **est** *east* (= **ęst**), etc.

β. In closed syllables not final (35 *c*, cf. 35 *b*, also *a* 2 *β* above and *c* 3 below), e.g. **elle, ferme, sexe, berger, personne, destiner,** etc.

γ. Before **il, ille** (= **i̯**, 67 *a* 2), e.g. **soleil, treille,** etc.

c. Without accent-mark it has the value **ə**—

1. In the monosyllables **ce, de, je, le, me, ne, se, te,** and **que** with its compounds **lorsque, parceque, puisque, quelque, quoique.**

2. In open syllables not final (35 *a*, *b*), e.g. **mener, retrait, ornement, acheter, cheminée, devenir, redevenir,** etc.

3. Exceptionally in **dessus, dessous** (cf. *a* 2 *β*), and in the prefix **res-** + **s,** e.g. **ressortir, ressembler,** etc.

d. Without accent-mark it is wholly silent.

1. When final except as above (cf. *c* 1), e.g. **âne, porte, table, sabre, cabane, camarade, camaraderie,** etc.

2. When followed only by the silent **s** of inflection and the silent **nt** of the third person plural of verbs, e.g. **ânes, portes, portent, tables, aiment, aimaient, aimèrent, aimeraient, aimassent,** etc.

REMARK.—1. In the monosyllables **ces, des, les, mes, tes, ses,** however, **e** = **ę** according to the general rule as given above (*a* 2 *α*).

2. The third value of **e**, viz. **ə**, is in connected speech slighted, and even entirely omitted wherever that would not result in hard consonantal groups, so always in **je** when it follows its verb, e.g. **ai-je** = **ęž**, **suis-je** = **sü̯iž**, etc. A sentence such as **parceque le temps, c'est de l'argent** is pronounced formally **pàrsəkə lə tã, s'ę də l'àržã,** but familiarly **pàrskel tã, s'ę d l'àržã,** etc. On the other hand a final mute **e** is reckoned in scansion a syllable. French verse, however, as read is metrical, not because it contains a certain number of so-called syllables, but when the sound groups into which it naturally falls occupy periods of time that are sensibly equal.

e. Exceptionally **e** has the value **à** in **femme, hennir, nenni,** and in adverbs ending in **-emment,** e.g. **récemment, prudemment,** etc.

f. For **en, em** nasal see 54 *b.* For **e** as sign of **g** = **ž** see 64 *b.*

41. In an open syllable **e** unless marked by an accent is pronounced **ə** (see 40 *c* 2), hence the sounds **ẹ** and **ę** must in such syllables be marked **é** and **è** (or **ê**) respectively; thus no mark is needed in **pied, des, mes** or in **cher, mer, merle,** etc., but one is needed in **piédestal, désire, mésallier** and in **chèvre, mère, mêle,** etc. The sound **ə** never occurs in an accented syllable (see 38 *a* 1). In open syllables both sound and script are conditioned in part by the vowel of the next syllable.

a. **E** has regularly the sound **ę** (written **è** or **ê**, see 36 *a* 3) when the next syllable contains mute **e** (= **ə**), e.g. **père, frère, mène** (from **mener**), **cède** (from **céder**); **tête, fête,** etc. For exceptions see *b* 1, 2 below.

1. Before **l, n,** and **t** the sound **ę** is sometimes denoted by doubling the consonant instead of writing an accent (cf. 40 *b* 2). Compare **appeler, appelle; tel, telle; prenez, prennent; ancien, ancienne; jeter, jette; net, nette,** etc.

b. **E** is pronounced **ẹ** (written **é**) or **ə** (written **e**) when the next syllable contains any other vowel than **ə** (mute **e**), e.g. **céder, mener, ménage, menace,** etc. Exceptionally both **ẹ** (**é**) and **ə** (**e**) are also found when the next syllable contains **ə** (mute **e**), as follows:—

1. The sound **ẹ** (written **é**), as follows:—

α. Followed immediately by mute **e**, e.g. **crée, née, menée,** etc.

β. As initial letter in a few words, e.g. **élever, égrener, éperons,** etc.

γ. In the future and conditional of verbs having **ẹ** (**é**) in the infinitive, e.g. **céderai** from **céder**, etc.

δ. In a few individual words, e.g. **événement, développer, médecin,** etc.

e. In the 1st per. sg. of verbs followed by **je**, **é** is written, but the pronunciation is now generally **ę**, e.g. **donné-je** (= **dǫnęž**), **donnassé-je**, etc. (cf. 40 *d*, rem. 2).

REMARK.—1. Formerly **é** was regularly written before **g**, followed by **e** mute, e.g. **siége**, **piége**, **liége**, etc., but the pronunciation is mostly **ę**, and **è** is now the usual spelling; so too in *γ* and *δ* above, the pronunciation tends to **ę**, and **è** is now sometimes written, e.g. **cèderai**, **évènement**, etc.

2. Successive syllables containing mute **e** are found chiefly at the beginning of a word, e.g. **recevoir**, **redevoir**, **devenir**, **redevenir**, etc. No word can end in two such syllables (cf. 41, last part).

42. I = **i** with uniformly close articulation, never like English **i** in *it*, e.g. **il**, **fini**, **île**, **dire**, etc.

a. Before another vowel (not **e** mute) in the same syllable **i** generally becomes consonantal, **i̯**, e.g. **hier**, **ciel**, **tiède**, **lumière**, **dieu**, **mien**, **piastre**, etc.

b. For **in**, **im** nasal see 55. For **i** silent see 58 *c*. For **i** before liquid **l** see 67 *a*. For **i** in digraphs see 46, 47, 48, 49.

43. *a*. **O** has generally the more open sound **ǫ (ouvert)**, e.g. **or**, **bord**, **sort**, **encore**, **dot**, **robe**, **homme**, **notre**, **commode**, etc.

b. It has the closer sound **ǫ (fermé)** as follows:—

1. When written with the circumflex accent, e.g. **tôt**, **côte**, **nôtre**, **trône**, **côté**, **rôti**, etc.

α. In an unaccented syllable a very few words have **ô** = **ǫ**, e.g. **hôtel**, **hôpital**, etc.

2. Without accent-mark—

α. As final, or when followed only by silent consonants, e.g. **primo**, **zéro**, **dos**, **nos**, **mot**, **vieillot**, **mots**, **vieillots**, etc.

β. Before final **-me**, **-ne**, e.g. **tome**, **idiome**, **tone**, **zone**, etc.

γ. Before medial **s** (= **z**, 69 *b*) and **t** (= **s**, 71 *a*), e.g. **rose**, **chose**, **poser**, **position**, **motion**, **notion**, etc.

δ. In a few individual words, e.g. **fosse**, **grosse**, **fossoyer**, **adosser**, **endosser**, etc.

c. For **on**, **om** nasal see 56. For **o** silent see 58 *d*.

44. U = **ü** with uniformly close articulation, e.g.

lu, dû, rue, nul, dur, mûr, futur, majuscule, une, culbute, etc.

a. Before another vowel (not **e** mute) in the same syllable **u** is generally consonantal (= ü, 32 *a*), e.g. **lui, puis, nuit, duel, tuer, suivi, nuage,** etc. (cf. 64 *a* 2, 68 *b*).

b. For **un, um** nasal see 37. For **u** silent see 58 *e*. For **u** in digraphs see 50, 51, 52.

45. Y as sole vowel = **i**, but occurs only in loan-words, e.g. **lyre, syllabe, synonyme,** etc.

a. Initial before a vowel it has the value **i̯**, e.g. **yeux, yacht** = **i̯ak, Yémen,** etc.

b. Between vowels it forms with the preceding vowel a digraph just as i (cf. 46–49), but retains beside its own consonantal value **i̯**, thus in a sense = **ii̯**, e.g. **payer** = **pai-ier** = **pęi̯ę** (cf. 47), **grasseyer** = **grasęi̯ę** (cf. 48), **noyer** = **nu̯ai̯ę** (cf. 49 *a*), **appuyer** = **apüii̯ę** (cf. 44 *a*), etc.

1. But after **a** in a few words **y** = simply **i̯**, e g. **bayonnette** also spelled **baïonnette, fayence** or **faïence, Bayeux, Bayonne, La Fayette,** etc.

c. In **pays** and its derivatives **y** has exceptionally the double function **ii**, thus **pays** = **pęi** (cf. 47, rem. 1), **paysage** = **pęizaž,** etc.

REMARK.—It is this double function of **y** that explains the interchange of **i** and **y** in inflection and derivation, **i** standing final and before consonants or mute **e**, and **y** before other vowels, cf. **ai, aie, ait, aient, ayons, ayez**; **croire, croit, croie, croient, croyons, croyez, croyant, croyions**; **ennui, ennuyer**; **roi, royal, royaume**; **loi, loyal,** etc. After **e** however **y** is constant, e g. **asseye, grasseye, brasseye.** After **a** both spellings are allowed, and pronunciation also wavers; thus **paye** or **paie**, pronounced **pęi̯** or **pę**.

d. For **yn, ym** nasal see 55 *a*.

DIGRAPHS AND TRIGRAPHS.

46. Ai (æ, œ), **ei, oi, au** (**eau**), **eu** (**œu, œ, ue**), **ou.** These so-called diphthongs represent for the most part simple sounds, i.e. they are properly digraphs. In ***ai*** = ***ę***, ***au*** = ***ǫ***, **eu** = **ö** the value is a compromise between

the first and second elements as if by assimilation (see the vowel table, 31).

a. **Oi** = **u̯à** (cf. 49) is a rising diphthong, i.e. one that begins with a closer unaccented and ends in an opener accented element. Similar are **ia, ie, io, ua, ue,** etc., noted above (42 *a*, 44 *a*), and **oua, oue,** etc., explained below (52 *a*).

b. Falling diphthongs, i.e. those beginning in a more open accented and ending in a closer unaccented element, do not occur in French except those ending in **i̯** (generally written **il** or **ille**, 67 *a*). Here since "liquid" **l** = phonetically **i̯** we find **ai̯, ài̯, ei̯, öi̯, ui̯,** e.g. **paille** = **pai̯** (39 *b* 3), **travail** = **tràvài̯** (39 *a*), **treille** = **trei̯** (40 *b* 2 *γ*), **deuil** = **döi̯** (51 *a*), **grenouille** = **grənui̯** (52), etc.

47. Ai has regularly the value **e**, e.g. **vrai, mais, avais, maître, raison, connaître, plaisanterie,** etc.

a. It has the value **e** as follows:—

1. When final in conjugation, e.g. **ai, donnai, donnerai,** etc.; cf. **aie, donnais, donnerais** with **e**.

α. Even here it becomes **ę** before the pronoun **je** (cf. 41 *b* 1, and rem. 1), e.g. **ai-je** = **ęž, donnai-je** = **dǫnęž,** etc.

2. In some isolated words, viz. **sais, sait, gai, geai, quai,** and according to some authorities in **baiser, maison, plaisir, raisin,** with a few others.

b. It has the value **ə** quite exceptionally in **faisant,** pres. part. of **faire,** and the forms derived from the same stem, viz. **faisais, faiseur, faisance,** etc.

c. For **ain, aim** nasal see 55 *b*. For **ail, aille** see 67 *a*.

REMARK 1.—**Ay** = **e** or before a pronounced vowel **ei̯** (cf. 45 *b c* and rem.).

2. **Æ** and **œ** occur in a few loan-words, mostly proper names, with the value **e**, e.g. **Scævola, Schœnée,** etc.

48. Ei has the value **e**, e.g. **neige, reine, Seine, enseigner,** etc.

a. For **ein, eim** nasal see 55 *b*. For **eil, eille** see 67 *a*.

b. For the value of **ey** see 45 *b* and rem.

49. *a.* **Oi** (18 *a*) has regularly the value **ụà**, e.g. **moi, toi, soi, noir, boîte, noisette, poison,** etc.

b. It has the **value ụa** as follows:—

1. After **r**, e.g. **roi, crois, droit, froideur, troisième,** etc. But **croire** (= **krụàr**) and its forms are generally excepted.

2 In a few individual words, chiefly **bois** (< **boscu**), **mois, noix, poids, pois, poix, toit.**

c. For **oin** nasal see 55 *a* 1.

d. Where **oi** in older texts is written for **ai** it is to be pronounced **ẹ** (see 18 *a*). **Roide** = **rẹd** is still a current spelling with **raide.**

50. *a.* **Au** has regularly the value **ọ**, e.g. **au, aux, aube, autre, aussi, sauter, dauphinois,** etc.

1. So always **eau**, e.g. **eau, beau, cadeau, épeautre.**

b. It has only occasionally the value **ọ** as follows:—

1. Before **r**, e.g. **Maure, Laure, aurai, aurore,** etc.

2. Exceptionally in **Auch, Paul.**

3. In many words an unaccented **au** tends to **ọ**, e.g. **mauvais, autel, auguste, autorite, aujourd'hui,** etc.

51. *a.* **Eu** (or **œu**) has generally the value **ö**, e.g. **leur, neuf, seul, peuple, aveugle, deuil, feuille; cœur, œuf, œuvre,** etc.

1. Before liquid **l** (67 *a*) the same sound is written **œ** and after **c** or **g** also **ue**, e.g. **œil, œillet, accueil, orgueil,** etc.

b. It has the closer sound, **ọ̈**, as follows:—

1. When final or followed only by silent letters, e.g. **peu, feu, deux, lieue, feux, lieues; vœu, vœux, œufs** (76 *b*), **bœufs,** etc. So also in compounds as **lieutenant, jeudi,** etc.

2. In **jeûne,** before medial **s** (= **z**, 69 *b*) or **t** (= **t**, 71) and before pronounced vowels excepting **i** in **il, ille** (cf. 46 *b*), e.g. **heureuse, creuser, émeute, bleuâtre,** etc.

c. For cases where **eu** is equivalent to **u** (= **ü**) see 58 *b* 3.

52. **Ou** = **u** with uniformly close articulation, never like English **oo** in *good*, e.g. **ou, où, août** (58 *a*), **fou, coup, cour, goût, courte, moudre, joujou**, etc.

a. In hiatus (but not before **e** mute) it generally becomes consonantal = **u̯**, e.g. **oui, ouest, ouate, fouet, ouaille, douaire, douane, bivouac**, etc.

NASAL VOWELS.

53. *a.* The nasal vowels are as follows: (1) **ã**, written **an, am, en, em**; (2) **ẽ**, written **in, im, yn, ym, ain, aim, ein, eim**; (3) **õ**, written **on, om**; (4) **œ̃**, written **un, um.**

b. These groups are pronounced as nasal vowels (1) when final, or (2) when followed by a consonant other than **n** (or **m**). In other situations each letter has its independent value. Thus they are nasal vowels in **an, camp, plein, ton, nombre, un**, etc., but not in **année, âne ; flamme, âme ; pleine, innocent ; tonneau, tone ; une, univers**, etc.

54. The vowel **ã** = **a** with nasal timbre (31 *g*).

a. Written **an, am**, e.g. **an, pan, dans, franc, dansant, mangeant, lampe, ample, flambeau**, etc.

1. Exceptionally in some foreign words each letter has its individual value, e.g. **Agram, Abraham, Priam, Jéréboam**, etc., pronounced **àgràm**, etc.

2. In **damner** and its compounds **a** is not nasal (73 *a*, cf. 39 *b* 5).

b. Written **en, em**, e.g. **en, dent, entrer, endenter, temps, ensemble, empêcher**, etc.

1. Exceptionally in **enivrer** (= **ãnivrẹ**), **enorgueillir, ennoblir, ennui** and its derivatives, and in words beginning with the prefix **em-** + **m**, e.g. **emmener**, etc.

2. **En** = **ẽ**, not **ã**, as follows:—

a. After **i** and **y** (= **i̯**) when final or followed only by the plural **s**, and in the forms of **tenir** and **venir**, e.g. **mien**, **rien**, **tient**, **viens**, **moyen**, **Troyen**, etc., but **patient**, **patience**, etc., follow the regular rule (**en** = **ã**).

β. After **é** in **Européen**, etc.

γ. In some foreign words as **agenda**, **Bengale**, **Benjamin**, **examen**, **pensum**, **pentagone**, **Rubens**, etc.

3. In most loan-words each letter has its individual value, e.g. **amen**, **hymen**, **décemvir**, **Jérusalem**, etc., pronounced **ȧmẹn**, etc.

4. For the verb-ending **-ent** see 40 *d* 2.

55. The vowel **ẽ** = an opener **ẹ** with nasal timbre, like English *a* in *hat* nasalized, cf. 31 *b*.

a. Written **in**, **im**, **yn**, **ym**, e.g. **fin**, **linge**, **matin**, **index**, **grimper**, **syntaxe**, **nymphe**, etc.

1. **Oin** = **u̯ẽ̯** (cf. 49 *a* and 31 *g* 1), e.g. **loin**, **soin**, **moins**, **joindre**, etc.

2. Final **im** = **im**, not **ẽ**, in **Éphraim** = **ẹfrȧim**.

b. Written **ain**, **aim**, **ein**, **eim**, e.g. **pain**, **craindre**, **faim**, **sein**, **peindre**, **Rheims**, etc.

c. Sometimes **en**, cf. 54 *b* 2.

56. The vowel **õ** = **ọ** with nasal timbre (cf. 31 *b*); it is written **on**, **om**, e.g. **on**, **mont**, **honte**, **bonte**, **nom**, **comte**, **compagnon**, etc.

a. **Om** is not nasal before **n**, e.g. **omnibus**, etc., cf. 53 *b*.

b. Quite exceptionally **on** = **ə** in **monsieur** (= **məsi̯ọ̈**, 76 *d*).

57. The vowel **œ̃** (31 *g* 3) is written **un**, **um**, e.g. **un**, **brun**, **lundi**, **emprunter**, **parfum**, **humble**, etc.

a. **Un** = **õ** in a few foreign names, e.g. **Gunther**, **Sund**, etc.

b. **Um** final in Latin words is pronounced **ọm**, e.g. **album**, **pensum**, **triumvir**, etc., so too in **rhum**

SILENT VOWELS.

58. Vowels are silent as follows:—

a. **A** in **août, aoûteron, Caen (kã), curaçao, Saône, taon;** so also in **aoriste,** but the learned influence is now for **ȧǫrist.**

b. **E** when written without accent-marks.

1. Regularly when final except in monosyllables (40 *d*).

2. Before **a, o, u** to show that **g** = **ž,** not **g** (64 *b* 1).

3. In **Jean** (**-ne, -nette**), **jeun,** and the forms of **avoir** before **u,** viz. **eu, eus, eut, eûmes,** etc.

c. **I** in **oignon,** and generally in **poignard, poignée, poignet,** and in the interjection **psit** (= **pst**).

d. **O** in **faon, Laon, paon.**

e. **U** generally after **q** (68), and after **g** before **e, i, y,** to show that **g** = **g** (64 *a* 1), and in the interjection **chut** (= **št**).

QUANTITY.

59. The amount of time given to a vowel-sound varies greatly, not only according to its surroundings in a word, but also in accordance with the position and importance of the word itself in a sentence; the same word thus is sometimes pronounced with a long, sometimes with a short sound. Hence only general rules of quantity can be given. Vowels markedly protracted are called long, others short. The following rules for length cover the most important cases; vowels not embraced by them are to be pronounced short or must be learned by observation.

a. In the accented syllable (38 *a* 1) vowels are long as follows:—

1. Before **r,** liquid **l** (= **ỉ,** cf. 67 *a b*), **gn** (= **ṅ,** 65), and the voiced spirants (32), **v, s** (= **z,** 69 *b*), **g** (= **ž,** 64 *b*), when they are final in pronunciation, e.g. **rare** (= **rȧ·r,** cf. remark below), **fille, bail, duègne, vive, rose, rouge,** etc. Compare **tourne, ville, pal, vif, robe, touche,** etc., with short vowels.

2. Any vowel with circumflex accent, the nasal vowels, and the three vowel sounds **a** (39 *b*), **ǫ** (43 *b*, 50 *a*), **ǫ̃** (51 *b*), before a pronounced consonant, e.g. **pâte, tête, maître, île, côte, jeûne, rendre, peindre,**

fondre, flamme, grosse, autre, émeute, etc. Compare **mât, tôt, rend, pain, fond, pas, gros, faux, deux**, etc., with short vowels.

a. Also the vowel sound **ę** (40 *b* 1, 47, 48) in the ending **-aisse**, and often when followed by **-ne** (thus **-aine, -eine, -ène**), e.g. **caisse, graisse, haine, haleine, scène**, etc.

3. Usually before a voiced consonant followed by final **-le**, or **-re**, and sometimes **ê, i**, or **ou** before **-tre**, e.g. **table** (**ta·bl**), **sabre, cidre, bible, bigle, chèvre, baromètre, arbitre, poutre**, etc. Compare **acre, girofle, article, quatre, notre**, etc., with short vowels.

b. In unaccented syllables length is much less common.

1. Regularly **â** in a pretonic syllable, e.g. **tâcher, fâcher, âgé**, etc.

2. When an **i** in verb-stems is long by *a* 1 it often remains long where the accent falls on the ending, e.g. **tirer, tirant, tirais**, etc., pr. ind. **tire** long by *a* 1 ; so **oblige, obliger, obligeant, obligeais**, etc. Compare **tirant** and **tyran**, which differ chiefly in the length of the vowels.

REMARK.—In indicating pronunciation a long vowel is distinguished by a raised point (·) following it, e.g. **rà·r, fi·i, bà·i**, etc.

CONSONANTS.

INITIAL AND MEDIAL.

60. The transition from consonant to vowel is more abrupt in French than in English, so that to our ears the first letter of **taille** for example sounds exceedingly short, as though the latter half had been clipped off. This effect is increased by the greater force of utterance of the French stops, **p, b, t, d, c** (= **k**), **g** (= **g**). By reason of our slower transition the word *time* sounds to French ears as if an *h* were pronounced before the vowel.

On the other hand transition between two stops is more deliberate in French, the first being completed before the second is begun. This gives to us somewhat the effect of an **h** between voiceless, and of an **ə** between voiced stops, e.g. **acteur** (= **àktö·r**), **abdiquer** (= **àbdikę**).

The same **ə** effect, due to a more complete utterance of the stops than in English, is heard after a voiced stop, **b, d, g** (= **g**), final in pronunciation, e.g. **robe, raide, bague.**

a. The dentals, **t, d, n, l** (the consonants of DENTAL), are formed with the tongue farther forward than in English, the tip touching the

lower teeth instead of the upper gum, and the blade resting against the upper gum. For **gn** (= **ṅ**) see 32 *c*.

b. Before or after a voiceless stop or spirant, **l**, **m**, **r** are frequently whispered, i.e. become voiceless, which is never the case in English, e.g. **place**, **prisme**, **arpent**. So too **i̯**, **u̯**, **ü̯** after a stop, e.g. **pied** (= **pie̯**), **pouah** (= **pu̯a**), **puis** (= **pü̯i**). **L** and **r** are also whispered after a consonant in the endings **le**, **re**, e.g. **table**, **cadre**.

c. When final in pronunciation all sonant consonants, except as just explained, are fully pronounced and not whispered, as frequently occurs in English. The voiced spirants particularly, **v**, **z**, **ž**, require attention, cf. e.g. **rêve**, **rose** (= **ro̯·z**), **rage** (= **ra̯·ž**), with fully pronounced finals, with English *save*, *haze*, *rage*, with whispered finals; **r** and **i̯**, final, may also cause some difficulty, e.g. **dire**, **paille** (= **pa i̯**). To many it sounds in all these cases as though **e** had been added to the consonant.

d. **Ch** (= **š**) and **j** (= **ž**) should be pronounced with the lips rounded and somewhat projected.

61. Except as above, **b**, **d**, **f**, **p**, **ph**, **v**, and **z** correspond in sound to the same letters in English, e.g. **beau**, **abbé**, **de**, **aider**, **foi**, **défendre**, **père**, **après**, **philosophe**, **vin**, **sauver**, **zèle**, **azure**, etc.

a. The following have a constant value, viz. **j** (= **ž**), **m** (cf. 53–57), **n** (cf. 53–57), **r** (32 *b*), **w** (= **v**) and **y** (= **i̯**, see also 45), e.g. **jour**, **déjeuner**, **joujou**, **me**, **âme**, **ne**, **âne**, **roi**, **père**, **wagon**, **yeux**, etc.

b. For silent **m** see 73 *a*.

c. **Rr** = **r**, but is distinctly prolonged in **acquerrai**, **courrai**, **mourrai**, **pourrai** (futures of **acquérir**, **courir**, **mourir**, **pouvoir**), and their derivatives.

d. **Wh** in a few English words = **u̯**, e.g. **whist**, **whiskey**, **whig**, etc.

62. **C** has two distinct sounds, "hard" = **k** and "soft" = **s**.

a. = **k** before a consonant and the vowels **a**, **o**, **u**, unless marked with the cedilla, e.g. **clair**, **crier**, **oncle**, **encre**, **car**, **fracas**, **cœur**, **école**, **cueillir**, etc.

b. = **s** before **e, i, y,** and before **a, o, u,** when marked with the cedilla, e.g. **cendre, race, ciel, ancien, cygne, plaça, plaçons, reçu,** etc.

1. The sound **k** before **e, i** is regularly written **qu** (68 *a* 1).

2. A corresponding double value belongs to **cc,** viz. **k** and **ks** according to the value of the second **c,** e.g. **accroire (k), accorder (k), accès (ks), succinct (ks),** etc.

c. By exception **c** = **g** in **second** and its derivatives, and in **czar.**

63. Ch regularly = **š,** e.g. **chat, machine, cheval,** etc.

a. But in many loan-words, especially of Greek origin, **k,** as follows:—

1. Always before a consonant, e.g. **chloride, chrétien,** etc.

2. In **archange, archétype, chaos, chœur, chol-, chor-écho, orch-,** and a few others.

3. In many proper names, e.g. **Achab, Antiochus, Bacchus, Chanaan, Chéops, Machiavel, Michel-Ange,** etc.

4. In **drachme** (= **drȧkm**), formerly pronounced **drȧgm.**

64. G has two distinct sounds, viz. "hard" = **g,** and "soft" = **ž.**

a. = **g** before a consonant or the vowels **a, o, u,** e.g. **gloire, angle, grand, maigre, gant, goût, aigu,** etc.

1. The sound **g** before **e, i** is regularly written **gu,** e.g. **guerre, gueule, guide, guinder, bague, digue,** etc. In verbs like **conjuguer** the silent **u** is retained even before **o** and **a,** e.g. **conjuguons, conjuguant,** etc.

2. In some words **gu** before **e, i, y** is pronounced **gụ̈,** viz. in **aiguille, aiguiser, linguiste, arguer** (with **ü** not **ụ̈**), and their derivatives, in a few proper names as **Guide, Guise, Guizot** (also = **gizọ**), etc. (cf. 44 *a* 1), and of course when a mute **e** following is marked with the diæresis (cf. 36 *c* 1).

a. In a few words **gu** before **a** = **gu̧,** not **gụ̈,** e.g. **guano** (= **gu̧ȧnọ**), **lingual,** etc. (cf. 44 *a*).

b. = **ž** before **e, i, y,** e.g. **gens, gingembre, gymnastique,** etc.

1. The sound **ž** before **a, o, u** is written **j** (61) or **ge,** the **e** being itself silent and standing simply as the sign of "soft" **g** (cf. 112 *a*), e.g. from **manger** are formed **mangeant, mangeais, mangeons, mangeure,** etc.

2. In like manner **gg** (rare) = **g** or **gž,** e.g. **agglutiner** (**g**), **suggérer** (**gž**), etc.

65. Gn regularly = **ṅ** (32 *c*), e.g. **règne, digne, agneau, seigneur, ignorant,** etc.

a. It is pronounced as written in some borrowed words as follows:—

1. Always when initial, e.g. **gnome, gnostique,** etc.

2. In **agnat, cognat, cognation, cognition, igné, magnat, stagnant, expugnable,** and a few others.

b. For **gn** = **n, g** being silent, see 73 *a*.

66. H is always silent except as noted below (*c*). It is however called aspirate (**aspirée**) in words where it prevents elision (cf. 37) or linking (cf. 78). Where it permits these it is called mute (**muette**) For the sake of clearness aspirate **h** is marked ʿ for the guidance of the beginner.

a. There are about 400 words beginning with aspirate **h.** The following are some of the most common:—

ʿhache	**ʿharangue**	**ʿhasard**	**ʿheurter**	**ʿhors**
ʿhaie	**ʿharasser**	**ʿhâte**	**ʿhibou**	**ʿhouille**
ʿhair	**ʿhardi**	**ʿhaut**	**ʿhideux**	**ʿHuguenot**
ʿhalle	**ʿharicots**	**ʿHavre**	**ʿHollande**	**ʿhuit**
ʿhanter	**ʿharpe**	**ʿhéro**	**ʿhonte**	**ʿhurler**

1. Derivatives follow their primitives, but observe **l'héroïne, héroïque, héroïsme,** notwithstanding **le ʿhéro.** Other irregularities are **la ʿHollande,** but **fromage d'Hollande**; and **le ʿhuit,** but **dix-huit** (cf. 77).

b. Medial **h** is always "mute," except in the words **enhardir** (= **ããrdi·r**), **renhardir, enharnachement, enharnacher.**

c. A genuine **h** is pronounced in such exclamations as **aha** (= **aha**), **oho** (= **ǫhǫ**).

d. **H** forms digraphs with several other consonants, viz. **ch** (63) **sch** (70 *b*), **ph** (60), **wh** (61 *d*), **rh** = **r**, and **th** = **t**, e.g. **Rhin, thé**, etc.

67. L regularly = **l**, e.g. **le, île, folle, belle, table**, etc.

a. But the group **ill**, except when initial, has usually the so-called "liquid" sound of **l** (**l mouillée**), i.e. **ij** or **j**. When initial it has the value **il**, e.g. **illégal, illusion, illuminer, illustre**, etc.

1. After a consonant = **ij** (or **i·j**, cf. 59), e.g. **billard** = **bijà·r, tilleul, fille** = **fi·i, cédille, briller**, etc.

α. Exceptionally **ill** = **il** in the following, viz. **codicille, mille, myrtille, pupille, tranquille, vaudeville, ville**; the proper names **Achille, Delille, Gille, Lille**, etc.; **distiller, instiller, osciller, titiller**; **billion, millier, imbécillité, pusillanime**, with their derivatives and compounds, and a few others.

2. After a vowel = **j**, the preceding vowel never forming a digraph with the **i** of **ill** but retaining its proper value, e.g. **caillou** = **kàju, cueillir, grenouille, houille, vieillir, feuille**, etc.

b. The group **il** when final is sometimes "liquid" and sometimes not, as follows:—

1. After a consonant it generally = **il**, e.g. **il, cil, fil, mil** (*one thousand*), **Nil, vil**; **avril, babil, péril**, etc.

α. In a few words = **i·j** (cf. 59), viz. **grésil, mil** (*millet*), and **gentil** (when linked, cf. 78).

β. In a few words the **l** is silent (**il** = **i**), viz. **baril, chenil, coutil, fournil, fusil, gentil** (unless linked), **nombril, outil, sourcil**.

2. After a vowel = **j**, the vowel retaining its proper value, e.g. **travail, conseil, vieil, accueil, œil**, etc.

α. But **-oil** = **uàl**, e.g. **poil**.

68. Q unless final is always followed by **u**.

a. **Qu** regularly = **k**, e.g. **quand, quatre, que, qui, quoique**, etc.

1. The sound **k** must be written **qu** before **e, i**, and may be so written before **a, o**, but must be written **c** before **u** and before consonants, hence certain variations of spelling

in derivation and inflection, e.g. **public** but **publique**; **vaincre, vaincu,** but **vainque, vainquis, vainquant,** etc.

b. In some loan-words **u** is sounded after **q**, = **u̯** before *a*, = **ü̯** before **e** and **i**; e.g. **aquarelle** (= **ȧku̯ȧrẹl**), **équateur, équation, loquace, quadrat, quadri-, quadru-, quarto; questure** (= **küẹstü·r**), **quintette, quintuple,** and a few others.

69. **S** has two distinct sounds, voiceless = **s**, and voiced = **z**.

a. **S** = **s**. 1. When initial, e.g. **sa, se, si, son, sur, sabre, servir, signe, soldat, surprendre,** etc.

2. Before or after other consonants, e.g. **espace, estime, théisme, penser, anse,** etc. (cf. *b* 2).

3. Medial between vowels when it begins the second part of a compound, e.g. **préséance, monosyllabe, parasol,** etc. Also in the conjugation of **gésir** (excepting the form **gésir** itself), e.g. **gisant** (= **žisã**, sometimes **žizã**), **gisons,** etc.

4. **Ss** always = **s**, e.g. **casser,** etc.

b. **S** = **z**. 1. Regularly between vowels, e.g. **rose, raser, raison, misère, déshonneur** (cf. 66 *b*), etc.

2. Also in words beginning with **trans-** + vowel, e.g. **transit, transaction,** etc. (excepting **transir** (**s**), **transept, Transylvanie**), and in a few words after **l**, as **Alsace, balsamine.**

70. **S** in combinations needs no comment except in—

a. **Sc.** This has two values according to the pronunciation of **c**, viz. (62):—

1. **Sc** = **sk** before **a, o, u,** and before consonants, e.g. **scandale, scorpion, sculpter, scrutin,** etc.

2. **Sc** = **s**, before **e, i, y,** e.g. **scène, science, Scythe,** etc.

b. **Sch.** This has two values according to the pronunciation of **ch** (63). It occurs only in a few borrowed words.

1. **Sch** = **š** in most words, e.g. **schisme, schérif,** etc.

2. **Sch** = **sk** in **schène, scholie, scholastique,** and a few others.

71. **T** regularly = **t**, e.g. **ta, te, tiens, ton, tu; été, ôter; sotte, nettoyer; être, stable, question, mixtion, moitié, châtier, portière**, etc.

a. **T**, not preceded by **s** or **x**, = **s** before consonantal **i** (**i̯**, cf. 42 *a*) in the following cases:—

1. In the endings **-tion, -tial, -tiel, -tient, -tieux** (the corresponding English words have *ti* = **š**), and in **-tie** (= English *-tia* or *-cy*), e.g. **notion, initial, essentiel, patient, ambitieux, aristocratie, inertie**, etc.

2. In gentile names in **-tien**, e.g. **Égyptien, Béotien**, etc., but **t** in **chrétien.**

3. In **balbutier, différentier, initier, ineptie, satiété.**

b. **Th** = **t**, e.g. **thé, théâtre, allopathe**, etc. (cf. 73 *d*).

72. **X** regularly = **ks**, e.g. **axe, sexe, fixer, boxer, luxe, mixtion**, etc. Also in the prefix **ex-** + consonant, e.g. **excellent, expérience**, etc.

a. **X** = **gz** in the prefix **ex-** + vowel and as initial in proper names, e.g. **exercise, exemple, Xavier, Xenophon, Xerxès**, etc., but in a very few Greek words initial **x** = **ks**, e.g. **xilographie**, etc.

b. Medial **x** = **s** in **soixante** (cf. 77 *b*) and in a few proper names as **Auxerre, Auxois, Auxonne, Bruxelles, Uxelles, Xerxès** (= **gzęrsęs**). Also initial in **Xaintrailles.**

c. Medial **x** = **z** in some numerals (cf. 77 *b*).

SILENT MEDIAL CONSONANTS.

73. In a few medial groups a consonant may be silent as follows:—

a. **G** in the group **gn** (cf. 65) in the following: **Clugny, Regnaud** (**-ld, -lt**), **signet.**

b. **M** in **automne** (not in **automnal**), and in **damner** and its derivatives.

c. **P** in **lpt**, e.g. **sculpter, sculpteur**, etc.; in **mpt**, e.g. **compter, dompter**, etc.; also in **baptême, baptiser, septième** (from **sept**, cf. 77 *a* but not in other derivatives of **sept**, as **Septembre**).

d. **Th** in **asthme, isthme.**

FINAL CONSONANTS (NOT LINKED).

74. Final consonants single or in groups are regularly silent, excepting **c, f, l, r,** e.g. **plomb, nid, coup, dos, noix, lit, nez; champs, est** *is*, **pieds, doigts, prompt,** etc., with silent finals; **avec, sec, neuf, chef, il, tel, ciel, car, cor, sur,** etc., with sounded finals. In groups consisting of **r** + consonant **r** alone is sounded, e.g. **bord, clerc, corps, tiers, vers, vert,** etc. (76 *d*).

a. The word CaReFuL may serve as a mnemonic for the beginner.

b. **M** and **n** final alone or in groups are themselves silent, but affect the sound of the preceding vowel (cf. 53–57). For the third person plural ending of verbs, **-ent**, see 40 *b* 2.

75. Sounded by exception are:

a. **B, d, g, p, x** (**ks**), **z** (**z**) in some borrowed words and proper names, e.g. **club, nabab, radoub**; **Achab, Job, Joab,** etc.; **sud, éphod**; **Alfred, Bagdad, Cid, David, George Sand,** etc.; **grog** (in **joug g** = **k**), **pouding, zigzag; Schlesswig,** etc.; **cap, hanap, jalap; Alep, Gap,** etc.; **index, larynx, préfix; Ajax, Styx, Aix-la-Chapelle,** etc.; **gaz; Berlioz, Bulos,** etc.

1. **X** = **s** in a few proper names as **Béatrix, Cadix, Aix en Provence** (cf. 77), and **z** = **s** in **Cortez, Metz** (= **mẹs**), **Suez,** etc.

b. **Q** is sounded in **coq**, but silent in **coq d'Inde**. For **cinq** see **77**.

c. **S** is sounded in the following :—

1. In some common words, viz. **fils** (= **fis**, cf. 78 *a*), **hélas, jadis, lis** (but silent in **fleur de lis**), **mais, sus** (in **en sus**), **vis, cens, laps, mars** (but silent in **Cinq-Mars**), **mœurs, ours, tous** (except in attributive use before a consonant), also **sens**, except in **le bon sens** and **le sens commun**.

2. In Greek and Latin words, including proper names, ending **in -as, -es, -is, -os, -us,** e.g. **as** *ace*, **atlas; aloès, Xerxès; bis, gratis; Argos, pathos**; **chorus, omnibus, Phébus, Vénus,** etc.

3. In some modern proper names, e.g. **Arras, Camoëns** (= **kàmọẽ·s**), **Flourens** (= **flurẽ·s**), **Fréjus, Gil Blas, Havas, Lesseps, Mons, Rheims,** better **Reims** (= **rẽ·s**), **Rubens** (= **rübẽ·s**), etc.

d. **T** (or **th**) is sounded in the following :—

1. After vowels in **brut, chut** (cf. 58 *e*), **dot, fat, huit** (77), **lut, luth, mat, net,** and in such loan-words and proper names as **aconit, déficit,**

granit, occiput, opiat, prétérit, transit, ut, zénith, et cætera; **Japhet, Lot, Judith**, etc.

2. After other consonants:—

α. **St** = **st** in **est** *east*, **lest, ouest, zest**, and in some loan-words proper names as **whist, Brest, Ernest**, etc.; also in **Christ**, but becomes a silent in **Antéchrist** and **Jésus Christ** (= **žęzü kri**).

β. **Ct** generally = **kt** in **abject, correct**, (**in-**), **direct**, (**in-**), **district, exact**, (**in-**), **infect, strict, suspect** (sometimes = **k**), **tact**, (**con-**, **in-**); **ct** = **k** in **circonspect, respect**; but both consonants are silent in **aspect** (= **âspę**).

γ. **Lt** = **lt** and **pt** = **pt** in **cobalt, indult, spalt**; **abrupt, rapt**, and in some proper names as **Belt, Soult**, etc. For **sept** and **vingt** see 77.

76. Silent by exception are:—

a. **C**. 1. After a nasal vowel, e.g. **banc, blanc, vaine**, etc.; but in **donc** it is often sounded.

2. In **accroc, broc, caoutchouc, clerc** (cf. 74), **cric, escroc, estomac, lacs, porc** (generally), **tabac**.

3. For **ct** see 75 *d* 2.

4. **Ch** final = **k** in some proper names, e.g. **Munich, Offenbach**, etc.; but is silent in **almanach**.

b. **F** in **cerf** (usually, always in the pl. **cerfs**), **clef**, **nerf** (always in the plural, and in the sg. except in the literal sense of *nerve*), in **chef-d'œuvre** (but **chef** alone is regular), in the plurals **bœufs, œufs**, together with their singulars in certain phrases as **bœuf gras, bœuf salé, œuf dur, œuf frais**, and in proper names beginning with **Neuf-**, e.g. **Neuf-Châtel**, etc. For **neuf** see 77.

c. **L** in **aulx** (pl. of **ail**), **cul** (e.g. **cul-de sac**), **fils, pouls, soûl**, and in the endings **-auld, -ault**, and the like, of some proper names.

d. **R** is regularly silent in words of more than one syllable ending in **-er**, e.g. **aimer, casser, fier** (verb, dissyllabic), **rentier, officier**, etc. A plural **s** being also silent leaves the pronunciation the same, e.g. **rentiers, officiers**, etc. Exceptionally **r** is silent in **monsieur, messieurs, volontiers**.

1. Monosyllables in **-er** sound the **r**, e.g. **cher, fer, fier** (adj.), **hier, mer**, etc.

2. **R** is sounded exceptionally in **amer, cuiller, enfer, hiver**, and in some loan-words and proper names as **cancer, magister, pater, Jupiter**, etc.

THE NUMERALS.

77. Many of the numerals present peculiarities in their pronunciation:—

a. **Cinq, six, sept** (**p** is always silent), **huit, neuf, dix, dix-sept, dix-huit, dix-neuf** have a threefold treatment:—

1. In attributive use before a word beginning with a silent consonant all the finals are silent, e.g. **cinq francs = sẽ frã, lit, neminutes = sę minüt, dix jours = di žu·r,** etc.

2. In attributive use before a word beginning with a vowel the finals are all linked (see 78), **f = v, q = k, t = t, x = z,** e.g. **neuf heures = nǫv ǫ̈·r, cinq hommes = sẽk ǫm, huit animaux = ÿit ȧnimǫ, six années = siz ȧnę,** etc.

3. In any other construction the finals are sounded, **f = f, q = k, t = t, x = s,** e.g. **le neuf octobre, le dix avril, dix et huit sont dix-huit,** etc.

b. **X = z** in **dix-huit, dix-neuf** and derivatives of **deux, six, dix,** e.g. **deuxième, dixaine,** etc.; **x = s** in **soixante.**

c. **Vingt** sounds **t** in the numbers from 21 to 29 inclusive (cf. 95).

d. **Onze** allows neither elision nor linking (37 rem., 78 *a* 7).

FINAL CONSONANTS (LINKED).

78. When two or more words are closely joined in construction (as article and noun or adjective, adjective and noun, subject and verb, verb and object, preposition and noun, etc.), they are pronounced as a unit sound-group without any relaxation or pause between them. A final consonant before a word beginning with a vowel (or mute **h**) is then pronounced immediately upon the vowel. This is called **la liaison des mots** *the linking of words.*

Thus, **il‿est‿ici** (= **ilętisi**), **tôt‿ou‿tard** (= **tǫtutȧ·r**), **sont‿ils‿arrivés** (= **sõtilzȧrivę**), **les‿enfants‿ont huit‿oranges** (= **lęzãfãzõÿitǫrã·ž**), etc.

a. Finals otherwise silent are then sounded as if medial, except that **d = t, g** (rare) **= k, x = z, s** always **= z, c** always **= k,** e.g. **de broc‿en bouche, vend‿il, rang‿élevé, les‿hommes, petits‿enfants, petit‿enfant, deux‿heures,** etc.

1. The **t** of **et**, the **z** of **assez**, and final **m** are never linked, e.g. **mère et enfant** = **mẹ·r ẹ ãfã**, **assez évident**, **un nom intéressant**, etc.

2. When **n** is linked the nasal vowel of which it forms a part loses some (or all) of its nasality, e.g. **bon‿ami** = **bõnàmi** or **bọnàmi**, **en‿air** = **ãnẹ·r** or **anẹ·r**, etc.

3. **P** is rarely linked except in **trop** and **beaucoup**.

4. The **d** of **nord** when linked = **d**, e.g. **nord‿est**, **nord‿ouest**.

5. Silent finals after **r** are seldom sounded except the pl. **s**; also the **t** of **fort**, and of verbs before **il**, **elle**, **on**, e.g. **vers une heure**, **il part à l'instant**, **tort ou raison** do not link, but **des mers‿immenses**, **part‿il**, **fort‿agréable** link, etc.

6. When mute **r** (cf. 76 *d*) is linked the preceding **ẹ** becomes **ẹ**, e.g. **le premier jour** (= **le premię žu·r**), but **le premier‿an** (= **le premięr ã**), etc.

7. Before **onze** and **oui** no consonants are linked.

b. Sounded finals retain their proper values, except that the **f** of **neuf** and the **x** of **six** and **dix** are voiced, i.e., = **v** and **z** respectively, e.g. **avec‿envie**, **sud‿ouest**, **œuf‿à la coque** (**f**), **neuf‿heures** (**v**), **joug‿imperial** (**k**, cf. 75 *a*), **le fils‿aîné** (**s**), **dix‿années** (**z**), **Pollux‿est** (**ks**), etc.

REMARK.—The extent to which silent finals are sounded before vowels depends largely on the style of utterance. It is greatest in formal delivery such as in public reading, declamation, etc., where whole sentences may be thus bound, and least in colloquial speech, where it is only permitted between words very closely joined in sense.

PHONETIC TRANSLITERATION.

79. Below is a specimen of text given in the current and in phonetic spelling:—

a. Les grands édifices, comme les grandes montagnes, sont l'ouvrage des siècles. Souvent l'art se transforme qu'ils pendent encore; *pendent opera interrupta;* ils se continuent paisiblement selon l'art transformé. L'art nouveau prend le monument où il se trouve, s'y incruste, se l'assimile, le développe à sa fantaisie, et l'achève s'il peut. La chose s'accomplit sans trouble, sans effort, sans

réaction, suivant une loi naturelle et tranquille. C'est une greffe qui survient, une sève qui circule, une végétation qui reprend. Certes, il y a matière à bien gros livres, et souvent histoire universelle de l'humanité, dans ces soudures successives de plusieurs arts à plusieurs hauteurs sur le même monument. L'homme, l'artiste, l'individu, s'effacent sur ces grandes masses sans nom d'auteur; l'intelligence humaine s'y résume et s'y totalise. Le temps est l'architecte, le peuple est le maçon. VICTOR HUGO.

b. **Lę grã·z ędifis, kǫm lę grã·d mõtȧn, sõ l'uvrȧ·ž dę siękl. Suvã l'ȧ·r s(ə) trãsfǫrm k'il pã·d ãkǫ·r; pędět ǫperȧ ětęrüptȧ; il s(ə) kõtinü pęzibləmã s(ə)lõ l'ȧ·r trãsfǫrmę. L'ȧ·r nuvǫ prã l(ə) mǫnümã u il s(ə) tru·v, s'i ękrüst, s(ə) l'ȧsimil, lə dęv(ə)lǫp ȧ sȧ fãtęzi, ę l'ȧšę·v s'il pǫ̈. Lȧ šǫ·z s'ȧkõpli sã tru·bl, sãz ęfǫ·r, sã rędksiõ, süivãt ün lụȧ nȧtüręl ę trãkil. S'ęt ün gręf ki sürviẽ, ün sę·v ki sirkül, ün vęžętȧsiõ ki r(ə)prã. Sęrt, il i ȧ mȧtię·r ȧ biẽ grǫ li·vr, ę suvã istụȧ·r ünivęrsęl d(ə) l'ümȧnitę, dã sę sudü·r süksęsi·v də plüziǫ̈·rz ȧ·r ȧ plüziǫ̈·r ǫtǫ̈·r sür l(ə) męm mǫnümã. L'ǫm, l'ȧrtist, l'ędividü, s'ęfȧs sür sę grã·d mȧs sã nõ d'ǫtǫ̈·r; l'ętęlizãs ümęn s'i rędzüm ę s'i tǫtȧli·z. Lə tã ę l'ȧršitękt, lə pǫ̈pl ę l(ə) masõ.**

Viktǫr ügǫ.

PART II.

INFLECTION.

80. Inflection is the change of form which words undergo in order to indicate their various relations in a sentence. Nouns, adjectives (including participles and articles), and pronouns are declined; adjectives and adverbs are compared; verbs are conjugated; other parts of speech are incapable of inflection.

a. **Declension** in French distinguishes:—

1. Two genders, viz. *masculine* and *feminine.*

2. Two numbers, viz. *singular* and *plural.*

3. In a few pronouns (97) three cases, viz. *nominative, accusative,* and *dative.* There are besides two forms with *genitive* function (97*f*, 100*c*).

b. **Comparison** distinguishes two degrees, viz. *positive* and *comparative* (93, 94); the *superlative* has no separate form in French.

c. **Conjugation** distinguishes:—

1. Two voices, viz. *active* and *passive,* the latter by means of auxiliaries.

2. Five moods, viz. *indicative, conditional, imperative, subjunctive,* and *infinitive,* besides the *participles.*

3. Eight tenses, viz. *present, imperfect, preterit, future, perfect, pluperfect, past anterior,* and *future perfect.*

4. Two numbers, viz. *singular* and *plural.*

5. Three persons, viz. *first, second,* and *third.*

REMARK.—The French inflection is for the most part a continuation of the Latin inflection with large losses and some new forms. Of the Latin synthetic declension but one form for each number remains, except in the case of certain pronouns (97). The synthetic comparison is wholly replaced by analytic comparison with **plus**, excepting for seven isolated forms. On the other hand, a rich synthetic conjugation remains, in part inherited and in part remodelled or newly created (103 ff.).

THE ARTICLES.

81. There are two articles, a definite article and an indefinite article.

a. The forms of the definite article are **le** mas. sing., **la** fem. sing., **les** mas. and fem. plur., e.g. **le père, la mère, les enfants,** etc.

1. The sing. forms suffer elision (37), e.g. **l'ami** m., **l'amie** f., **l'époux** m., **l'épouse** f., **l'honneur** m., **l'horreur** f., etc.

2. The forms **le** and **les** (not **la** or **l'**) contract with the prepositions **de** *of* and **à** *to* to **du, des,** and **au, aux,** respectively. This may be shown in a table as follows:—

		the	*of the*	*to the*	
m. sing.	+ consonant	**le**	**du**	**au**	**père** *father*
f. sing.	+ consonant	**la**	**de la**	**à la**	**mère** *mother*
m. f. sg.	+ vow. or h mute	**l'**	**de l'**	**à l'**	**enfant** *child*
m. f. pl.	+ vow. or cons.	**les**	**des**	**aux**	**pères, mères, enfants**

REMARKS.—1. **Du** < **del** < **de le** + consonant; **au** < **al** < **à le** + consonant (27 *d*).

2. For the origin of the forms **le, la, les** see 97 rem.

b. The indefinite article is **un** m., **une** f., e.g. **un père, une mère, un ami, une amie, un homme, une heure,** etc. For its derivation see 95 *e*.

NOUNS.

A. Gender.

82. All nouns are either masculine or feminine. There is no neuter gender in French.

a. Names of animate beings follow their natural gender, e.g. **le père, la mère; le mari, la femme; le frère, la sœur; le mouton, la brebis; l'étalon, la jument; le taureau, la vache,** etc.

1. A few nouns are used without change of form as masculine or feminine according to the sex of the object. Such are **enfant** and some ending in **e** mute, as **camarade, élève, esclave, patriote,** etc. (cf. 90*a*).

2. In many cases distinct feminine forms exist side by side with the masculine.

α. With the ending **e** (cf. adj. 89), e.g. **ami, amie; voisin, voisine; chat, chatte; chien, chienne; paysan, paysanne; époux, épouse; veuf, veuve; jumeau, jumelle** (cf. 90 *b, c, d*), etc.

β. With the ending **-esse**, e.g. **hôte, hôtesse; nègre, négresse; prince, princesse; âne, ânesse,** etc.

γ. Nouns of agency in **-eur** generally have fem. **-euse** when the French has a cognate verb, but otherwise are variously treated (cf. 90*g*), e.g. **chanteur, chanteuse,** vb. **chanter; blanchisseur, blanchisseuse,** vb. **blanchir,** etc. Cf. **acteur, actrice; demandeur, demanderesse; gouverneur, gouvernante,** etc.

δ. More irregular are **canard, cane; dindon, dinde; mulet, mule;** and some others.

3. Most names of animals, however, have but one form. Some are masculine for both sexes, e.g. **le chameau, l'éléphant, le hibou, le vautour,** etc.; others are feminine for both sexes, e.g. **la baleine, la girafe, l'hirondelle, la panthère,** etc. If it is important to distinguish sex, the adjective **mâle** or **femelle** is added, thus: **le chameau mâle, le chameau femelle; la baleine mâle, la baleine femelle,** etc.

Remark.—Some feminine abstracts used concretely of persons retain their grammatical gender, e.g. **la dupe, la sentinelle, la victime, son altesse** fem., **sa majesté,** etc.

b. Names of things generally follow the gender of the corresponding Latin word, i.e. Lat. mas. > mas., fem. >

fem.; words derived from neuters sing. > mas. There are however many exceptions due to analogy.

1. Abstracts in **-eur** < **-ore** m. have mostly become feminine, following the gender of other abstracts (83 *a* 2), e.g. **calore** m. > **chaleur** f., **dolore** > **douleur**, **pavore** > **peur**, etc. But **honneur** (**dés-**) and **labeur** are mas.

2. Some neuter plurals in **-a** or **-ia** have become feminine singulars on the analogy of nouns of the 1st declension, e.g. **arma** n. pl. > **arme** f. sg., **folia** > **feuille**, **godia** > **joie**, **merbelia** (**mirabilia**) > **merveille**, **muralia** > **muraille**, etc.

3. Some individual changes of gender in passing from Latin into French may be explained by some particular association of ideas, e.g. **minuit** mas. after the analogy of **midi**, **sort** m. from **bonheur**, **art** m. from **métier**, **mer** f. from **terre**, **aigle** m. from **oiseau**, etc.

REMARK.—The loss of the Latin neuter was largely due to the coincidence between the masculine and neuter forms of declension, considerable already in the classic language, but still more complete in the Folk-Latin.

83. Some useful empirical rules are the following:—

a. Gender determined by meaning.

1. Masculine are names of *seasons, months, days, cardinal points;* most names of *trees, mountains, metals;* other parts of speech used as nouns, e.g. **le printemps, le mai, le lundi, le sud, le chêne, le Vésuve, le pourquoi, le mais,** etc.

2. Feminine are most abstracts and most names of countries, e.g. **l'amitié, la patience, la piété; l'Amérique, l'Angleterre, la France,** etc. Chief exceptions are **le Bengale, le Hanovre, le Japon, le Mexique, le Péloponnèse.**

b. Gender determined by ending.

1. Masculine are almost all ending in a consonant (some exceptions in **f, m, n, r, s, t, x**), most ending in a pronounced vowel **a, é, i, o, u,** and most with the terminations **-age, -ège, -asme, -isme, -iste, -ice, -aire.**

2. Feminine are almost all ending in mute **e** preceded by a vowel or a doubled consonant, most ending in mute **e** preceded by the consonants **b, c, d, f, h, n, p, s, t, v,** and most with the terminations **-té** (< -tate), **-tié, -ion** (< **-ione**), **-aison** (< -atione), -nce, -nse (< -ntia).

84. Many words of double gender are masculine or feminine according to their meaning.

a. In some a figurative or extended sense has been assigned to a separate gender, e.g.

	mas.	fem.		mas.	fem.
aide	*helper*	*help*	**paillasse**	*clown*	*straw-bed*
aigle	*eagle*	*standard*	**trompette**	*trumpeter*	*trumpet*
écho	*echo*	*a nymph*	**vapeur**	*steamer*	*steam*
guide	*guide*	*rein*	**voile**	*veil*	*sail*

cf. also **crêpe, manche**, etc.

b. In some cases a single form is of double derivation (homonyms), e.g.

	mas.		fem.	
aune	< **alnu**	*alder*	< **alna**	*ell*
faux	< **falsu**	*falsehood*	< **falce**	*scythe*
garde	< O.H.G. **warto**	*watcher*	< O.H.G. **warta**	*watch*
livre	< **libru**	*book*	< **libra**	*pound*

cf. also **barbe, moule, mousse, poêle, somme, souris**, etc.

c. Some words present individual peculiarities due in large part to unsettled usage.

1. **Amour, délice, orgue**, and **Pâque** *Easter* are mas. in sg., fem. in pl., but **pâque** *Passover* is fem. and **les Amours** *Cupids* is mas.

2. **Automne** (83 *a* 1), **baisemain, hymne**, generally masculine, are occasionally feminine; and *vice versa* **œuvre, foudre, période**, generally feminine, are occasionally masculine.

3. **Gens** < **gentes** has become masculine, but certain remnants of the traditional gender remain, e.g. when immediately preceded by an adjective, **les bonnes gens, toutes les bonnes gens**, but **tous les gens, les gens affairés**, etc.

4. **Chose** and **personne** are feminine as nouns, but masculine as pronouns.

B. Number.

85. The plural of nouns regularly ends in **s**, e.g. **père, pères; mère, mères; ami, amis; enfant, enfants**, etc., etc.

a. In O.F. the number of noun-cases inherited from the Folk-Latin are two, a subject-case and an object-case, and even this distinction, which long before had been obliterated for feminines of the Latin first declension, gradually disappeared, leaving a single form, usually the object case-

form, in each number. Since therefore the plural form differed from the singular by an **s**, this **s** became the recognized plural sign. This will be clearer in tabular form.

	Lat.	O.F.	French.	Lat.	O.F.	French.
sg.	**murus**	**murs**	——	**rosa**	**rose**	——
	muru	**mur**	**mur**	**rosa**	**rose**	**rose**
pl.	**muri**	**mur**	——	**rosae**	——	——
	muros(is)	**murs**	**murs**	**rosas(is)**	**roses**	**roses**

b. French nouns are therefore generally to be derived from the Folk-Latin oblique case, but a few words are derived from the O.F. subject forms, i.e. the Lat. nominative, e.g. **ancessor** > **ancêtre**, **filius** > **fils**, **penctor** > **peintre**, **prester** (**presbyter**) > **prêtre**; **soror** > **sœur**. In a few instances both subject and object forms have been preserved as separate words, e.g. **chantre** < **cantor**, **chanteur** < **cantore**; **on** < **homo**, **homme** < **homne**; **pâtre** < **pastor**, **pasteur** < **pastore**; **sire** < **senior**, **seigneur** < **seniore**.

86. Particular cases are as follows:—

a. Nouns ending in **s**, **x**, or **z** have the same form in both numbers, e.g. **le fils, les fils**; **la voix, les voix**; **le nez, les nez**, etc.

b. Nouns in **au** (except **landau**, pl. **landaus**), **eu**, and seven in **ou** have **x** not **s** in the plural (cf. remark), e.g. **gâteau, gâteaux**; **tableau, tableaux**; **dieu, dieux**; **neveu, neveux**; **joujou, joujoux**, etc.

1. The seven in **ou** are **bijou**, **caillou**, **chou**, **genou**, **hibou**, **joujou**, **pou**. Others in **ou** have **s**, e.g. **clou**, **clous**, etc.

c. Most nouns in **al** and a few in **ail** have their plural in **aux** (27 *d*), e.g. **cheval, chevaux**; **métal, métaux**; **bail, baux**, etc.

1. The following in **al**, derived from Italian and Spanish, or comparatively new in their use as nouns, take **s**, viz. **aval**, **bal**, **cal**, **cantal**, **carnaval**, **chacal**, **choral**, **narval**, **nopal**, **pal**, **régal**, **serval**.

2. Those in **ail** with plural in **aux** as above are **bail**, **corail**, **émail**, **soupirail**, **travail** (also **travails** in technical senses, see lexicon), **vantail**, **vitrail**.

3. **Ail** has both **ails** and **aulx**, the latter being the common form; **bétail** makes no plural, but the plural sense is expressed by **bestiaux.**

REMARK.—It will be observed that **x** as plural sign occurs only after **u**, representing either an original vowel or one developed before **l** (27 *d*). In these words the **x**, which was simply an abbreviated mode of writing **us**, has been continued in the modern spelling, the **u** being by mistake introduced. At one time the **l** of the singular was commonly reintroduced into the plural (cf. 18 *a*, end), e.g. **chevaulx**, etc., but these inserted **l**'s have all been dropped again excepting in the plural of **ail**, viz. **aulx**.

d. A few plurals are anomalous.

1. **Ciel** < **celu**, pl. **cieux**; also **ciels** in certain technical senses, see lexicon.

2. **Œil** < **oclu** (21, footnotes 3 and 5), pl. **yeux**; also **œils** in certain compounds, see lexicon.

3. **Aïeul** < **aviolu**, pl. **aïeux**; also **aïeuls** in the narrower meaning of *grand-parents.*

87. Some nouns more irregularly take no plural sign.

a. Proper names of persons, e.g. **les deux Pline, Corneille, Racine,** etc. But this rule is subject to exceptions where the **s** is added:

1. A man's name used to designate his work, e.g. **des Plines, Ovides, Raphaëls,** etc.

2. Surnames of a family, particularly one of distinction, e.g. **les Stuarts, les Guises,** but **Les Louveau** (Daudet).

3. Where the proper noun is used as a common noun. **Les Césars** *men like Cæsar.*

b. Invariable words such as prepositions, conjunctions, etc., used substantively have no plural **s**, e.g. **les mais et les si**, etc.

c. Some foreign nouns, especially such as are not fully naturalized, as **post-scriptum, cicerone,** etc.

PLURAL OF COMPOUND.

88. Of compound nouns the plural is made in various ways.

a. In noun + noun or noun + adjective where the relation between the parts is appositive or attributive, both parts take the plural sign, e.g. **chou-fleur, choux-fleurs**; **chien-loup, chiens-loups**; **chat-tigre, chats-tigres**; **beau-frère, beaux-frères**; **cerf-volant, cerfs-volants.**

b. In noun + noun in adverbial relation, or noun + another kind of modifier, *only the chief* noun has the **s**, e.g. **bain-marie, bains-marie;**

Hôtel-Dieu, **Hôtels-Dieu**; **chef-d'œuvre**, **chefs-d'œuvre**; **semi-ton**, **semi-tons**; **Anglo-Saxon**, **Anglo-Saxons**, etc.

c. In verb + its object, or other parts of speech combined, both parts are uninflected, e.g. **casse-tête**, **porte-monnaie**, **pour-boire**, **vis-à vis**, etc.

REMARK.—For further details and individual peculiarities, see the lexicons.

ADJECTIVES.

A. GENDER.

89. The feminine singular of adjectives ends in **e** mute, e.g. **plein, pleine**; **vrai, vraie**; **bleu, bleue**; **petit, petite**, etc., etc.

a. Similarly other words that distinguish gender, viz. some nouns (82 *a* 2 *α*), participles, and some pronouns and pronominal adjectives, e.g. **cousin, cousine**; **aimé, aimée**; **aucun, aucune**; **tout, toute**, etc.

b. Latin adjectives of the first and second declensions have their accusative singular in **-u** m, **-a** f.; **-u** disappears altogether, **-a** remains as **e** (21). Thus **e** mute became the feminine sign. When now this function of **e** came to be felt as a part of the regular flectional apparatus, it was applied also to adjectives which were originally of the third declension, e.g. **grand, grande** < **grande**. The old legitimate feminine **grand** is still preserved in **grand'mère**, **grand'tante**, **grand'route**, etc., where the ' is an orthographic error (cf. 36 *e*).

90. There are some particular cases.

a. Adjectives ending in **e** mute in the masculine have the same form for both genders, e.g. **capable** m. and f., **facile, jeune, sage, raide**, etc.; cf. **autre, chaque**, etc., also 82 *a* 1.

REMARK.—The **e** in the masculine is often explained by 21 (vowels in posttonic syllable), e.g. **aimable** < **amable**, **tendre** < **tenru**, **raide** < **regdu**, **tiède** < **tepdu**, etc.; but often it is due to the analogy of the feminine, e.g. **ferme**, **large**, **vide**, etc.

b. To masculines in **f** and **x** correspond feminines in **ve** and **se** respectively, e.g. **naïf, naïve**; **neuf, neuve**; **vif, vive**;

creux, creuse ; heureux, heureuse ; jaloux, jalouse, etc. (cf. also 82 *a* 2 *α*).

REMARK.—For **v** > **f**, see 23 *b*. **s** final > **x** is merely orthographic, cf 86 rem.

1. Three adjectives have voiceless **s**, written **ss** (69 *a* 4) or **c** (62 *b*), in the feminine on etymological grounds. Thus **doux, douce** < **dolce; faux** < **falsu, fausse** < **falsa**; **roux** < **rossu, rousse** < **rossa.**

2. **Préfix**, fem. **préfixe**, is a loan-word. For **vieux** see *d* below.

c. Many adjectives have the final consonant doubled in the feminine.

1. All ending in **el, eil, ien, on,** and most in **et,** e.g. **cruel, cruelle ; pareil, pareille ; ancien, ancienne ; bon, bonne ; net, nette,** etc. Cf. **tel, telle ; mien, mienne ; cet, cette,** etc.

α The exceptions in **et** are the loan-words **complet** (in-), **concret, discret** (in-), **inquiet, replet, secret,** from Latin adjectives in **ętu.** They make their feminines **complète,** etc., cf. *e* 1 below.

2. Further, **bas, gras, las ; épais, gros ; exprès, profès ; nul, gentil; bellot, pâlot, sot, vieillot; paysan** (cf. 82 *a* 2 *α*); and **grec** makes **grecque,** cf. *e* 2 below.

REMARK.—The doubling of **l, n, t** is merely orthographic and has no etymological ground, though in many cases it follows the Latin type, e.g. **nulla** > **nulle, subjecta** > **sujette,** etc. **s** however is doubled to indicate the voiceless sound regularly representing the Latin originals (69 *a* 4), viz. **bassa, crassa, lassa, spessa, grossa,** etc., cf. *b* 1 above.

d. Five adjectives have two masculine forms. Thus:—

mas.	before consonants	**beau**	**nouveau**	**fou**	**mou**	**vieux**
	bef. vow. or **h** mute	**bel**	**nouvel**	**fol**	**mol**	**vieil**
fem.	bef vow. or cons.	**belle**	**nouvelle**	**folle**	**molle**	**vieille**

REMARK.—**Bel, nouvel, fol, mol** are correct forms which developed before vowels, whereas before consonants the regular processes give the forms ending in **u**. On the other hand **vieux** is nominative < **veclus (vetulus), vieil** accusative < **veclu,** and the duality of form, surviving the distinction of case which gave rise to it, is now put to a wholly different use. **Vieux** however is still found before vowels, though it is very rare.

e. Some irregularities are merely graphic.

1. A grave accent is often required in the feminine (41 *a*) when it is not in the masculine (40 *b* 2 *α*), e.g. **fier, fière**; **bref, brève**; **complet, complète**, etc.

2. In place of **c** and **g** there stand **qu** and **gu** respectively before the feminine **e** (68 *a* 1, 64 *a* 1) to express the "hard" sounds, e.g. **caduc, caduque**; **public, publique**; **turc, turque**; **grec, grecque** (cf. *c* 2 above); **long, longue**; **oblong, oblongue**.

REMARK.—In the above the feminine forms are regular in sound with regard to the masculine, but are not organically correct, cf. O.F. **long** < **longu**, **longe** < **longa**. Three adjectives with masculines in **c** have feminines that are organically correct, since **c** before **a** became **ch** (22 *a*). These are **blanc, blanche**; **franc, franche**; **sec, sèche**.

f. A few forms are anomalous from other causes, viz.:—

m.	**coi**	**favori**	**frais**	**bénin**	**malin**	**tiers**	**absous (dis-)**
f.	**coite**	**favorite**	**fraîche**	**bénigne**	**maligne**	**tierce**	**absoute**

The last are past participles from **absoudre**, etc. (119, no. 39).

g. Many nouns in **-eur** and **-teur** are used adjectively and vary for gender (cf. 82 *a* 2 *α*); but for details as to these see lexicon.

B. NUMBER.

91. Adjectives form their plurals in **s** like nouns. They have therefore in general four forms, two in the singular and two in the plural, e.g.:—

	sg.	pl.	sg.	pl.	sg.	pl.	sg.	pl.
m.	**petit**	**petits**	**vif**	**vifs**	**bon**	**bons**	**long**	**longs**
f.	**petite**	**petites**	**vive**	**vives**	**bonne**	**bonnes**	**longue**	**longues**

a. An adjective, invariable for gender in the singular (90 *a*), is invariable in the plural, e.g. **capable, capables**; **sage, sages**, etc.

b. Adjectives with two forms in the masculine singular (90 *d*) make no plural from the one employed before vowels.

REMARK.—**S** became the plural sign for adjectives in the same way as for nouns (cf. 85 *a*).

92. As the feminine singular always ends in **e mute**

its plural presents no peculiarity. Masculine plurals show some peculiarities analogous to those of nouns.

a. Masculines in **s** and **x** remain unchanged (cf. 86 *a*), e.g. **bas** sg. and pl., **gros, heureux, doux, vieux** (91 *b*).

b. Masculines in **au** have the plural in **x** (cf. 86 *b*), e.g. **beau, beaux** (91 *b*); **nouveau, nouveaux,** etc.

1. Those in **eu** and **ou** have the plural in **s**, e g. **bleu, bleus**; **feu, feus**; **mou, mous**; **fou, fous** (89 *b*), etc. **Hébreu**, however, has **x** whether used as adjective or noun.

c. The plurals of most masculines in **al** develop in the same way as nouns to **aux** (cf. 86 *c*), e.g. **égal, égaux**; **loyal, loyaux**; **moral, moraux,** etc.

1. But some loan-words introduced after the development of **u** before **l** + const. have **s** according to the general rule. These are **amical, fatal, final, frugal, glacial, naval, pascal, pénal, théâtral,** and a few others.

REMARK.—In the case of some of these usage hesitates and there are not a few whose masculine plural forms are either avoided altogether or are exceedingly rare.

d. The pronominal adjective **tout** has the anomalous plural **tous** (cf. 202).

C. COMPARISON.

93. Adjectives are compared by prefixing the adverb **plus** *more* to the positive. There is no separate superlative form, but the comparative used after the definite article (or a possessive) has superlative as well as comparative force, e.g. :—

grand *large*	**plus grand** *larger*	**le plus grand** *the largest*
grande "	**plus grande** "	**la plus grande** " "
heureux *happy*	**plus heureux** *happier*	**le plus heureux** *the happiest*

a. Comparison entirely analogous may be performed with **moins** *less* as in English, e.g. **pauvre** *poor,* **moins pauvre** *less poor,* etc.

b. Adverbs, where their significations allow, are similarly compared, e.g.:—

souvent *often*	**plus souvent** *oftener*	**le plus souvent** *the oftenest*

94. Three adjectives and four adverbs have preserved synthetic forms of comparison, viz. :—

ADJECTIVES.

pos.	**bon** *good*	**mauvais** *bad*	**petit** *small*
comp.	**meilleur** < **meliore**	**pire** < **pejor**	**moindre** < **menor**

ADVERBS.

pos.	**bien** *well*	**mal** *badly*	**peu** *little*	**beaucoup** *much*
comp.	**mieux** < **melius**	**pis** < **pejus**	**moins** < **menus**	**plus** < **plus**

a. Even these forms are being supplanted; **plus mauvais, plus petit** are allowable, and even **plus bon** when it means *kinder.*

b. Observe that **pire** and **moindre** are old nominatives, also that the adverbs are derived from Latin neuters.

D. Numerals.

95. The cardinal numbers are as follows:—

1	**un, une**	**21**	**vingt et un**	**81**	**quatre-vingt-un**
2	**deux**	**22**	**vingt-deux**	**82**	**quatre-vingt-deux**
3	**trois**	**30**	**trente**	**83**	**quatre-vingt-trois**
4	**quatre**	**31**	**trente et un**	**84**	**quatre-vingt-quatre**
5	**cinq**	**40**	**quarante**	**85**	**quatre-vingt-cinq**
6	**six**	**41**	**quarante et un**	**86**	**quatre-vingt-six**
7	**sept**	**50**	**cinquante**	**90**	**quatre-vingt dix**
8	**huit**	**51**	**cinquante et un**	**91**	**quatre-vingt-onze**
9	**neuf**	**60**	**soixante**	**97**	**quatre-vingt-dix-sept**
10	**dix**	**61**	**soixante et un**	**98**	**quatre-vingt-dix-huit**
11	**onze**	**70**	**soixante-dix**	**99**	**quatre-vingt-dix-neuf**
12	**douze**	**71**	**soixante et onze**	**100**	**cent**
13	**treize**	**72**	**soixante-douze**	**101**	**cent un**
14	**quatorze**	**73**	**soixante-treize**	**200**	**deux cents**
15	**quinze**	**74**	**soixante-quatorze**	**202**	**deux cent deux**
16	**seize**	**75**	**soixante-quinze**	**300**	**trois cents**
17	**dix-sept**	**76**	**soixante-seize**	**1000**	**mille (mil)**
18	**dix-huit**	**77**	**soixante-dix-sept**	**5000**	**cinq mille**
19	**dix-neuf**	**79**	**soixante-dix-neuf**	**1000000**	**un million**
20	**vingt**	**80**	**quatre-vingts**	**8000000**	**huit millions**

a. The compound forms are made by simple **juxta-***position without* any connective, excepting 21, 31, 41, 51,

61, and 71, which are usually written with **et** *and*, e.g. **mille sept cent soixante-cinq, un million deux cent cinquante-cinq, mille trois cent quatre-vingt-dix-neuf,** etc. In the older language the connective was much more used than at present.

b. The hyphen is used to connect the parts of all compound forms under one hundred, excepting the six just mentioned, whether they stand alone or form parts of larger numbers. Some writers, however, use it more freely.

c. The numerals are derived pretty regularly from the corresponding Latin forms. The old forms **septante** < **septanta** (**septuaginta**), **huitante** or **octante** < **octanta** (**octoginta**), and **nonante** < **nonanta** (**nonaginta**) are for the most part obsolete.

d. **Quatre-vingts** *fourscore* is only one of a number of expressions reckoning by scores which were current in O.F.

On y voit des vieillards de cent et de six vingts ans.—Fén.

e. **Un, une** < **unu, una,** serves both as numeral and indefinite article.

96. The ordinal numerals, excepting **premier** < **primeriu** and **second** < **secondu,** are made from the cardinals by means of the suffix **-ième,** before which final **e** and the plural **s** are dropped. Thus:—

1st	**premier, ère**	**60th**	**soixantième**
2nd	**deuxième** or **second, e**	**80th**	**quatre-vingtième**
		81st	**quatre-vingt-unième**
19th	**dix-neuvième**	**90th**	**quatre-vingt-dixième**
21st	**vingt et unième**	**201st**	**deux cent unième**
22nd	**vingt-deuxième**	**5000th**	**cinq millième**

a. **Cinq** makes **cinquième** (68), **neuf, neuvième** (23 *a*, *b*).

b. The suffix **-ième,** earlier **-ime,** comes from Latin **-esmu** (**esimum**) applied beyond its original scope.

PRONOUNS AND PRONOMINAL ADJECTIVES.

A. Personal Pronouns.

97. The atonic (170) personal pronoun distinguishes three cases, the *nominative* or subject case, the *accusative* or object case, the *dative* or indirect object case; the tonic (180) forms make a fourth set. The forms are best differentiated in the third person. They are as follows:—

	Singular.				Plural.				
	I	*thou*	*he*	*she*	*we*	*you*	*they (m.)*	*they (f.)*	
a. Nom.	**je**	**tu**	**il**	**elle**	**nous**	**vous**	**ils**	**elles**	atonic
b. Acc.	**me**	**te**	**le**	**la**	**nous**	**vous**	**les**	**les**	atonic
c. Dat.	**me**	**te**	**lui**	**lui**	**nous**	**vous**	**leur**	**leur**	atonic
d. Tonic	**moi**	**toi**	**lui**	**elle**	**nous**	**vous**	**eux**	**elles**	tonic

e. The reflexive is **se, soi** of the third person. The other persons have no forms distinctively reflexive.

f. The adverbs **en** < **ende (inde)** *from there* and **y** < **ibi** *there* are also used as personal pronouns of things, with the functions of a genitive and dative case respectively (cf. synt.).

Remarks.—1. The Folk-Latin personal-pronoun declension differed in important particulars from that of the literary language. The corresponding forms are indicated by the sign of equality in the following table. Those forms are given which are important in the development of modern French.

		Cl. L.		F. L.	Cl. L.		F. L.	Cl. L.		F. L.	Cl. L.		F. L.
sg.	*n.*	**ego**	=	**io**	**tu**	=	**tu**	*n.*	**ille**	= **elle**	**illa**	=	**ella**
	d.	**mihi**	=	**me**	**tibi**	=	**te**	*d.*	**illi**	= **ellui**			
	a.	**me**	=	**me**	**te**	=	**te**	*a.*	**illum**	= **ellu**	**illam**	=	**ella**
pl.	*n.*	**nos**	=	**nos**	**vos**	=	**vos**	*n.*	**illi**	= **elli**	**illae**	=	**elle**
	d.	**nobis**	=	**nos**	**vobis**	=	**vos**	*g.*	**illorum**	= **elloru**			
	a.	**nos**	=	**nos**	**vos**	=	**vos**	*a.*	**illos**	= **ellos**	**illas**	=	**ellas**

2. These Folk-Latin forms were tonic and emphatic, or atonic, i.e. proclitic, and unemphatic, according to their relations in the sentence. *This gave rise to* a double set of forms, which are largely preserved

in O.F. and to some extent are still preserved, as shown in the following table:—

		Lat.		Fr. aton.	Fr. ton.	Lat.		Fr. aton.	Fr. ton.	Lat.		Fr. aton.	Fr. ton.	Lat.		Fr. aton.	Fr. ton.
sg.	*n.*	io	>	je	—	tu	>	tu	—	elle	>	—	—	ella	>	—	elle
	d.	me	>	me	moi	te	>	te	toi	ellui	>	—	lui				
	a.	me	>	me	moi	te	>	te	toi	ellu	>	le	—	ella	>	la	elle
pl.	*n.*	nos	>	nous	—	vos	>	vous	—	elli	>	—	ils[1]	elle	>	—	—
	d.	nos	>	nous	—	vos	>	vous	—	elloru	>	—	leur				
	a.	nos	>	nous	—	vos	>	vous	—	ellos	>	les	eux	ellas	>	les	elles

The neuter form **ellud** is also preserved in the invariable **le** (174 *c*). It will be observed that the definite article is identical in origin with the personal pronoun of the third person, both coming from the demonstrative **elle** (see synt.).

3. The present function of a surviving form does not in every case correspond to its historic origin.

B. Possessives.

98. The possessives have a double set of forms according to their adjectival or substantival use, as follows:—

		a. Adjectival Forms.			*b.* Substantival Forms.			
		sing.		plur.	sing.		plur.	
		m.	f.	m. and f.	m.	f.	m.	f.
sg.	1.	mon	ma	mes	le mien	la mienne	les miens	les miennes
	2.	ton	ta	tes	le tien	la tienne	les tiens	les tiennes
	3.	son	sa	ses	le sien	la sienne	les siens	les siennes
pl.	1.	notre		nos	le nôtre	la nôtre	les nôtres	
	2.	votre		vos	le vôtre	la vôtre	les vôtres	
	3.	leur		leurs	le leur	la leur	les leurs	

Remark.—In F. L. a double accentuation of the possessives according to the emphasis or their function gave rise to a double set of forms, as follows:—

méum > mien	**túum > tuen**	**súum > suen**
meúm > mon	**tuúm > ton**	**suúm > son**

Tuen and **suen** were made over in the thirteenth century to **tien** and **sien** on the analogy of **mien**. The forms **mienne, miens, miennes,** etc., were later made from **mien** on the model of ordinary adjective declension (cf. 90*c*, 91). The difference between **notre** and **nôtre** is not genetic; that between **nos** and **notre** is due to accent. In F. L. **vester** early gave place to **voster** under the influence of **noster** and **vos** (cf. 12 *b* 2).

[1] The nominative plural in O.F. is **il**. The **s** has been added after the analogy of nouns and the form **il** transferred to the singular.

C. Demonstratives.

99. The demonstratives have a double set of forms according to their adjectival or substantival use, as follows:—

a. Adjectives. Sg. **cet, ce** m., **cette** f. *this, that;* pl. **ces** m. and f. *these, those.*

b. Pronouns.

1. **Ce** *this, that, it.* Compounded with **ci** and **là** it gives **ceci** *this* and **cela** (**ça**) *that.*

	sing.		plur.	
2.	**celui** m.	**celle** f. *that, the one*	**ceux** m.	**celles** f. *those*
	celui-ci	**celle-ci** *this one*	**ceux-ci**	**celles-ci** *these*
	celui-là	**celle-là** *that one*	**ceux-là**	**celles-là** *those*

Remark.—In F. L. the particle **ecce** *behold* was prefixed to **hic, elle, este** for greater demonstrative force, and these compound forms give the existing pronouns and pronominal adjectives, as follows:—

	Latin.		O.F.		French.		Latin.		O.F.		French.
sg. acc.	**eccestu**	>	**icest**	>	**cet, ce**	pl. acc.	**eccestos**	>	**ices**	>	**ces**
acc.	**eccesta**	>	**iceste**	>	**cette**	acc.	**eccestas**	>	**icestes**		
dat.	**eccellui**	>	**icelui**	>	**celui**	acc.	**eccellos**	>	**icels**	>	**ceux**
acc.	**eccella**	>	**icele**	>	**celle**	acc.	**eccellas**	>	**iceles**	>	**celles**
acc.	**eccoc (hoc)**	>	**içe**	>	**ce**						

Similarly the adverbs **eccic (hic)** > **ici** > **ci**, and **ellac** > **là**, hence in the popular **celui-ci ici** the Latin **ecce** is in fact thrice repeated. The strict division of these demonstratives as adjectives and pronouns was not established in O.F., and derivatives of **elle** had still adjectival use and those of **este** substantival use.

D. Relatives.

100. The relatives may be grouped under three heads:—

a. **Qui** < **qui** nom. *who, which,* **que** < **que(m)** (**qua(m)**, **quod**), acc. *whom, which,* **quoi** (properly an interrogative, see below).

b. Sg. **lequel** m. *who, which,* **laquelle** f.; pl. **lesquels** m., **lesquelles** f. (cf. below).

c. Adverbial relatives, **dont** < **de onde,** *whose, of whom, of which;* less common are **où** < **ubi, d'où, par où.**

REMARK.—The commonest forms may, for ease of memorizing, be grouped as a paradigm (cf. syntax):

	Persons.	Things.
as subject	**qui** *who*	**qui** *which, that*
as object	**que** *whom*	**que** *which, that*
with prepositions	**qui** *whom*	**lequel** *which, that*

E. INTERROGATIVES.

101. *a.* In adjectival use: sg. **quel** < **quale** m. *which? what? what a?* **quelle** f.; pl. **quels** m., **quelles** f.

b. In substantival use:

1. **Qui** < **qui** *who? whom?* **que, quoi** < **qued** (cf. 97 rem. 2) *what?*

REMARK.—These may be arranged in paradigm form as follows:

	Persons.	Things.
as subject	**qui** *who?*	**qui** (rare) *what?*
as object	**qui** *whom?*	**que** *what?*
with prepositions	**qui** *whom?*	**quoi** *what?*

2. **Lequel** *which one?* **laquelle; lesquels, lesquelles.**

REMARK.—Observe that the adjective with the definite article has substantival function both in the possessive **le mien**, etc., and in the relative and interrogative **lequel.**

102. Indefinite adjectives and pronouns need no mention except in syntax (199–203).

VERBS.

CONJUGATION.

103. In the Folk-Latin conjugation there was greater regularity than existed in the Classic Latin. Each form however being separately subject to phonetic law, the tendency in the further history of the language was for

each to develop independently, with the result of assimilating forms of separate function, e.g. forms of different tenses, and of dissimilating those of similar function, e.g. different persons of the same tense. It is here, in the history of the verb, that the law of association has made itself most powerfully felt, levelling out functionless differences and setting up new groups where old ones were broken down. Composition also has played an important part in creating new forms to take the place of those which fell. Only a very few important points can here be touched.

a. The Latin future in some forms became indistinguishable from other parts of the same verb, e.g. **amabit** and **amavit**, **vendet** and **vendit**, etc. This favored the introduction of a compound future made with **abeo** (**habeo**) as auxiliary, e.g. **amare abet** > **aimera**, **vendre abet** > **vendra**, etc. (105 rem. 9). The old synthetic future is now wholly lost; its last representative was **iert** < **erit**, still current in O.F.

b. In the Folk-Latin all perfect tenses were assimilated to six forms, the 3d person sings. of which ended in **-ávit**, **-édit**, **-ívit**, **-it**, **-sit**, **-uit**, e.g. **amavit**, **vendedit**, **finivit**, **fecit**, **dixit**, **debuit** (or **-ávet**, etc.; cf. 21, rem.). The first three forms had the accent on the termination, and the last three were stem-accented.

c. Past participles also were nearly all assimilated to three forms in **-atu** > **-é**, **-ítu** > **-í**, and **-utu** > **-u**. Only a few of those with accented stems have been preserved, e g. **dictu** > **dit**, **factu** > **fait**, **closu** > **clos**.

d. The vowel of the verb-stem assumed often two or even three forms in the same tense under the influence of varying accent. Very many of these differences were preserved in O.F., but only a few survive in the modern language (cf. 117).

e. Very important is the formation of a whole system of compound tenses, perfect, pluperfect, past anterior, and future perfect (109). The Latin tenses of completed action have disappeared, excepting the perfect which has become a preterit or aorist, and the pluperfect subjunctive now an imperfect.

104. The conjugation of the French verb is thus made up in part of surviving Latin forms and in part of new combinations.

a. There are eight tenses, four simple, viz. *present*, *imperfect*, *preterit*, and *future*, and four compound,

viz. *perfect*, *pluperfect*, *past anterior*, and *future perfect*.

REMARK.—The simple tenses, being synthetic, are mostly derived from corresponding Latin forms, while all the compound tenses are analytic and new.

b. There are five moods, *indicative*, *conditional*, *imperative*, *subjunctive*, and *infinitive*, besides the *participles* and the *gerund* (254 *a*).

1. The *indicative* has all eight tenses, of which the present < Lat. present, imperfect < imperfect, preterit < perfect, while the future though synthetic is new (103 *a*).

2. The *conditional* is a new mood (105 rem. 9) with a synthetic present and a compound perfect.

3. The *imperative* has a present < Lat. present.

4. The *subjunctive* has four tenses, present < Lat. present and imperfect < pluperfect, and the compound perfect and pluperfect.

5. The *infinitive* has two tenses, a simple present < Lat. present and a compound perfect.

6. There are three *participles*, a simple present < Lat. present, a compound perfect, and a past < Lat. perfect passive participle, used in making all French compound forms.

7. The *gerund* < Lat. gerund lives only in certain phrases (255 *c*), and is identical in form with the present participle, e.g. **aimant** < **amante** or **amandu**.

105. The endings of the simple tenses are as follows:—

		INDICATIVE.				COND.	IMV.	SUBJUNCTIVE.	
		pres.	imp.	pret.	fut.	pres.	pres.	pres.	imp.
sg.	1.	-s or -e	-ais	-s or -i	-ai	-ais		-e	-sse
	2.	-s or -es	-ais	-s	-as	-ais	-s or -e	-es	-sses
	3.	-t or -e	-ait	-t or -	-a	-ait		-e	-t
pl.	1.	-ons	-ions	-mes	-ons	-ions	-ons	-ions	-ssions
	2.	-ez	-iez	-tes	-ez	-iez	-ez	-iez	-ssiez
	3.	-ent	-aient	-rent	-ont	-aient		-ent	-ssent

a. The present infinitive ends in **-er**, **-ir**, **-oir**, or **-re**; the present participle in **-ant**, the past participle in **-é**, **-i**, **-u**, and a few in **-s** or **-t**.

b. The compound tenses are made as in English by adding the past participle to the corresponding simple tense of the auxiliary (109).

REMARKS.—1. The 1st singular in Latin ended in **o** or **m**, both of which fell (21 *h*, and rem.), leaving in O.F. the bare stem as 1st person singular. The ending **s** is of late introduction, probably being due to the analogy of the 2d person singular and such forms as **facio** > **faz** > **fais** where the **s** is the regular representative of the last consonant of the stem. Indicative and imperative forms without **s** are common even in the sixteenth century. The ending **e** of the first conjugation is due to the analogy of the other persons.

2. The **t** of the 3d person was regularly preserved in certain combinations, and has become the third personal ending except in the first conjugation.

3. From Latin **-ámus**, **-émus**, **-ímus**, **-mus** (**ĭmus**) we should naturally expect **-ains** (21 *c*), **-eins** (ibid.), **-ins**, and **-ns** respectively. The vowel **o** in the ending **-ons** is probably due to **somus** > **somes** > **sommes**.

4. Latin **-átes** > **-ets** > **-es** has usurped the place of **-étes**, **-ítes**, etc., and become universal for the 2d plural except in the preterit.

5. **Ent** with mute **e** represents equally **-ant**, **-ent**, **-unt** (cf. 21, note 8).

6. The imperfect endings which have come to be applied to all verbs alike are derived from **-ébam**, **-ébas**, etc., e.g. **-ébant** (losing its **b**) > **eient** > **oient** > **aient** (18 *a*).

7. The preservation of the perfect endings **-mus**, **-tes**, **-runt** unshortened as **-mes**, **-tes**, **-rent** is not fully explained.

8. The stem vowel in the preterit 2d plural and in the imperfect subjunctive 3d singular has the circumflex accent on account of a lost **s** (36 *a* 3), e.g. **cantastes** > **chantastes** > **chantâtes**; **cantasset** > **chantast** > **chantât**, etc. In the 1st person plural of the preterit the **s** was introduced from the analogy of the 2d person, e.g. **cantamus** > **chantames** > **chantasmes** > **chantâmes**.

9. The endings of the future and conditional come respectively from the present and imperfect indicative of **abeo** (**habeo**), thus **aimerai** < **amarabeo** < **amare abeo**, and **aimerais** < **amarabebam** < **amare abebam**, etc. This use of **abeo** with the infinitive began in Classic Latin. It was not yet a genuine future, but expressed an idea of obligation or necessity, e.g. **quem habemus odisse** *whom we must* (*have to*) *hate*, Tert. Apol. 37.

106. The *principal parts* of a verb are those typical forms from which all the other parts may be deduced in accordance with fixed rules. The French verb has five such parts,[1] viz. the *present infinitive*, the *present participle*, the *past participle*, the 1st person singular of the *present indicative*, and the 1st person singular of the *preterit indicative*.

a. The *infinitive* (regularly unchanged except that final **e** is dropped) is the stem of the *future indicative* and *present conditional*. For endings see 105 rem. 9.

b. The stem of the *present participle* is the stem of the *plural* of the *present indicative*, the *imperfect indicative*, and the *present subjunctive*. For endings see 105.

c. With the *past participle* are formed the *compound tenses* (103 *c*).

d. The stem of the *present indicative* is the stem of the *imperative*. For endings see 105.

e. The stem of the *preterit indicative* is the stem of the *imperfect subjunctive*. For endings see 105.

REMARKS.—1. It will be observed that practically the same parts are taken as for the Latin verb with the addition of the present participle. Their relation of form to one another is different in the different conjugations.

2. The *synopsis table* of a verb consists of the principal parts together with the first form of each of the derived parts. It is not a history of the development of the forms, but merely a convenient way of presenting the conjugation of a verb in compact shape, as follows:—

---

[1] Chassang prefers to give as principal parts the 1st person singular of the pres., imp., pret., fut., and perf. indicative, thus:

j'aime aimais aimai aimerai ai aimé

This arrangement has some advantages.

infin.	pres. part.	past part.	pres. ind.	pret. ind.
future	pr. ind. pl.	all	pres. imv.	imp. subj.
pr. cond.	imp. ind.	compound		
	pres. subj.	tenses		

or, taking **aimer** *love* as a concrete example,

aimer	**aim-ant**	**aimé**	**aim-e**	**aima-i**
-ai	**-ons**	**avoir aimé**	**-e**	**-sse**
-ais	**-ais**	etc., etc.		
	-e			

THE AUXILIARY VERBS.

107. The auxiliary verbs are **avoir** < **abere** *have* and **être** < **esre** *be* (108). The conjugation of **avoir** is as follows:—

	Indicative.				Cond.	Imv.	Subjunctive.	
	pres. *I have*, etc.	imp. *had*, etc.	pret. *had*, etc.	fut. *shall have*, etc.	pres. *should have*, etc.	pres. *have*	pres. *may have*, etc.	imp. *might have*, etc.
j'	**ai**	**avais**	**eus**	**aurai**	**aurais**		**aie**	**eusse**
tu	**as**	**-ais**	**-s**	**-as**	**-ais**	**aie**	**-es**	**-sses**
il	**a**	**-ait**	**-t**	**-a**	**-ait**		**ait**	**eût**
nous	**avons**	**-ions**	**eûmes**	**-ons**	**-ions**	**ayons**	**ayons**	**eussions**
vous	**avez**	**-iez**	**eûtes**	**-ez**	**-iez**	**-ez**	**-ez**	**-ssiez**
ils	**ont**	**-aient**	**eurent**	**-ont**	**-aient**		**aient**	**-ssent**

pres. inf. **avoir** *to have;* pres. part. **ayant** *having;* past part. **eu** *had.*

The compound tenses are made by adding the past participle to the foregoing simple forms:—

	Indicative.				Cond.	Subjunctive.	
	perf. *I have had*	pluperf. *had had*	past. ant. *had had*	fut. perf. *shall have had*	perf. *should have had*	perf. *may have had*	pluperf. *might have had*
	j'ai eu	**avais eu**	**eus eu**	**aurai eu**	**aurais eu**	**aie eu**	**eusse eu**
	etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.

perf. inf. **avoir eu** *to have had;* perf. part. **ayant eu** *having had.*

a. The synopsis table of **avoir** is as follows:—

avoir	**ayant**	**eu**	**ai**	**eus**
aurai	**avons**	**avoir eu**	**-e**	**-sse**
-ais	**-ais**	etc., etc.		
	aie			

b. When the third person singular of any verb ends in a *vowel* and is followed by a subject pronoun (149), **il, elle**

or **on**, a **t** is always inserted between hyphens, e.g. **a-t-il** *has he?* **aura-t-elle** *will she have?* **aime-t-on** *does one love?* etc. This **t** is not a direct survival of the Latin personal ending **t**, but after having been lost was restored in the sixteenth century after the analogy of forms like **doit-il, fait-il**, etc., where the **t** had been preserved.

c. All the forms of **avoir** are developed historically from the Latin conjugation of **abere** but with some inorganic changes. Two or three points may be noticed (cf. also 117 *b* 1).

1. **Abere** regularly gives **avoir**, but in the collocation **abere abeo** it became proclitic and suffered contraction; thus, **abere** > **aver** > **avr** > **aur** (cf. 119, no. 16).

2. The past participle in F.L. was **abútu**, hence **eu** (103 *c*).

3. In O.F. the distinction between the forms with the accent on the stem and those with the accent on the ending was maintained; thus, F.L. **ábui, ábuit, ábuerunt** > **oi, ot, orent**; **abúesti, abúemus, abúestes** > **eus, eusmes** (105, rem. 8), **eustes** (cf. the Italian preterit). Later the vowel of the last three prevailed.

108. The conjugation of **être** < **esre** *be* is as follows:—

	Indicative.				Cond.	Imv.	Subjunctive.	
	pres.	imp.	pret.	fut.	pres.	pres.	pres.	imp.
	I am, etc.	*was*, etc.	*was*, etc.	*shall be*, etc.	*should be*, etc.	*be*	*may be*, etc.	*might be*, etc.
je	**suis**	**étais**	**fus**	**serai**	**serais**		**sois**	**fusse**
tu	**es**	**-ais**	**-s**	**-as**	**-ais**	**sois**	**sois**	**-sses**
il	**est**	**-ait**	**-t**	**-a**	**-ait**		**soit**	**fût**
nous	**sommes**	**-ions**	**fûmes**	**-ons**	**-ions**	**soyons**	**soyons**	**fussions**
vous	**êtes**	**-iez**	**fûtes**	**-ez**	**-iez**	**-ez**	**soyez**	**-ssiez**
ils	**sont**	**-aient**	**furent**	**-ont**	**-aient**		**soient**	**-ssent**

pres. inf. **être** *to be;* pres. part. **étant** *being;* past part. **été** *been.*

The compound tenses are made by adding the past participle to the simple forms of **avoir**, as follows:—

Indicative.				Cond.	Subjunctive.	
perf.	pluperf.	past ant.	fut. perf.	perf.	perf.	pluperf.
I have been	*had been*	*had been*	*shall have been*	*should have been*	*may have been*	*might have been*
j'ai été	**avais été**	**eus été**	**aurai été**	**aurais été**	**aie été**	**eusse été**
etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.

perf. inf. **avoir été** *to have been;* perf. part. **ayant été** *having been.*

a. The synopsis table is as follows:—

être	**étant**	**été**	**suis**	**fus**
serai	**sommes**	**avoir été**	**sois**	**-sse**
-ais	**étais**	etc., etc.		
	sois			

b. The existing conjugation of **être** is derived from the Latin conjugation of **esre** (**esse**).

1. In the F.L. the infinitive **esre** was made after the pattern of other infinitives (cf. **potere** (**posse**) 119, no. 15; **volere** (**velle**) 119, no. 18). **Esre** > **estre** > **être** (cf. 27 *c*, 36 *a* 3).

2. The past participle was supplied from the conjugation of **stare**; thus, **statu** > **esté** > **été** (22 *f*).

3. **Étant** < O.F. **estant** and the imperfect **étais** < O.F. **estait** are not derived from Latin forms, but are made from the radical **est-** of **estre** with the usual endings **-ant** and **-ais**, etc.

4. **Sois, fusse** < **seam** (**sim**), **fuissem**, e.g. **seas** > **seies** > **soies** > **sois**.

5. The radical **ser-** of the future and conditional is from **esre** with aphæresis of the initial **e**.

COMPOUND TENSES.

109. The compound tenses of verbs are made with one of the two auxiliaries, **avoir** or **être** (210–212).

a. This use of **avoir** took its rise in Folk-Latin expressions corresponding to the following: **Nostramque adulescentiam habent despicatam.** Ter. Eun. 93. **Perfidiam Hæduorum perspectam habebat.** Cæs. B. G. 7. 54. **Bellum semper habuit indictum.** Cic. Verr. 5. 72, etc. Finally, when the idea of possession had faded **abeo** came to be a mere auxiliary.

b. The corresponding use of **être** goes back to the Latin deponent verb. The first step was taken in F.L., where the simple passive forms were replaced by active forms, making semi-deponents; thus, **sortire** (**sortiri**) had pres. **sortit** (**sortitur**), perf. **sortitus est**, now **il sort, il est sorti.**

CLASSIFICATION OF VERBS.

110. There are two regular conjugations, distinguished by the infinitive ending, that of the first being **-er** < **-are**, and of the second **-ir** < **-ire**.

a. These two conjugations together contain the mass of the verbs in the language. The endings **-er** and **-ir** are *living suffixes* used constantly in the formation of new

verbs; **-er** is employed with the utmost freedom, **-ir** more sparingly, chiefly, like English *-en*, to make verbs from adjectives; e.g. **blanc** *white*, **blanchir** *whiten*. These are the *living conjugations*.

b. Many grammars give, besides, a third conjugation in **-oir** < **-ere** and a fourth in **-re** < **-re** (**-ĕre**), but these are no longer living suffixes. The verbs in **-oir** that follow a single model number but seven, and in **-re** about seventeen, or with their compounds about fifty. These are the *dead conjugations;* they receive no longer any accessions, and will all be treated among the so-called irregular verbs.

THE FIRST REGULAR CONJUGATION.

111. Aimer < **amare** *love* may be taken as the model of the first conjugation. For synopsis table see 106, rem. 2.

INDICATIVE.

	pres.	imp.	pret.	fut.
	I love, am loving, do love, etc.	*was loving, did love*, etc.	*loved*	*shall love*
	j'aim e	aim ais	aima i	aimer ai
tu	-es	-ais	-s	-as
il	-e	-ait	aima	-a
nous	-ons	-ions	aimâ mes	-ons
vous	-ez	-iez	aimâ tes	-ez
ils	-ent	-aient	aimè rent	-ont

	COND. pres.	IMV. pres.	SUBJUNCTIVE. pres.	imp.
	I should love	*love (thou)*	*I may love*	*I might love*
	j'aimer ais		aim e	aima sse
tu	-ais	aim e	-es	-sses
il	-ait		-e	aimâ t
nous	-ions	-ons	-ions	aima ssions
vous	-iez	-ez	-iez	-ssiez
ils	-aient		-ent	-ssent

pres. inf. **aimer** *to love;* pres. part. **aimant** *loving;* past part. **aimé** *loved.*

The compound tenses are **j'ai aimé, j'avais aimé,** etc. (cf. 107 and 108). The perf. inf. is **avoir aimé**; the perf. part. **ayant aimé.**

a. A few verbs of this conjugation make their compound tenses with the auxiliary **être** instead of **avoir.** **Arriver** *arrive* may be taken as a model. Its simple

tenses are precisely analogous to those of **aimer**; its compound tenses are conjugated as follows:—

INDICATIVE.

perfect *I have arrived*, etc.			pluperf. *I had arrived*, etc.		past ant. *I had arrived*, etc.		fut. perf. *I shall have arrived*, etc.	
je suis	**arrivé**,	**-ée**	**étais**	**arr.**	**fus**	**arr.**	**serai**	**arr.**
tu es	"	"	**-ais**	"	**-s**	"	**-as**	"
il[1] **est**	"	"	**-ait**	"	**-t**	"	**-a**	"
nous sommes	**arrivés**,	**-ées**	**-ions**	**arr.**	**fûmes**	**arr.**	**-ons**	**arr.**
vous êtes	"	"	**-iez**	"	**fûtes**	"	**-ez**	"
ils[1] **sont**	"	"	**-aient**	"	**furent**	"	**-ont**	"

CONDITIONAL. perfect *I should have arrived*. etc.				SUBJUNCTIVE. perfect *I may have arrived*, etc.		pluperfect *I might have arrived*, etc.	
je serais		**arrivé**,	**-ée**	**sois**	**arr.**	**fusse**	**arr.**
tu	**-ais**	"	"	**sois**	"	**-sses**	"
il	**-ait**	"	"	**soit**	"	**fût**	"
nous	**-ions**	**arrivés**,	**-ées**	**soyons**	**arr.**	**fussions**	**arr.**
vous	**-iez**	"	"	**soyez**	"	**-ssiez**	"
ils	**-aient**	"	"	**soient**	"	**-ssent**	"

perf. inf. **être arrivé** *to have arrived;* perf. part. **étant arr.** *having arr.*

b. Like **aimer** are conjugated all verbs with infinitives in **-er** excepting two (119, nos. 1 and 2), e.g. **couper, chanter, casser, donner,** etc.

c. The imperative 2d person singular now ends in **s** in all verbs except those of the first conjugation (see 105; cf. 119, nos. 5, 8, 17), and even in the first conjugation an inorganic **s** is inserted before **en** or **y**, e.g. **donnes-en, mènes-y-moi, cueilles-y des fruits, vas-y, vas-en chercher,** etc. In O.F. the imperative generally was the same as the stem; cf. 105, rem. 1.

d. Before **je** a final mute **e** (e.g. in **aime** or **aimasse**) receives an acute accent, **aimé-je? aimassé-je?** (cf. 41 *b* 1 *e*). For movable **t** in the third person singular see 107 *b*.

REMARK.—The first conjugation in French is developed with great regularity from the first Latin conjugation. A few points of special interest may be noted.

[1] Of course **il** (**ils**) is replaced by **elle** (**elles**) when the subject is feminine, and the participle varies to agree with the gender and *number of the* subject (cf. Synt.).

1. In the singular number of the present indicative and imperative, and of the preterit indicative, the endings of the first conjugation differ from those of the other conjugations (cf. 105).

2. The imperfect indicative in Old French had the endings **-eve**, **-eves**, **-evet**, **event** < **-abam**, **-abas**, **-abat**, **-abant**; but these gave way before the forms **-ais**, etc., derived from **-ebas**, etc. (cf. 105, rem. 6).

3. The preterit stem ends in **a** (e.g. **aima** < **amav**), but this **a** receives the circumflex accent in the first and second persons plural of the indicative and in the third person singular of the imperfect subjunctive (see 105, rem. 8). The **a** changes to **è** in the third person plural of the preterit indicative (21 *a*), e.g. **amarunt** > **aimèrent**.

112. There are some peculiarities in spelling arising from the general principles of orthography. These affect (1) verbs ending in **-cer** or **-ger**; (2) verbs in which the penultimate syllable of the infinitive contains mute **e**; (3) verbs in which the penultimate syllable of the infinitive contains **é** with the acute accent; (4) verbs ending in **-yer**.

a. Verbs of the first class retain the spirant sounds of **c** (= **s**, 62 *b*), and **g** (= **ž**, 64 *b*) throughout their conjugation, and hence write **ç** and **ge** respectively before the vowels **a** or **o** (cf. 36 *b*, 64 *b* 1).

1. The synopsis table of **placer** *place* is as follows:—

placer	**plaçant**	**placé**	**place**	**plaça i**
-ai	**-ons**	**avoir placé**	**-e**	**-sse**
-ais	**-ais**	etc., etc.		
	place			

2. The synopsis table of **manger** *eat* is as follows:—

manger	**mangeant**	**mangé**	**mange**	**mangea i**
-ai	**-ons**	**avoir mangé**	**-e**	**-sse**
-ais	**-ais**	etc., etc.		
	mange			

b. Verbs of the second class change **e** mute of the stem to **è** with the grave accent whenever in conjugation the next syllable contains **e** mute (41 *a*).

1. The commonest of these verbs are **lever, mener,** and their compounds. The synopsis table of **lever** is as follows:—

lever	**levant**	**levé**	**lève**	**leva i**
lèverai	**-ons**	**avoir levé**	**-e**	**-sse**
-ais	**-ais**	etc., etc.		
	lève			

c. Verbs of the second class ending in **-eler** and **-eter** double **l** or **t** before **e** mute, instead of writing the grave accent over the vowel (41 *a* 1).

1. The commonest of such verbs are **jeter, appeler,** and their compounds. The synopsis table of **appeler** is as follows:—

appeler	**appelant**	**appelé**	**appelle**	**appela i**
appellerai	**-ons**	**avoir appelé**	**-e**	**-sse**
-ais	**-ais**	etc., etc.		
	appelle			

2. By exception **acheter, bourreler, déceler, geler, harceler, peler,** and a few others follow the general rule as given under *b* above.

d. Verbs of the third class change the acute to the grave accent where the ending contains **e** mute (41 *b*). The future and conditional are generally written with the acute (41 *b* 1 *γ*, and rem. 1).

1. The commonest of these verbs are **céder, espérer, régner.** The synopsis table of **céder** is as follows:—

céder	**cédant**	**cédé**	**cède**	**céda i**
-ai	**-ons**	**avoir cédé**	**-e**	**-sse**
-ais	**-ais**	etc., etc.		
	cède			

2. Verbs in **-éger** were formerly written with the acute accent throughout, but are now made to conform to the rule just given (41 *b*, rem. 1).

e. Verbs of the fourth class change **y** to **i** whenever in *conjugation* an **e** mute immediately follows (45, rem.).

1. Common examples are **payer, nettoyer, appuyer.** The synopsis table of **appuyer** is as follows:—

appuyer	**appuyant**	**appuyé**	**appuie**	**appuyai**
appuierai	**-ons**	**avoir appuyé**	**-e**	**-ssе**
-ais	**-ais**	etc., etc.		
	appuie			

2. Verbs in **-ayer** are sometimes written with **y** throughout (45, rem.), as **paye, payerai,** etc., instead of **paie, paierai,** etc.

3. Verbs in **-eyer** retain **y** throughout; e.g. **grasseye, grasseyerai,** etc.

THE SECOND REGULAR CONJUGATION.

113. Finir < **finire** *finish* may be taken as the model of the second conjugation.

INDICATIVE.

pres.	imp.	pret.	fut.
I finish, am finishing, do finish, etc.	*was finishing, did finish,* etc.	*finished*	*shall finish*
je finis	**finissais**	**finis**	**finirai**
tu -s	**-ais**	**-s**	**-as**
il -t	**-ait**	**-t**	**-a**
nous finissons	**-ions**	**finîmes**	**-ons**
vous -ez	**-iez**	**finîtes**	**-ez**
ils -ent	**-aient**	**finirent**	**-ont**

COND. pres.	IMV. pres.	SUBJUNCTIVE. pres.	SUBJUNCTIVE. imp.
I should finish	*finish (thou)*	*may finish*	*might finish*
je finirais		**finisse**	**finisse**
tu -ais	**finis**	**-es**	**-sses**
il -ait		**-e**	**finît**
nous -ions	**finissons**	**-ions**	**finissions**
vous -iez	**-ez**	**-iez**	**-ssiez**
ils -aient		**-ent**	**-ssent**

pres. inf. **finir** *to finish;* pres. part. **finissant** *finishing;* past part. **fini** *finished.*

The compound tenses are **j'ai fini, j'avais fini,** etc. (see 107 and 108). The perf. inf. is **avoir fini;** the perf. part. **ayant fini.**

a. The synopsis table is as follows:—

finir	**finissant**	**fini**	**finis**	**finis**
-ai	**-ons**	**avoir fini**	**-s**	**-sse**
-ais	**-ais**	etc., etc.		
	-e			

b. Like **finir** are conjugated the great majority of verbs with infinitives in **-ir**; e.g. **agir, bâtir, choisir, remplir, réussir**, etc., etc.

REMARK.—The second conjugation in French is developed from the fourth Latin conjugation with some important modifications.

1. The whole present system was formed on an inceptive stem, but the simple perfect stem was of course retained. Thus the second persons singular of our model represent the following F.L. forms: **finisces, finiscebas, finisti, finirabes, finirabébas, finisce, finiscas, finisses.** This is the reason of the partial coincidence between the forms of the present and preterit indicative and of the present and imperfect subjunctive.

2. A considerable number of verbs which in classic Latin were of the second or third conjugations went over in F.L. to the fourth, and thus appear in the second French conjugation. Such are **florire** > **fleurir, emplire** > **emplir, agire** > **agir, fremire** > **frémir**, etc.

114. Three verbs may be treated here that are very slightly irregular.

a. **Bénir** < **bendicre (benedicere)** has two past participles, the regular **béni** and the old form **bénit** which is now used only as an adjective in the sense of *consecrated*, e.g. **pain bénit, eau bénite**, etc.

b. **Fleurir** < **florire** has two present participles and two imperfect indicative forms, viz. **fleurissant, -ais** and **florissant, -ais**; the latter are only used in the figurative sense of *be flourishing*.

c. **Haïr** < Goth. **hatjan** has in the singular of the present indicative and imperative the forms **hais, hais, hait**, instead of **haïs**, etc.

REFLEXIVE CONJUGATION.

115. Reflexive verbs are very common in French, and present no flexional peculiarities except that the compound tenses are made with **être** (211). **Se coucher** *lay one's self down, go to bed*, may be taken as a model:—

	INDICATIVE.					COND.	SUBJUNCTIVE.	
	pres.		imp.	pret.	fut.	pres.	pres.	imp.
je	**me couch e**		**-ais**	**-a i**	**-er ai**	**-er ais**	**-e**	**-a sse**
tu	**te**	**-es**	**-ais**	**-a s**	**-er as**	**-er ais**	**-es**	**-a sses**
il	**se**	**-e**	**-ait**	**-a**	**-er a**	**-er ait**	**-e**	**-â t**
nous	**nous**	**-ons**	**-ions**	**-â mes**	**-er ons**	**-er ions**	**-ions**	**-a ssions**
vous	**vous**	**-ez**	**-iez**	**-â tes**	**-er ez**	**-er iez**	**-iez**	**-a ssiez**
ils	***se***	**-ent**	**-aient**	**-è rent**	**-er ont**	**-er aient**	**-ent**	**-a ssent**

pres. imv. **couche-toi** **couchons-nous** **coucher-vous** (178 *a*).

	INDICATIVE.				COND.	SUBJUNCTIVE.	
perfect	plup.	pt. ant.	fut. pf.		perf.	perf.	plup.
je me suis couché, -ée	imp. ind. of **être**	pret. ind. of **être**	fut. ind. of **être**		pres. cond. of **être**	pres. subj. of **être**	imp. subj. of **être**
tu t' es " "							
il s' est " "							
nous nous sommes couchés, -ées							
vous vous êtes " "							
ils se sont " "							

REMARK.—Only the perfect indicative of the compound tenses is written out in full. The others are made as indicated above with the corresponding simple tense of the auxiliary, e.g. plup. **je m'étais couché**, etc. With the fem. participle **elle**, **elles** replace **il**, **ils**; cf. 111 *a*, foot-note.

THE PASSIVE VOICE.

116. The passive voice is made exactly as in English by prefixing the entire conjugation of **être** *be* to the past participle of the verb to be conjugated, the participle being variable to agree with the subject (257). Thus, from **aimer** the present and perfect indicative are as follows (cf. 111 *a*, foot-note):—

present	perfect
je suis aimé, -ée	**j' ai été aimé, -ée**
tu es " "	**tu as " " "**
il est " "	**il a " " "**
nous sommes aimés, -ées	**nous avons été aimés, -ées**
vous êtes " "	**vous avez " " "**
ils sont " "	**ils ont " " "**

REMARK.—This analytic passive took its rise when the synthetic passive forms of the classic Latin became confused in F.L. with the corresponding active forms, and fell. To take their place the compound forms already existing as perfect, pluperfect, and future perfect were employed as present, imperfect, and future respectively, and the system was extended to all tenses. Even in Classic Latin the perfect is almost present when the participle has adjectival force, e.g. **captus est** *he is caught* (cf. the German so-called passive with sein).

IRREGULAR VERBS.

117. The phonetic development from Latin to Old French (see Phonology) produced many peculiarities of

conjugation. The tendency in the later history of the language has been towards uniformity, causing some of these peculiarities to disappear. The most important of those that remain are cases where the verb-stem still has a double form:—

a. under the influence of accent.

1. Latin **o** tonic > **eu**, but pretonic > **ou** (21 *a*, *e*), e.g. **móv- -eo, -es, -et, -ent** > **meu- -s, -s, -t, meuvent**, but **mov- -émus, -étes, -ébas**, etc. > **mouv- -ons, -ez, -ais**, etc.; cf. 119, nos. 9, 15, 16, etc.

2. Latin **ę** tonic > **ie**, but pretonic > **e** (21 *a*, *e*), e.g. **tén- -eo, -es, -et, -ent** > **tien- -s, -s, -t, tiennent**, but **ten- -émus, -étes, -ébas**, etc. > **ten- -ons, -ez, -ais**, etc.; cf. 119, nos. 10, 11, 21, etc.

3. Latin **ę** tonic > **oi**, but pretonic > **e** (21 *a*, *e*), e.g. **déb- -eo, -es, -et, -ent** > **doi- -s, -s, -t, doivent**, but **deb- -émus, -étes, -ébas**, etc. > **dev- -ons, -ez, -ais**, etc.; cf. 119, nos. 13, 29.

b. Owing to **i** or **e** (pronounced **i̯**) before a vowel in the flexion.

1. The group **pi̯** and **bi̯**. Thus we have the double stem **ai** and **av** of **avoir**, e.g. **áb- -eo, -eam** > **ai, aie**, but **ab- -ébas**, etc. > **av- -ais**, etc.; cf. 119, no. 17.

2. The group **li̯** (29 *e*, 27 *a*). Thus **valeam** > **vaille**, but **valebas** > **valais**, etc.

c. According to whether the flexion began with an accented vowel or with an unaccented vowel which dropped.

1. Stems ending in **ng**, e.g. **plánges** > **plains**, but **plangéntem** > **plaignant**, etc.

2. Stems ending in **l** (27 *d*), e.g. **válet** > **vaut**, but **valébas** > **valais**, etc. (cf. 119, nos. 18, 19, 38, 40).

d. Owing to the phonetic development in certain combinations of consonants or vowels (27 *c*).

1. Between consonants, e.g. **molre** > **moldre** > **moudre**, but **molebas** > **moulais**, etc. (cf. 119, nos. 10, 18, 19, 31, 32, 33, 37, etc.).

2. Inorganic consonants between vowels, e.g. **potere** > **poeir** > **pouvoir**, but **potest** > **peut** (cf. 119, nos. 14, 20, 21, etc.).

118. The so-called irregular verbs are those whose conjugation does not conform to that of **aimer** or **finir**.

a. The principál parts have no uniform relation to one another, but the following points may be noted:—

1. Infinitives in **-er** give preterits in **-ai**; **-ir** gives **-is**, excepting **mourir, courir, venir**, and their analogues; **-oir** gives **-us**, excepting **voir** and its compounds; **-re** gives **-is** or **-us**

2. The past participle and the preterit indicative are generally identical in sound, but a few in -u have preterits in -is, viz. **vêtu**, **vu**, **vendu**, **cousu**, and their analogues. Past participles in -t do not come under this rule, and **tenu** (< **tenutu**) (119, no. 10) and **né** (< **natu**) (119, no. 38) are anomalous.

b. The principal parts determine the form of the derived parts for so-called irregular as well as for regular verbs, but:—

1. The infinitive is often contracted to form the future and conditional (107 *c* 1; cf. 119, nos. 2, 7, 9, 21, 27).

2. The third person plural of the present indicative and subjunctive and the singular of the present subjunctive generally have the stem-vowel of the singular of the present indicative (117 *a*; cf. 119, nos. 9–13, 15, 16, 19, 29, etc.). The first and second persons plural rarely present any peculiarity.

3. The substitution of **y** for **i** before other vowels than **e** mute (45, rem.) causes many apparent irregularities.

4. Stems ending in **t**, **d**, or **c** drop the ending **t** of the third pers. sg. pres. ind., and stems ending in **tt** lose one **t** in the sg. of the pres. ind. (cf. 119, nos. 21, 34, 35, 36, 38, 39).

c. Isolated peculiarities are found only in the pres. indicative (and imperative) as follows:—

1. The singular of **être** (108), **avoir** (107), and **aller** (119, no. 1).

2. One first person plural in -**mes**, viz. **sommes** (108).

3. Three second persons plural in -**tes**, viz. **êtes** < **estes** (108), **faites** < **factes** (no. 27), **dites** < **dictes** (no. 25).

4. Four third persons plural in -**ont**, viz. **sont** < **sont** (108), **ont** (107), **font** < **facunt** (no. 27), **vont** < **vadunt** (no. 1), both these last on the analogy of **sont**.

CONJUGATION OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

119. The verbs are grouped according to the ending of the infinitive, and are arranged in the groups with a view to practical ease of acquisition, proceeding in general from the more regular to the anomalous. When only the principal parts are given all the derived parts are to be formed regularly from them. The compound tenses are to be made with **avoir**, unless otherwise stated under the past participle. On the lower part of the page will

be found all necessary explanations, together with a complete list in each case of the verbs, including compounds, which follow the models chosen for more conspicuous treatment. The latter have been made as few as possible.

A. WITH INFINITIVE IN -er.

No.	infin.	pres. part.	past part.	pres. ind.	pret. ind.
1.	**aller**	**allant, -ons**	**allé**	**vais**	**allai**
	irai	**-ais, aille**	**être**	**va**	**-sse**
2.	**envoyer**	**envoyant, -ons**	**envoyé**	**envoie**	**envoyai**
	enverrai	**-ais, envoie**	**avoir**	**-e**	**-sse**

B. WITH INFINITIVES IN -ir.

3.	**partir**	**partant**	**parti (être)**	**pars**	**partis**

1. Pres. ind. **vais, vas, va, allons, allez, vont**; imv. **va** (or **vas**, 111 *c*), **allons, allez**; pres. subj. **aille, ailles, aille, allions** (cf. 118 *b* 2), **alliez, aillent.**

a. The conjugation of **aller** *go* is made up of three distinct verbs, viz. **vado, es, -et, -unt** > **vais, vas, va, vont**; **ire** > **irai, -ais**; a third, of uncertain etymology, perhaps from **amblare** influenced by the Keltic **el**, gives the forms beginning in **a**, e.g. **aller, allons, aille,** etc. See also 117 *b* 2.

b. The reflexive **s'en aller** *go away* is in very common use; pres. ind. **je m'en vais, tu t'en vas, il s'en va, nous nous en allons, vous vous en allez, ils s'en vont,** etc., etc.

2. **Envoyer** < **enviare** *send* is only peculiar in the contract future and conditional (118 *b* 1; cf. 118 *b* 3). Many verbs that formerly had contract futures have reinstated more regular ones, e.g. **donarabeo** > **donrai** > **dorrai**, now **donnerai.**

a. Like **envoyer** is its compound **renvoyer** *send back.*

3. **Partir** < **partire** *depart* is only peculiar in losing the last consonant of the stem in the singular of the present indicative and imperative. It preserves the fourth Latin conjugation much more truly than **finir** with its inceptive addition to the stem (113, rem. 1).

a. Like **partir** are conjugated **sortir** (être) < **sortire** *go out*, **mentir** < **mentire** *lie*, **se repentir** < **-pentire** (pœnitere) *repent*, **sentir** < **sentire** *feel*, **dormir** < **dormire** *sleep*, **servir** < **servire** *serve*, and their compounds **dé-**, **repartir**; **ressortir** *go out again;* **démentir**; **con-**, **pres-**, **ressentir**; **en-**, **re-**, **rendormir**; **desservir.** The pres. ind. forms are **sors, mens, repens, sens, dors, sers.**

b. But **répartir, ressortir** (law), **asservir,** and **assortir** *assort* (not a compound of **sortir**) follow **finir.**

No.	infin.	pres. part.	past part.	pres. ind.	pret. ind.
4.	**fuir**	**fuyant, fuie**	**fui**	**fuis**	**fuis**
5.	**cueillir**	**cueillant, -ons**	**cueilli**,	**cueille**	**cueillis**
	cueillerai	**-ais, -e**	**avoir**	**-e**	**-sse**
6.	**vêtir**	**vêtant**	**vêtu**	**vêts**	**vêtis**
7.	**courir**	**courant, -ons**	**couru**	**cours**	**courus**
	courrai	**-ais, -e**	**avoir**	**-s**	**-sse**
8.	**ouvrir**	**ouvrant**	**ouvert**	**ouvre**	**ouvris**
9.	**mourir**	**mourant, -ons**	**mort**	**meurs**	**mourus**
	mourrai	**-ais, meure**	**être**	**-s**	**-sse**

c. **Bouillir** < **bollire** *boil* and **faillir** < **fallire** (113, rem. 2) *fall short*, with their compounds **é-**, **rebouillir**, **défaillir**, are exactly like **partir**, except in the singular of the pres. ind. and imv., where the l (ill) of the stem disappears (27 *d*); thus, **bous**, **-s**, **-t**, **bouillons**, **-ez**, **-ent**; **faux** (**x** is merely graphic; cf. 86, rem.), **-x**, **-t**, **faillons**, **-ez**, **-ent**. **Faillir** is now defective, being little used except in the infinitive, future, conditional, and compound tenses. **Défaillir** also is very defective. These verbs were variously conjugated in O.F., and in some forms coincided with **falloir** (no. 18 *c*).

4. Like **fuir** < **fugire** *flee* are conjugated its compounds **en-**, **refuir**. See also 118 *b* 3; cf. **bruire**, 27 *c*.

5. **Cueillir** < **collgire** (**colligĕre**) *gather* is irregular in having its present tenses together with the future and conditional made as if the infinitive were **cueiller** (cf. 111 *c*).

a. Like **cueillir** are conjugated its compounds **ac-**, **recueillir**.

b. **Assaillir** < **-salire** *assail* has a regular fut. and cond. **assaillirai**, **-ais**, but is otherwise precisely like **cueillir**. So also **tressaillir**. The simple **saillir** *gush forth* follows **finir**, but in the sense of *project, jut out* it has only the third per. sing. forms **saille**, **-ait**, **-it**, **-era**, **-erait**, **-e**, **-ît**.

6. Like **vêtir** < **vestire** *clothe* are its compounds **dé-**, **revêtir** (cf. 118 *a* 2) **Vêtir** is occasionally conjugated like **finir**.

7. **Courir** < **corrire** (113, rem. 2) *run* has a contract future (118 *b* 1) regularly derived from the infinitive **courre** < **corre** (**currere**). **Courre** is still used in the sense of *hunt*. Like **courir** are its compounds **ac-**, **con-**, **dis-**, **en-**, **par-**, **re-**, **secourir**.

8. **Ouvrir** < **oprire** (for **aprire**) *open* has its pres. ind. and imv. as if from an infin. in **-er** (cf. 111 *c*). Like **ouvrir** are all ending in **-vrir** or **-frir**, viz.:

a. Its compounds **rouvrir**, **entr'ouvrir**.

b. **Couvrir** < **coprire** (**cooperire**) *cover* and its compounds **dé-**, **recouvrir**.

c. **Offrir** and **souffrir** < **of-**, **soffrire** (113, rem. 2), *offer*, *suffer*.

9. **Mourir** < **morire** (109 *b*) *die* presents two peculiarities: (1) a con-

No.	infin.	pres. part.	past part.	pres. ind.	pret. ind.
10.	**tenir**	**tenant, -ons**	**tenu**	**tiens**	**tins**
	tiendrai	**-ais, tienne**	**avoir**	**-s**	**-sse**
11.	**acquérir**	**acquérant, -ons**	**acquis**	**acquiers**	**acquis**
	acquerrai	**-ais, -quière**	**avoir**	**-s**	**-sse**

tract future (118 *b* 1), and (2) a variable stem-vowel, due to the influence of accent (**eu—ou**, 117 *a* 1), in the present tenses; thus, pres. ind. **meurs, -s, -t, -ent**, but **mourons, -ez**; imv. **meurs**, but **mourons, -ez**; pres. subj. **meure, -es, -e, -ent**, but **mourions, -iez**.

a. Like **mourir** is its compound **remourir**.

10. **Tenir** < **tenire** (113, rem. 2) *hold* presents four peculiarities: (1) a contract future (118 *b* 1) with inorganic **d** (27 *c*); (2) a variable stem-vowel in the present tenses (**ie—e**, 117 *a* 2); (3) **n** doubled before **e** mute (cf. 41 *a* 1 and 112 *c*); (4) a preterit with nasal vowel. Thus the present tenses are, ind. **tiens, -s, -t, tiennent**, but **tenons, -ez**; imv. **tiens**, but **tenons, -ez**; subj. **tienne, -es, -e, -ent**, but **tenions, -iez**; and the pret. ind. **tins, -s, -t, tînmes, tîntes, tinrent**; the imp. subj. **tînsse, -sses, tînt, tinssions, -ssiez, -ssent**. Like **tenir** are conjugated:—

a. Its compounds **abs-, appar-, con-, dé-, entre-, main-, ob-, re-, soutenir.**

b. **Venir (être)** < **venire** *come* and its compounds **a-, ad-, circon-, con-, contre-, de-, discon-, inter-, par-, pré-, pro-, re-, rede-, ressou-, (se) sou-, sub-, survenir.** Most of the compounds like **venir** itself form their compound tenses with **être**.

11. **Acquérir** < **-querire** (113, rem. 2) *acquire* has three peculiarities: (1) a contract future (118 *b* 1); (2) a variable stem-vowel (**ie—e**, 117 *a* 2) in the present tenses; (3) **e** with varying accent-mark (41); thus, pres. ind. **acquiers, -s, -t, acquièrent**, but **acquérons, -ez**; imv. **acquiers**, but **acquérons, -ez**; pres. subj. **acquière, -es, -e, -ent**, but **acquérions, -iez**.

a. The simple verb **quérir** is only found in the pres. inf. The old form **querre** < **querre** (**quærĕre**) is still found in La Fontaine.

b. Like **acquérir** are the other compounds of **quérir, con-, s'en-, re-, reconquérir.**

12. Some very defective verbs are:—

a. **Férir** < **ferire** *strike*, used in the pres. inf. and rarely in the p. p. **féru.**

b. **Gésir** < **jacere** (21, foot-note 9) *lie*, of which a few forms are in use, viz. the pres. part. **gisant**, imp. **gisais**; also of the pres. ind., the third per. sg., **gît**, and all the pl., **gisons, -ez, -ent** (cf. 69 *a* 3).

c. **Issir** < **exire** *issue* has also a past part. **issu.**

d. **Ouïr** < **odire** *hear* has also a past part. **ouï** which makes the compound tenses. It had formerly a complete conjugation as follows:—

12.	**ouïr**	**oyant, -ons**	**ouï**	**ois**	**ouïs**
	orrai* or *oirai	**-ais, oie**	**avoir**	**-s**	**-sse**

C. WITH INFINITIVE IN -oir.

No.	infin.	pres. part.	past part.	pres. ind.	pret. ind.
13.	**recevoir**	**recevant, -ons,**	**reçu**	**reçois**	**reçus**
	recevrai	**-ais, reçoive**	**avoir**	**-s**	**-sse**
14.	**pleuvoir**	**pleuvant**	**plu**	**pleut**	**plut**
	pleuvra	**-ait, -e**	**avoir**	——	**plût**
15.	**mouvoir**	**mouvant, -ons.**	**mû**	**meus**	**mus**
	mouvrai	**-ais, meuve**	**avoir**	**-s**	**-sse**
16.	**pouvoir**	**pouvant, -ons**	**pu**	**peux** or **puis**	**pus**
	pourrai	**-ais, puisse**	**avoir**	——	**-sse**

13. **Recevoir** < **recepere** *receive* is often taken as the model of the third conjugation (110 *b*). Its conjugation presents several peculiarities: (1) a contract future like all verbs in **-oir** (cf. however 20 *b*, *c*); (2) a variable stem-vowel in the pres. **-çoi-**, **-çoiv-**, and **-cev-** (117 *a* 3). Thus the pres. ind. is **reçois, -s, -t, reçoivent,** but **recevons, -ez**; imv. **reçois,** but **recevons, -ez**; pres. subj. **reçoive, -es, -e, -ent,** but **recevions, -iez.**

a. Like **recevoir** are the other compounds of **-cevoir, apor-, con-, dé-, percevoir.**

b. Also **devoir** < **debere** *owe* with **redevoir,** except that the past part. has a circumflex accent in the mas. sg. owing to contraction:

devoir devant dû (but **due, dus, dues**) **dois dus**

14. **Pleuvoir** < F.L. **ploere** *rain* is of course impersonal. The **v** is inorganic (117 *d* 2).

15. **Mouvoir** < **movere** *move* has: (1) a contract future; (2) a variable stem-vowel in the pres. **meu-, meuv-,** and **mouv-** (117 *a* 1). Thus the pres. ind. is **meus, -s, -t, meuvent,** but **mouvons, -ez**; imv. **meus,** but **mouvons, -ez**; pres. subj. **meuve, -es, -e, -ent,** but **mouvions, -iez.** Only the mas. sg. of the part. has the accent, thus, **mû**; but **mue, mus, mues.**

a. Like **mouvoir** is its compound **émouvoir. Démouvoir** has no conjugation and **promouvoir** has beside the inf. only a past part. **promu** (so also **ému,** not **émû**).

16. **Pouvoir** < F.L. **potere** *be able* is anomalous; it has: (1) a contract and assimilated future; (2) a variable stem-vowel **peu-, peuv-,** and **pouv-** (117 *a* 1); (3) a stem **puis-** found in the 1st per. pres. ind., and in the pres. subj.; (4) **x** for **s** in the pres. ind. (cf. 86, rem.). The pres. ind. is **peux** or **puis, peux, -t, peuvent,** but **pouvons, -ez**; imv. wanting; pres. subj. **puisse, -es, -e, -ions, -iez, -ent.**

a. In a question with inverted order (cf. synt.) **puis** is used exclusively, i.e. **puis-je** not **peux-je.** Elsewhere either form may be used.

b. **Puissant,** a pres. part. from the stem **puis-,** is now used only as an adjective.

No.	infin.	pres. part.	past part.	pres. ind.	pret. ind.
17.	**savoir**	**sachant, savons**	**su**	**sais**	**sus**
	saurai	**savais, sache**	**avoir**	**sache**	**-sse**
18.	**valoir**	**valant, -ons**	**valu**	**vaux**	**valus**
	vaudrai	**-ais, vaille**	**avoir**	**-x**	**-sse**
19.	**vouloir**	**voulant, -ons**	**voulu**	**veux**	**voulus**
	voudrai	**-ais, veuille**	**avoir**	**-x**	**-sse**
20.	**voir**	**voyant, -ons**	**vu**	**vois**	**vis**
	verrai	**-ais, voie**	**avoir**	**-s**	**-sse**

17. **Savoir** < F.L. **sapere** *know* has many peculiarities, viz.: (1) a contract future **savrai** > **saurai** (cf. 107 *c* 1); (2) a triple form of the pres. stem, **sai-**, **sav-**, **sach-** (117 *b* 1; cf. 29 *a*); (3) the imv. following the subj. not the ind.; (4) an anomalous pres. part. Thus the pres. ind. is **sais**, **-s**, **-t** (cf. 47 *a* 2), **savons**, **-ez**, **-ent**; imv. **sache**, **-ons**, **-ez**; pres. subj. **sache**, **-es**, **-e**, **-ions**, **-iez**, **-ent**.

a. A regular pres. part. **savant** is now used only as an adjective, *wise*.

18. **Valoir** < **valere** *be strong* has: (1) a contract future with inorganic **d**; (2) a double pres. stem, **vau-** (117 *c* 2), **val-**, and **vaill-** (117 *b* 2); (3) **x** for **s** in pres. ind. (cf. 86, rem.). Thus: pres. ind. **vaux**, **-x**, **-t**, **valons**, **-ez**, **-ent**; imv. **vaux**, **valons**, **-ez**; pres. subj. **vaille**, **-es**, **-e**, **-ent**, but **valions**, **-iez**.

a. Like **valoir** are its compounds **équi-**, **pré-**, **revaloir**; but **prévaloir** has its pres. subj. **prévale**, etc.

b. The impersonal **chaloir** < **calere** *be important* is now scarcely used except in the pres. ind. **chaut**, e.g. **peu me chaut**. Voltaire. The pres. part. is preserved in the adjective **nonchalant**.

c. The impersonal **falloir** < F.L. **fallere** *be necessary* is conjugated as follows: **il faut**, **fallait**, **fallut**, **faudra**, **-ait**, **faille**, **fallût**; past part. **fallu**.

19. **Vouloir** < F.L. **volere** (108 *b* 1) *be willing* has: (1) a contract future with inorganic **d** (117 *d* 1); (2) a variable pres. stem, **veu-** (117 *c* 2), **veul-**, **voul-** (117 *a* 1), and **veuill-** (117 *b* 2); (3) **x** for **s** in the pres. ind. (cf. 86, rem.); (4) a double set of imv. forms with differing sense. Thus: pres. ind. **veux**, **-x**, **-t**, **veulent**, but **voulons**, **-ez**; imv. **veux**, **voulons**, **-ez** (rare), or **veuille**, **-ons**, **-ez**, *be so kind, please;* pres. subj. **veuille**, **-es**, **-e**, **-ent**, but **voulions**, **-iez**.

20. **Voir** < **vedere** *see* has: (1) a contract future; (2) a past part. in **-u** with pret. in **-is** (118 *a* 2). The pres. ind. is **vois**, **-s**, **-t**, **-ent**, **voyons**, **-ez**; imv. **vois**, **voyons**, **-ez**; pres. subj. **voie**, **-es**, **-e**, **-ent**, **voyions**, **-iez**.

a. Like **voir** are two of its compounds, **entre-**, **revoir**.

b. **Prévoir** has an uncontracted future and conditional, **prévoirai**, **-ais**, but otherwise follows **voir**.

No.	infin.	pres. part.	past part.	pres. ind.	pret. ind.
21.	**asseoir**	**asseyant**, **-ons**	**assis**	**assieds**	**assis**
	assiérai	**-ais**, **-e**	**avoir**	**-s**	**-sse**

D. WITH INFINITIVES IN **-re**.

23.	**rire**	**riant**	**ri**	**ris**	**ris**

---

c. **Pourvoir** with **dépourvoir** has its fut. and cond. in **-voirai**, **-ais**, and its preterit is **pourvus**, etc., but in other respects follows **voir**.

d. **Déchoir** < F.L. **decadere** *fall, decay* differs from **voir** only in the pret., thus:

déchoir, **-cherrai** **-choyons**, **-ais**, **-choie** **-chu** **-chois** **-chus**

The pres. part **déchoyant** is obsolete, but **déchéant** is used as gerund.

e. Of the simple **choir** only the inf. and past part. **chu** are used. Another compound **échoir** *fall in, fall due* is used in a few forms chiefly of the third per. sg. **il échoit** (rarely **échet**), **échut**, **écherra**, **-ait**, **échût**, and the pres. part. or gerund **échéant**, e.g. **le cas échéant.**

21. **Asseoir** < **assedere** *seat* is used mostly as a reflexive, **s'asseoir** *sit down;* it has: (1) an anomalous future **-siedr-** > **-siér-**; (2) a double pres. stem **-sey-** (45, rem.), **-sied-**; (3) **-t** lost in the third per. sg. pres. ind. after **d** (118 *b* 4). The pres. ind. is **assieds**, **-s**, **-**, **asseyons**, **-ez**, **-ent** (rarely **asseient**); imv. **assieds**, **asseyons**, **-ez**; pres. subj. **asseye**, **-es**, **-e**, **-ions**, **-iez**, **-ent** (rarely with **i** before **e** mute). The future is generally **assiérai**, more rarely **asseyerai**.

a. Another set of forms, made on the stem **-soi-**, is correct and common in colloquial use, as follows:—

asseoir, **assoirai** **assoyant**, **-ons**, etc. **assis** **assois** **assis**

b. Like **asseoir** is its compound **rasseoir**.

c. The simple **seoir** < **sedere** *sit* is hardly used except in the pres. part. **séant** and past part **sis**. In the sense of *be becoming*, used of clothes, etc., some third-personal forms are still current, viz. **sied**, **siéent**; **seyait**, **-aient**; **siéra**, **-ont**; **siée**, **-ent**. Corresponding forms of **messeoir** *fit badly, be unbecoming* are in use.

d. **Surseoir** *supersede* is defective, but in the forms that are in use follows the second conjugation of **asseoir** given in *a*, except that the future is **surseoirai**.

22. Of **souloir** < **solere** *be accustomed* an obsolescent imp. form, **soulait**, is still used.

23. **Rire** < **ridre** *laugh* is made with entire regularity from its principal parts; note the forms **riions** and **riiez** in the imp. ind. and pres. subj.

a. Like **rire** is its compound **sourire**.

No.	infin.	pres. part.	past part.	pres. ind.	pret. ind.
24.	**lire**	**lisant**	**lu**	**lis**	**lus**
25.	**écrire**	**écrivant**	**écrit**	**écris**	**écrivis**
26.	**dire**	**disant**	**dit**	**dis**	**dis**

---

b. So also **conclure** < **concludre** *conclude,* with **exclure,** another compound of **-clure,** as follows:—

conclure **concluant** **conclu** **conclus** **conclus**

Of **reclure** only the inf., and the past part. **reclus** are in use.

24. Like **lire** < **legre** *read* are its compounds **é-, pré-, re-, réélire.**

a. Precisely analogous is **taire** < **tacre** *keep silent,* as follows:—

taire **taisant** **tu** **tais** **tus**

b. So also **plaire** < **placre** *please* and its compounds **com-, déplaire,** excepting that the third per. sg. pres. ind. has the circumflex accent, viz. **il plaît**; cf. **il tait.**

25. Like **écrire** < **scribre** *write* are its compounds **dé-, ré-, trans-crire** and **circon-, in-, pré-, pro-, sou-scrire.**

a. Precisely analogous is **conduire** < **conducre** *conduct* with the other compounds of **-duire,** viz. **dé-, écon-, en-, in-, intro-, pro-, recon-, ré-, repro-, sé-, traduire,** thus:—

conduire **conduisant** **conduit** **conduis** **conduisis**

which differs from **écrire** only in the final consonant of the stem in the pres. and pret. systems. The simple verb **duire** is hardly used except in the pres. ind. third per. sg. **il duit.**

b. So also **instruire** (**instruĕre**) *instruct* and the other compounds of the same stem, viz. **con-, décon-, reconstruire, détruire.**

c. And **cuire** < **cocre** *cook* with its compound **recuire.**

d. Also, **nuire** < **nocre** *harm,* except that the past part. is **nui,** without t.

e. Also, **luire** < **lucre** *shine,* with **reluire,** except that the past part. is **lui,** and that the pret. ind. and imp. subj. are wanting.

26. **Dire** < **dicre** *say* has an anomalous form in the second per. pl. pres. ind. and imv., viz. **dites** (118 *c* 3), but is otherwise regularly developed from its principal parts. The pres. ind. is **dis, -s, -t, disons, dites, disent.** This peculiarity is shared with **redire,** but all the others that follow its conjugation have the regular ending **-ez,** e.g. **prédisez, suffisez,** etc. In other respects like **dire** are:—

a. Its compounds **contre , dé-, inter-, mé-, prédire.**

b. So also **confire** < **conficre** *preserve* with the defective **déconfire.**

c. ***Frire*** < ***frigre*** *fry* with its compound **refrire** lacks a **pres. part.**

No.	infin.	pres. part.	past part.	pres. ind.	pret. ind.
27.	**faire**	**faisant, -ons**	**fait**	**fais**	**fis**
	ferai	**-ais, fasse**	**avoir**	**-s**	**-sse**
28.	**traire**	**trayant**	**trait**	**trais**	——
29.	**boire**	**buvant, boive**	**bu**	**bois**	**bus**
30.	**croire**	**croyant**	**cru**	**crois**	**crus**
31.	**croître**	**croissant**	**crû**	**croîs**	**crûs**

and pret. ind. together with all the forms derived from them, but is otherwise like **dire**.

d. So also **suffire** < **sufficre** *suffice* and **circoncire** < **circomcidre** *circumcise,* except that the past parts. are **suffi** and **circoncis** respectively.

e. **Maudire** < **maldicre** *curse* follows **dire**, except that the pres. part. and its derivatives have **ss**, thus: **maudissant, -ons, -ais, -e.**

27. **Faire** < **facre** *do* is peculiar: (1) in the fut.; (2) in the pres. ind. second and third per. pl. (118 *c* 3 and 4); (3) in the pres. subj. Thus pres. ind. **fais, -s, -t, faisons, faites, font**; imv. **fais, faisons, faites**; pres. subj. **fasse, -es, -e, -ions, -iez, -ent.**

a. Like **faire** are its compounds **contre-, dé-, re-, redé-, satis-, surfaire,** and the defectives **for-, mal-, mé-, parfaire,** used chiefly in the inf. and past part.

28. **Traire** < **tragre** (**trahere**) *milk* has no pret. ind. or imp. subj. Like it are:—

a. Its compounds **abs-, at-, dis-, ex-, ren-, re-, soustraire.**

b. The defective **braire** *bray,* of which only some forms of the third person are in use, viz. pres. **brait, -ent**; fut. **braira, -ont**; cond. **brairait, -aient.**

c. Entirely analogous is the defective **bruire** *roar,* of which the following forms are in use, viz. **bruyant** (used only as adj.), **-ait, -aient,** and the third per. sg. pres. ind. **il bruit.** The imp. forms **bruissait, -aient** are also found.

29. **Boire** < **bebre** (**bibere**) *drink* has a variable stem in the pres., **boi-, boiv-,** and **buv-,** but is otherwise regular. Thus pres. ind. **bois, -s, -t, boivent,** but **buvons, -ez**; imv. **bois, buvons, -ez**; pres. subj. **boive, -es, -e, -ent,** but **buvions, -iez.**

a. Like **boire** are its compounds **em-, im-, reboire.**

30. **Croire** < **credre** *believe, think,* exhibits the usual fluctuation between **i** and **y** in the stem. Its compounds **ac-, mécroire** are found only in the inf., and **décroire** chiefly in the first per. sg. pres. ind. in antithesis to **croire.**

31. **Croître** < **crescre** (27 *c*, 36 *a* 3) *grow* in many of its forms coincides in spelling (cf. 49 *b* 1) with **croire,** except for the circumflex

No.	infin.	pres. part.	past part.	pres. ind.	pret. ind.
32.	**paraître**	**paraissant**	**paru**	**parais**	**parus**
33.	**naître**	**naissant**	**né (être)**	**nais**	**naquis**
34.	**mettre**	**mettant**	**mis**	**mets**	**mis**
35.	**vendre**	**vendant**	**vendu**	**vends**	**vendis**

accent. This accent is commonly omitted in the imp. subj. **crusse** and in the past part. fem. or pl., thus: **crue, crus, crues.**

a. Like **croître** are its compounds **ac-, dé-, re-, surcroître.**

32. **Paraître** < **parescre** (27 *c*, 36 *a* 3) *appear* is only peculiar in having a circumflex accent in the pres. ind. third per. sg. **il paraît.**

a. Like **paraître** are its compounds **ap-, com-, dis-, reparaître.** Old infinitive forms **apparoir, comparoir** < **-parere** are still in use as law terms together with the impersonal third per. sg. pres. ind. **il appert** *it appears.*

b. **Connaître** < **connoistre** < **cognoscre** (27 *c*, 36 *a* 3, 18 *a*) *know,* with its compounds **mé-, pré-, reconnaître.**

c. **Paître** < **pascre** (27 *c*, 36 *a* 3) *graze,* which lacks a preterit ind. and imp. subj., and its compound **repaître.**

33. Of **naître** < **nascre** (**nasci**) *be born* the principal parts have many peculiarities, but the other parts are all regularly derived except that like **paraître** the third per. sg. pres. ind. has a circumflex accent. **il naît.**

a. Like **naître** is its compound **renaître.**

34. Like **mettre** < **mettre** *place* (118 *b* 4) are its compounds **ad-, com-, compro-, dé-, é-, s'entre-, o-, per-, pro-, re-, repro-, sou-, transmettre.**

35. **Vendre** < **vendre** *sell* is commonly taken as the model of the fourth conjugation (110 *b*), and its conjugation is developed with entire regularity from the principal parts. Observe **vendu : vendis** (118 *a* 2). The third per. sg. pres. ind. is **il vend** (118 *b* 4). Like **vendre** are its compound **revendre,** and

a. All verbs ending in **-ndre** (excepting under nos. 36 and 37 below) and in **-rdre,** as follows: **défendre, descendre, épandre, fendre, fondre, mordre, pendre, perdre, pondre, rendre, répondre, retondre, tendre, tondre, tordre,** and their compounds, with the defective **semondre** and **sourdre.**

b. **Battre** < **battre** *beat,* with its compounds **a-, com-, dé-, s'é-, ra-, re-, redébattre.** The stem has only one **t** in sing. of the pres. ind. and imv., thus: **bats, bats, bat** (118 *b* 4).

c. **Rompre** < **rompre** *break,* with **corrompre.** These do not lose the *t of the third per.* sg. pres. ind. Thus **romps, -s, -t,** etc.

No	infin.	pres. part.	past part.	pres. ind.	pret. ind.
36.	**prendre**	**prenant, prenne**	**pris**	**prends**	**pris**
37.	**plaindre**	**plaignant**	**plaint**	**plains**	**plaignis**
38.	**moudre**	**moulant**	**moulu**	**mouds**	**moulus**
39.	**coudre**	**cousant**	**cousu**	**couds**	**cousis**
40.	**résoudre**	**résolvant**	**résolu**	**résous**	**résolus**

d. **Vaincre** < **vencre** *conquer*, with **convaincre**. These are peculiar in substituting **qu** for **c** before all vowels except **u** (68 *a* 1). Thus:

vaincre **vainquant** **vaincu** **vaincs** **vainquis**

The pres. ind. is **vaincs**, **-s**, **-** (cf. 118 *b* 4), **vainquons**, **-ez**, **-ent**.

36. **Prendre** < **prendre** *take* has the shortened stem **pren** (**prenn** before **e** mute, 41 *a* 1) in the pres. part. and its derivatives. The pres. ind. is **prends**, **-s**, **-** (118 *b* 4), **prenons**, **-ez**, **prennent**; pres. subj. **prenne**, **-es**, **-e**, **-ent**, but **prenions**, **-iez**.

a. Like **prendre** are its compounds **ap-**, **com-**, **dé-**, **désap-**, **é-**, **entre-**, **mé-**, **rap-**, **re-**, **surprendre**.

37. **Plaindre** < **plangre** *pity* has a double stem **plain** before consonants, **plaign** before vowels (117 *c* 1). The pres. ind. is **plains**, **-s**, **-t**, **plaignons**, **-ez**, **-ent**; pres. subj. **plaigne**, **-es**, **-e**, **-ions**, **-iez**, **-ent**. Like **plaindre** are:—

a. All in **-aindre**, viz. **craindre**, **contraindre**.

b. All in **-eindre** < **-engre**, viz. **atteindre**, **ceindre**, **empreindre**, **enfreindre**, **épreindre**, **éteindre**, **étreindre** (with others derived from compounds of **strengre**), **feindre**, **geindre**, **peindre**, **teindre**, and their compounds. Thus from **peindre**:

peindre **peignant** **peint** **peins** **peignis**

c. All in **-oindre** < **-ongre**, viz. **joindre** (with its compounds **ad-**, **con-**, **dé-**, **dis-**, **en-**, **rejoindre**), **oindre**, **poindre**. Thus:

joindre **joignant** **joint** **joins** **joignis**

38. **Moudre** < **molre** (27 *c*, *d*) *grind* is regularly developed from its principal parts. Hence pres. ind. **mouds**, **-s**, **-** (118 *b* 4), **moulons**, **-ez**, **-ent**.

a. Like **moudre** are its compounds **é-**, **remoudre**.

39. **Coudre** < **cosre** (27 *c*) (**consuĕre**) *sew* is regularly made, but observe **cousu** : **cousis** (118 *a* 2).

a. Like **coudre** are its compounds **dé-**, **recoudre**.

40. **Résoudre** < **resolvre** (27 *c*, *d*) *resolve* presents no difficulty. Thus the pres. ind. is **résous**, **-s**, **-t**, **résolvons**, **-ez**, **-ent**; pres. subj. **resolve**, etc. A past part. **résous** for **résolu** is sometimes found in the sense of *dissolved*.

No.	infin.	pres. part.	past part.	pres. ind.	pret. ind.
41.	**suivre**	**suivant**	**suivi**	**suis**	**suivis**
42.	**vivre**	**vivant**	**vécu**	**vis**	**vécus**

a. The simple verb **soudre** only occurs in the infinitive.

b. Other compounds **absoudre, dissoudre** follow **résoudre**, but lack the pret. ind. and imp. subj., and their past parts. are **ab-, dissous** (90 *f*).

41. Like **suivre** < **sequere (sequi)** *follow* are its compounds **en-, poursuivre.**

42. Like **vivre** < **vivre** *live* are its compounds **re-, survivre.**

43. Some very defective verbs are:—

a. **Clore** < **clodre** (cf. no. 23 *b*) *close* has in use the fut. and cond. **clorai, -ais,** the past part. **clos,** the pres. ind. sg. **clos, -s, clôt,** and the pres. subj. **close,** etc. Its compound **éclore** has some third-personal forms in use, viz. pres. ind. **éclôt, éclosent**; pres. subj. **éclose**; fut. and cond. **éclôra, -ait,** besides the past part. **éclos.** The other compounds **dé-, en-, forclore** are still more defective.

b. The old infinitive **tistre** < **texre** *weave* has in use a past part. **tissu.**

FORMATION OF ADVERBS.

120. The adverbial suffix is **-ment** < **mente,** from **mens** used as ablative of accompaniment, e.g. **prudente mente** > **prudemment** = **prudenter, viva mente** > **vivement,** etc. From this beginning it gradually became a mere suffix and was applied to any adjective. Hence the suffix **-ment** is properly applied to the feminine form of the adjective.

a. This is the rule when the masculine ends in a consonant, e.g. **plein, pleinement; seul, seulement; vif, vivement,** etc., etc.

1. This includes **beau, bel; nouveau, nouvel; mou, mol; fou, fol** (90 *d*), which make **bellement,** etc.

2. Adjectives ending in **nt,** being in O.F. as in Lat. of one termination, add **-ment** to the masculine form, and assimilate to **mment,** e.g. **constant, constamment; courant, *couramment;* diligent, diligemment,** etc.

α. **Présentement** and **véhémentement** are exceptions of artificial formation.

β. But **lentement** is correctly formed from **lent, lente** < **lentu, lenta**.

b. But when the masculine form ends in a vowel the feminine **e** has been dropped before the addition of the suffix, e.g. **vrai, vraiment; poli, poliment; résolu, résolument**, etc.

1. In O.F. the correct forms are still in some cases preserved, as in **veraiement** > **vraiment**.

c. In a few cases the vowel before the suffix receives an accent.

1. **E** becomes **é**: under *a*. **communément, confusément, diffusément, expressément, importunément, obscurément, précisément, profondément**: under *b*. **aveuglément, commodément, incommodément, conformément, énormément, immensément, opiniâtrément, uniformément.**

2. **U** becomes **û**, after the fall of the **e** of the feminine, in **assidûment, continûment, crûment, goulûment, nûment** (also written **nuement**).

3. **Gai** makes either **gaîment** or **gaiement**.

d. More anomalous are **gentil** (cf. 67 *b* 1 *β*), **gentiment; impuni, impunément.**

121. Many adjectives are used adverbially without change of form, e.g. **bas, cher, clair, droit, faux, fort, haut, juste, tout**, etc., etc.

a. Many more in isolated phrases, as **refuser bel et bon, sentir mauvais**, etc.

b. Almost all admit also the suffix **-ment**, often with a different sense. For details see lexicon.

INDEX OF IRREGULAR VERBS, SIMPLE AND COMPOUND.

[The figures refer to the number in § 119, except in the case of those few which have been mentioned before. With them the paragraph number is cited.]

abattre	35	**comparaître**	32	**déconstruire**	25
absoudre	40	**comparoir**	32	**découdre**	39
abstenir	10	**complaire**	24	**découvrir**	8
abstraire	28	**comprendre**	36	**décrire**	25
accourir	7	**compromettre**	34	**décroître**	30
accroire	30	**concevoir**	13	**décroître**	31
accroître	31	**conclure**	23	**décuire**	25
accueillir	5	**concourir**	7	**dédire**	26
acquérir	11	**condescendre**	35	**déduire**	25
adjoindre	37	**conduire**	25	**défaillir**	3
admettre	34	**confire**	26	**défaire**	27
advenir	10	**confondre**	35	**défendre**	35
aller	1	**conjoindre**	37	**déjoindre**	37
apercevoir	13	**connaître**	32	**démentir**	3
apparaître	32	**conquérir**	11	**démettre**	34
apparoir	32	**consentir**	3	**démordre**	35
appartenir	10	**construire**	25	**démouvoir**	15
appendre	35	**contenir**	10	**départir**	3
apprendre	36	**contraindre**	37	**dépeindre**	37
assaillir	5	**contredire**	26	**dépendre**	35
asseoir	21	**contrefaire**	27	**déplaire**	24
astreindre	37	**contrevenir**	10	**dépourvoir**	20
atteindre	37	**convaincre**	35	**déprendre**	36
attendre	35	**convenir**	10	**désapprendre**	36
attraire	28	**correspondre**	35	**descendre**	35
avenir	10	**corrompre**	35	**desservir**	3
avoir	§ 107	**coudre**	39	**déteindre**	37
battre	35	**courir**	7	**détendre**	35
bénir	§ 114	**courre**	7	**détenir**	10
boire	29	**couvrir**	8	**détordre**	35
bouillir	3	**craindre**	37	**détruire**	25
braire	28	**croire**	30	**devenir**	10
bruire	28	**croître**	31	**dévêtir**	6
ceindre	37	**cueillir**	5	**devoir**	13
chaloir	18	**cuire**	25	**dire**	26
choir	20	**débattre**	35	**disconvenir**	10
circoncire	26	**débouillir**	3	**discourir**	7
circonscrire	25	**déceindre**	37	**disjoindre**	37
circonvenir	10	**décevoir**	13	**disparaître**	32
clore	43	**déchoir**	20	**dissoudre**	40
combattre	35	**déclore**	43	**distendre**	35
commettre	34	**déconfire**	26	**distraire**	28

dormir	3	fuir	4	plaire	24
duire	25	gésir	12	pleuvoir	14
ébattre	35	geindre	37	poindre	37
ébouillir	3	haïr	§ 114	pondre	35
échoir	20	imboire	29	poursuivre	41
éclore	43	induire	25	pourvoir	20
éconduire	25	inscrire	25	pouvoir	16
écrire	25	instruire	25	préconnaître	32
élire	24	interdire	26	prédire	26
emboire	29	interrompre	35	prélire	24
émettre	34	intervenir	10	prendre	36
émoudre	38	introduire	25	prescrire	25
émouvoir	15	issir	12	pressentir	3
empreindre	37	joindre	37	prétendre	35
enceindre	37	lire	24	prévaloir	18
enclore	43	luire	25	prévenir	10
encourir	7	maintenir	10	prévoir	20
endormir	3	malfaire	27	produire	25
enduire	25	maudire	26	promettre	34
enfreindre	37	méconnaître	32	promouvoir	15
enfuir	4	mécroire	30	proscrire	25
enjoindre	37	médire	26	provenir	10
enquérir	11	méfaire	27	quérir	11
enquerre	11	mentir	3	querre	11
ensuivre	41	méprendre	36	rabattre	35
entendre	35	mésoffrir	8	rapprendre	36
entremettre	34	messeoir	21	rasseoir	21
entreprendre	36	mettre	34	ratteindre	37
entretenir	10	mordre	35	ravoir	§ 107
entrevoir	20	morfondre	35	rebattre	35
entr'ouvrir	8	moudre	38	reboire	29
envoyer	2	mourir	9	rebouillir	3
épandre	35	mouvoir	15	recevoir	13
épreindre	37	naître	33	reclure	23
éprendre	36	nuire	25	reconduire	25
équivaloir	18	obtenir	10	reconnaître	32
éteindre	37	offrir	8	reconquérir	11
étendre	35	oindre	37	reconstruire	25
être	§ 108	omettre	34	recoudre	39
étreindre	37	ouïr	12	recourir	7
exclure	23	ouvrir	8	recouvrir	8
extraire	28	paître	32	récrire	25
faillir	3	paraître	32	recroître	31
faire	27	parcourir	7	recueillir	5
falloir	18	parfaire	27	recuire	25
feindre	37	partir	3	redébattre	35
fendre	35	parvenir	10	redéfaire	27
férir	12	peindre	37	redescendre	35
fleurir	§ 114	pendre	35	redevenir	10
fondre	35	percevoir	13	redevoir	13
forclore	43	perdre	35	redire	26
forfaire	27	permettre	34	redormir	3
frire	26	plaindre	37	reduire	25

réélire	24	ressouvenir	10	souscrire	25
refaire	27	restreindre	37	soustraire	28
refendre	35	reteindre	37	soutenir	10
refondre	35	retendre	35	souvenir	10
refrire	26	retenir	10	subvenir	10
refuir	4	retondre	35	suivre	41
rejoindre	37	retordre	35	suffire	26
relire	24	retraire	28	surcroître	31
reluire	25	revaloir	18	surfaire	27
remettre	34	revendre	35	surprendre	36
remordre	35	revenir	10	surseoir	21
remoudre	38	revêtir	6	survenir	10
rémoudre	38	revivre	42	survivre	42
remourir	9	revoir	20	suspendre	35
renaître	33	revouloir	19	taire	24
rendormir	3	rire	23	teindre	37
rendre	35	rompre	35	tendre	35
rentraire	28	rouvrir	8	tenir	10
renvoyer	2	saillir	5	tistre	43
repaître	32	satisfaire	27	tondre	35
répandre	35	savoir	17	tordre	35
reparaître	32	secourir	7	traduire	25
repartir	3	séduire	25	traire	28
repeindre	37	semondre	35	transcrire	25
repentir	3	sentir	3	transmettre	34
reperdre	35	seoir	21	tressaillir	5
répondre	35	servir	3	vaincre	35
reprendre	36	sortir	3	valoir	18
reproduire	25	soudre	40	vendre	35
repromettre	34	souffrir	8	venir	10
requérir	11	souloir	22	vêtir	6
résoudre	40	soumettre	34	vivre	42
ressentir	3	sourdre	35	voir	20
ressortir	3	sourire	23	vouloir	19

PART III.

SYNTAX.

122. Syntax treats of the sentence and the relation of its parts:—

a. **General Syntax** is concerned with the nature and structure of the sentence.

b. **Special Syntax** with the use of individual words as its component parts.

REMARK.—This distinction is not absolute, but is employed here for the sake of convenience and clearness.

GENERAL SYNTAX.

123. A *sentence* may take the form of a statement, a question, an exclamation, or a command, giving rise to the following classification:—

a. The *declarative sentence;* e.g. **vous êtes bon et sage.**

b. The *interrogative sentence;* e.g. **êtes-vous bon et sage?**

c. The *exclamatory sentence;* e.g. **que vous êtes bon et sage!**

d. The *imperative sentence;* e.g. **soyez bon et sage.**

124. In the *declarative sentence* something is affirmed (affirmative) or denied (negative) of the subject. **Une**

grenouille vit un bœuf. L. F. **Cet édifice n'est pas un type.** V. H.

a. The negative of the complete sentence consists of two parts, the real negative **ne** belonging to the verb, and a negative complement, as **pas, point,** etc. (266). **Avec mes amis je ne fais point cérémonie.** L. F. **Vous n'êtes pas gentilhomme, vous n'aurez pas ma fille.** Mol.

125. *Interrogative sentences* often have the inverted order of subject and verb. They may be divided according to the answer anticipated into—

a. Those answerable by *yes* or *no*, where the interrogative affects the predicate (sometimes called *predicate questions*). **La peur se corrige-t-elle?** L. F. **Avez-vous un homme sûr pour porter cette lettre?** About.

b. Those introduced by an interrogative pronoun or adverb and requiring a correlative reply (sometimes called *nominal questions*). **Quel est donc le vrai Dieu? Qui me l'enseignera?** G. S.

126. Questions of the first class place the verb before the pronoun-subject (**je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, elles, on, ce,** and sometimes **cela**), but when the subject is a noun or an emphatic pronoun it is placed first and the question is asked about it by means of the appropriate pronoun. **Me refuserez-vous un regard moins sévère?** Rac. **La place n'est elle pas à tout le monde.** Mérimée.

a. A sentence in form declarative may be used interrogatively as in English. **Vous ne courez donc pas où vous voulez?** L. F.

b. The phrase **n'est-ce pas?** *is it not (so)?* is very frequently placed after a statement to give it an interrogative turn (186 *b* 1 *γ*).

c. It is very common to introduce an interrogative sentence by **est-ce que?** *is it (true) that?* This may give

a tone of surprise or serve to emphasize a particular part of the predicate. **Est-ce que ma fille ne vaut pas qu'on l'épouse?** About. **Est-ce donc pour veiller qu'on se couche à Paris?** Boileau. In some cases however it is required, particularly when the verb is in the first person singular:—

1. To avoid the recurrence of the ž-sound in successive syllables, thus: **est-ce que je mange?** not **mangé-je?**

2. With monosyllabic verb-forms, thus: **est-ce que je cours?** not **cours-je?**; but simple inversion is allowable with **ai, suis, vais, puis, sais, vois, dois, dis,** and a few others.

REMARK.—Grammatically we have in this idiom a substantive **que**-clause as subject of the impersonal **est-ce** (186 *b*), but owing to the frequency of its use **est-ce que** is felt almost as a single interrogative word.

127. Questions of the second class place any subject after its verb except when the interrogative itself is the subject. **D'où vient cela?** G. S. **Où suis-je? Qu'ai-je fait? Que dois-je faire encore? Quel transport me saisit? Quel chagrin me dévore?** Rac.

a. But inversion by means of a redundant pronoun-subject is allowable and by no means rare. **Et le roi, de quel œil voit-il tant de vaillance?** Corn. **Et comment cela leur vient-il?** G. S. **Pourquoi mon cœur bat-il si vite?** de Musset.

128. The *exclamatory sentence* has no independent form peculiar to itself. Any sentence uttered in a tone of surprise, etc., may become exclamatory. **Le ciel vous doit un roi, vous aimez un sujet!** Corn. **Comme son regard restait bon et honnête!** Loti.

a. Ellipsis, particularly of the copula, or of the copula and the subject, is very frequent. **Mon frère égorgé, noyé!** Dumas. **Quelle heureuse idée!** Delavigne.

129. *Imperative sentences* express a command or wish; for examples see 238.

a. The imperative proper has no subject expressed.

b. Akin to the true imperative is the optative subjunctive (233 *b*).

STRUCTURE OF THE SENTENCE.

130. In structure a sentence may be—

a. Simple, containing the essential parts (subject and predicate) but once.

b. Compound, containing one or both of the essential parts more than once.

THE SIMPLE SENTENCE.

SUBJECT.

131. The subject is the person or thing of which the predicate is said. It may be—

a. A substantive or other part of speech used substantively. **La rumeur approche, L'écho la redit.** V. H. **À Paris le riche sait tout.** Rousseau. **Les quand, les qui, les quoi pleuvent de tous côtés.** Vol.

b. A pronoun. **C'est moi qui l'ai fait ruer. Ça m'amuse; je le lui ai appris.** Grév.

c. An infinitive. **Parler est imprudent, et se taire est bien lâche.** Ponsard.

d. A clause; for examples see 234 *et passim.*

REDUNDANT PRONOUN-SUBJECT.

132. The logical subject is frequently repeated by a grammatical subject.

a. In a sentence with inverted order (126, 149).

b. With the verb **être** and a predicate adjective (less commonly with a substantive, cf. *c*) the logical subject often follows and the impersonal **il** as grammatical subject heads the sentence. **Il est beau de périr pour sauver l'innocence.** Vol. **Il n'est pas toujours bon d'avoir un bel emploi.** L. F. **Il est rare qu'une femme très jeune ne regarde *pas comme* un enfant un homme de son âge.** G. S.

1. Also less commonly with other intransitive and reflexive verbs, as **venir, sortir, s'élever,** etc. **Il existe un monde de mensonge.** G. S. **A l'approche d'une tempête, il passe dans les forêts un vent terrible.** de Musset. **Il s'éleva dans l'église des acclamations . . . bruyantes.** Thierry.

2. This is the regular rule with impersonal verbs that have an infinitive or substantive clause as logical subject (234 *a*). **Il faut tâcher de réparer cette étourderie.** Grév. **Il ne convient pas qu'elle en parle.** Ste-Bve.

c. The demonstrative **ce** is similarly used before predicate nouns, but is not so common. **C'est faiblesse de craindre la philosophie des païens.** Chat. **C'est dommage que ce garçon soit mort.** Sandeau. Cf. **Il est dommage que vous soyez si laids.** A. France. After the predicate noun the logical subject, if a substantive, is usually introduced by a correlative **que,** giving it the form of an elliptical dependent clause. **Ce sont des douceurs exquises que des louanges éclairées.** Mol.

1. This **que** is often retained in elliptical sentences, to couple the predicate with the logical subject. **Bizarre destinée que la mienne!** G. S. **Quelle femme que ta sœur!** Grév.

2. So in interrogative periphrases (198). **Qu'est-ce que c'est que ça? Je ne savais pas ce que c'est que le chant.** G. S.

d. For distinctness or emphasis.

1. A subject, particularly a long one, may be followed by a redundant **ce,** with **être** (186 *b*). **La meilleure façon de louer, c'est de louer avec les mains.** Mol. **La gloire de l'Anglais, c'est sa patrie; celle du Français, c'est le monde.** Lamart.

2. The conjunctive personal pronouns may be thus used with any verb to repeat a substantive or an emphatic pronoun. **Il mourait de peur, le pauvre innocent.** Daudet. **Vous, le concierge, vous devez connaître ces gens là.** Id. **Toi aussi, tu es si sage.** Grév.

3. A compound subject of different persons is commonly summed up by a personal pronoun of the appropriate person and number. **Ta cousine Dosia et toi, vous vous êtes séparés sur le pied de guerre.** Grév.

654831

OMISSION OF THE PRONOUN-SUBJECT.

133. In Old French the pronoun-subject is freely omitted as in Latin, the endings of the verb expressing the distinctions of person. Some remnants of this usage remain.

a. In a few colloquial phrases. **Fais ce que dois, advienne que pourra.** Acad. **Si ne l'ai plus, dit-il, qui m'aimera?** Lebrun. **Du diable vint, au diable retourna.** Prov. **Sauve qui peut.** Prov. **Non ferai, de par tous les diables.** Mol.

b. Much more commonly the impersonal **il** is omitted. **Peu importe. Qu'importe? Je m'en irai, messieurs, quand bon me semblera.** Courier.

1. Very frequently when it is merely the grammatical subject of the impersonal verb. **À quoi nous sert de nous être battus?** Ponsard. **Mieux vaudrait que le soleil perdît ses rayons.** Chat. **De là vient que; à Dieu ne plaise; reste à savoir; tant y a; tant s'en faut,** etc.

REMARK.—With the imperative the subject is regularly unexpressed.

THE PREDICATE.

134. The predicate is that which is said of the subject.

a. The simplest form of the predicate is a finite verb with meaning complete in itself. **Les chevaux courent. L'homme mourra.**

b. But the predicate may also be a substantive or adjective connected with the subject by the copula. **Les chevaux sont des animaux. L'homme est mortel. La vie est courte.**

1. Other words used substantively or adjectively may have predicative use. Such are pronouns, participles, infinitives, and even a few adverbs (261 *a* 2). **C'est moi. C'est le mien. Le signal fut donné.** Grév. **Sa taille était souple et déliée.** Bal. **Formuler des idées générales, c'est changer le salpêtre en poudre.** de Musset. **Nous sommes tous de trop ici.** de V.

2. The ordinary copula is **être**; less commonly other verbs are used in a similar way. Such are **sembler, paraître, rester, demeurer, naître, mourir, devenir,** etc.; reflexives such as **s'appeler, se nommer,** *etc.; and passives* like **être choisi, élu, déclaré, créé** (cf. **161** *f*).

Vous paraissez souffrants. Grév. **Madame Magloire resta interdite.** V. H. **Il se sentit soudain léger comme une plume.** Grév.

3. All these including **être** may be used as complete predicate. **Je pense donc je suis.** Descartes.

4. In the compound tenses made with **être** (109 *b*), **être** is in fact merely the copula, and the participle in function is the real predicate. **Elle est arrivée. Ils sont venus.**

THE SIMPLE SENTENCE EXPANDED.

135. The simple sentence is expanded by the multiplication or by the modification of its parts.

136. *a.* The subject may consist of two or more substantives with a single verb. The parts of such a multiplied subject may or may not be connected by conjunctions. **La rage et l'impiété étaient peintes sur son visage.** Fén. **Ses fils et sa fille et la jeune duchesse l'entourèrent.** de V. **Le général, l'armée, le président, les députés, crient "je le jure."** Thiers.

b. The predicate may consist of—

1. Two or more verbs. **La grande noblesse quittera et perdra ses terres et . . . cessera d'être une puissance.** de V. **Le public, les femmes surtout, lisaient, étaient émues, pleuraient.** Ste-Bve. In this case the sentence is best regarded as compound and abbreviated (cf. 141 *ff.*).

2. Two or more predicate substantives or adjectives. **Le roi est brave et bon.** de V. **Ce nain hideux était gros, court, ventru.** V. H. Here the sentence is properly regarded as simple with compound predicate.

137. *a.* The subject is modified when accompanied by one or more of its attributes. These are:—

1. The adjective and its equivalents (including the article, the pronominal adjective, the numeral, the participle, the relative clause, and the prepositional phrase). **La voix douce se troubla.** de V. **L'oiseau qui ne peut se défendre a des ailes pour se sauver.** G. S.

2. The substantive (or its equivalent) in apposition.

Onze personnes, hommes et femmes, se placèrent à table. de V.

REMARK.—1. Any substantive whatever its function in the sentence may be similarly multiplied and modified. **Ses camarades excusaient ses habitudes froides, réservées et taciturnes.** V. H.

2. Adjectives are themselves modified by adverbs and prepositional phrases. **Le choix était singulièrement heureux.**

b. The predicate is modified by receiving one or more of its attributes. These are:—

1. The *direct object* (accusative with transitive verbs). It must be a substantive, or some other word or clause used substantively. **Mentor faisait le vaisseau.** Fén. **Il garda le silence.** Grév. **Mon oncle l'aimait.** V. H. **Je résolus de diner.** de Maistre. **Vous savez bien, madame, que je suis républicaine.** Lesueur. (144.)

α. For emphasis or clearness a redundant pronoun-object is frequently introduced. **Ce que femme veut, Dieu le veut.** Prov. Cf. 132 *d.*

β. For a second object after certain verbs, see 161 *f.*

2. The *adverb* and its equivalents, i.e. the adverbial clause (cf. 145) and substantives in adverbial relation to the verb (161 *h*). **Le silence continuait toujours.** de Musset. **Ils marchaient lentement.** de Maistre.

3. The *prepositional phrase* and its equivalents, i.e. the dative case-forms of the personal pronouns (97 *c*) with the adverbial pronouns **en, y** (97 *b*), **dont, où** (100 *c*). **À sept heures du matin, le roi se mit en marche.** About. **Elle répondit à tous sans s'épouvanter.** Barante.

REMARK.—The prepositional phrase is sometimes an indirect object and sometimes an adverbial modifier.

4. The *complementary infinitive,* which both with and without a preposition (243) performs various functions:—

α. Direct object. **Je sais aimer, souffrir et chanter.** V. H. **Je résolus de dîner.** de Maistre. **Une voix . . . avait commencé à chanter.** V. H.

β. Prepositional phrase. **Son trouble l'avait empêchée de comprendre.** V. H. **Tu te fatiguais à jouer de tout.** G. S. **Ils vivent tous ensemble sans partager les terres.** Fén. **Les petits étaient montés sur le pont pour jouer.** Daudet.

γ. As complement of the leading verb-notion. **Ce ne pouvait être un esclave.** V. H. **Les conseillers se laissaient persuader.** Barante.

138. From the foregoing principles of sentence-structure are deduced the following concords:—

a. The agreement of the predicate with the subject.

b. The agreement of the attribute with its substantive.

c. The agreement of the pronoun with its antecedent.

REMARK.—Agreement depends on inflection; hence when the predicate consists of an adjective or a substantive the rules under *a* coincide with those under *b*. **Le bon homme; la bonne femme; l'homme est bon; la femme est bonne; Bernhardt la grande actrice; Coquelin le grand acteur; Bernhardt est une grande actrice; Coquelin est un grand acteur.**

AGREEMENT OF SUBJECT AND VERB.

139. A verb agrees with its subject in person and number. **Je me revois enfant.** V. H. **Tous deux sortirent.** Dumas. **Nous sommes gardés nuit et jour, y avez-vous pensé?** About.

a. The singular **vive** (233 *b*) is sometimes used with a plural subject following. It has almost lost its consciousness of function. **Vive les gens pleins d'imagination!** Regnard.

b. When the impersonal **il** introduces inversion (149) the verb agrees with it and not with the proper subject. **Il vint des ducs, des princes pour les demander en mariage.** Th. Gautier.

c. After the impersonal subject **ce** the copula is regularly (though not always) plural in agreement with a plural predicate-noun (cf. 186 *b* 1). **Ce furent des corsaires.** Mol.

1. It is singular before a compound predicate when the first substantive of the latter is singular. **C'est l'ambition et les plaisirs qui l'ont perdu.**

d. A collective noun regularly takes a singular verb. **La multitude s'ébranle, l'entoure, le presse.** Thiers. **La foule s'y précipite et court à un second pont.** Id. **Sur le mulet du fisc une troupe se jette, Le saisit au frein et l'arrête.** L. F. The plural however is the rule when the

collective is followed by the partitive **de** (272 *a* 4) with a plural noun. **Une foule d'hommes et de femmes s'y étaient précipités au péril de leur vie.** Guizot.

1. Even then the verb may be singular if the totality of individuals acting as a unit is the prominent thought. **La foule des croisés offrait un mélange bizarre et confus de toutes les conditions.** Michaud. **Une famille de bons laboureurs mangeait en plein air devant la porte.** G. S.

2. **La plupart, un grand (petit) nombre, une infinité**, and adverbs of quantity with plural nouns are felt as numerals and regularly demand the plural. **La plupart s'en allaient chercher une autre terre.** L. F. **La plupart étaient encore éveillés** V. H. But even here the above remark (1) may apply. **Le plus grand nombre allait à pied.** Michaud. **La plupart des chefs normands inclinait à prendre à la lettre ces scrupules hypocrites.** Thierry.

3. In **plus d'un**, the verb is singular as in English by attraction to **un**. **Plus d'une Pénélope honora son pays.** Boileau.

e. After the relative pronoun the verb agrees in number and person with the antecedent. **Il n'y eut que moi qui espérai la victoire.** Fén. **Moi qui suis seule dans l'univers.** G. S. **Nous étions les mêmes qui avions combattu dans les jeux.** Fén.

1. The older usage allows the third person even after pronouns of the first and second persons. **Je n'ai trouvé que vous qui fût digne de moi.** Mol.

140. When the subject is multiple the verb is usually plural, and when the members of the subject are of different persons it agrees with the leading person, the order of precedence being 1st, 2d, 3d. **Sa beauté, son enjouement, sa foble fierté, s'enfuyaient.** Fén. **La colère et le dépit le suffoquaient.** V. H. **Albert et moi sommes tombés d'accord.** Mol. **Vous et les miens avez merité pis.** L. F.

a. The verb agrees only with the last member of a multiple subject—

1. When the members are intended as synonyms. **Son courage, son intrépidité étonne les plus braves.** Domergue. ***Chaque progrès* du pays, chaque développement des intel-**

ligences, chaque pas de la liberté fera crouler tout ce qu'ils auront échafaudé. V. H.

2. Or as a climax. **Le fer, le bandeau, la flamme est toute prête.** Rac. **Un seul mot, un soupir, un coup d'œil vous trahit.** Vol.

3. Or are summed up by a single word such as **tout, rien, personne, ce,** etc. **Un souffle, une ombre, un rien, tout lui donnait la fièvre.** L. F. **Princes, pairs, maréchaux, tout a été écrasé par lui.** de V.

4. Sometimes when the verb precedes its subjects it agrees only with the first. **Qu'importe sa pitié, sa joie et sa vengeance?** Volt. **C'est là qu'est mon violon et toute ma musique.** G. S.

b. After **ni . . . ni** and **ou,** which are properly exclusive, the verb is often plural. It must be so when the members of the subject are of different persons. **Ni l'or ni la grandeur ne nous rendent heureux.** L. F. **Ni le rossignol ni la rose ne se peuvent cacher.** Th. Gautier. **Le fanatisme ou la petitesse d'un prêtre peuvent faire de tels prodiges.** G. S. **Ni vos nymphes ni moi n'avons juré.** Fén. **Ni moi ni mes enfants ne verrons ces temps-là.** de V. **Mon frère ou moi ferons la réponse à cette lettre.** Acad.

c. On the other hand **l'un et l'autre** *both* may be used in the sense of *each* with a singular verb. **L'un et l'autre me gêne.** Corn.

d. When to the real subject a substantive is added by means of **comme, ainsi que, avec,** etc., the verb may be plural by a construction according to the sense. **La pensée comme l'expression ont . . . une élévation.** Ste-Bve. **Bacchus, ainsi qu'Hercule, étaient reconnus pour demi-dieux.** Vol.

THE COMPOUND SENTENCE.

141. A compound sentence may consist of—

a. Clauses of equal grammatical value, i.e. coördinate.

b. Clauses of unequal grammatical value, one being related to the other as a modifier or as an integral part, i.e. subordinate.

COÖRDINATION OR PARATAXIS.

142. Sentences composed of coördinate clauses are classified according to the logical relation of these clauses to one another. They are called—

a. Copulative, where the relation is one of summation. Connectives, if any, **et, aussi,** sometimes **ni,** and the correlatives **et . . . et, tantôt . . . tantôt, non seulement . . . mais aussi,** etc. **Il cherche son âne et il est monté dessus.** Prov.

b. Disjunctive or adversative, where the relation is one of opposition or contrast. Connectives, if any, **ou, mais, cependant, pourtant, toutefois, néanmoins, plutôt;** the correlatives **ou . . . ou, soit . . . soit, ni . . . ni,** etc. **L'amour n'est qu'un plaisir, l'honneur est un devoir.** Corn. **Je me couchai mais je ne pus dormir.** Mérimée.

c. Causal or illative, where the relation is one of cause or inference. Connectives, if any, **car, donc, alors, ainsi, or;** the periphrases **c'est pour cela que, c'est pourquoi,** etc. **Il ne faut point de juges parmi eux, car leur propre conscience les juge.** Fén.

REMARK.—Clauses coördinate in form may in sense be related to each other as principal and dependent. The adversative relation, particularly, often implies condition, concession, etc. **Coq chante ou non, viendra le jour.** Prov. **Il lui fait signe, elle accourt.** Wherever such a relation has become fixed and has developed a constant sign genuine subordination results. All hypotaxis grows out of parataxis.

SUBORDINATION OR HYPOTAXIS.

143. Subordinate clauses are classified according to their functions:—

a. Substantive clauses, with the function of a noun.

b. Adverbial clauses, with the function of an adverb.

c. Adjective clauses, with the function of an adjective.

144. *Substantive clauses*, introduced by **que,** or by **si** *whether*, and various interrogative words in indirect questions, may perform in the main sentence the *function*—

a. Of *subject.* **Il faudrait que vous vinssiez.** de Musset. **Que m'importe quel est le faible ou le puissant?** Dumas.

b. Of *object.* **Je me disais que je n'avais pas un ami.** Mérimée. **Mais songez cependant où vous êtes.** Rac.

1. Often a substantive in similar relation would require the prepositions **de** or **à** in the manner of an indirect object. **Il se réjouissait qu'il y eût encore au monde un peuple . . . si sage.** Fén. **Mon père a consenti que je suive mon choix.** Corn.

c. Of *adverbial modifier*, in constructions analogous to those of a noun (232 *b*), e.g.:—

1. Governed by a preposition, e.g. **avant, après, depuis, pour, sans,** etc., before a **que**-clause. **Comment arriverez-vous à lui sans qu'il vous entende?** Dumas.

2. In apposition with a noun or pronoun, e.g. **de peur que, de crainte que, au (en) cas que, au point que, parce que, jusqu'à ce que,** etc. **Je te pardonne à la charge que tu mourras.** Mol.

3. Absolutely with an adjective or participle, e.g. **pendant que, nonobstant que, pourvu que, vu que, loin que,** etc. **N'avez-vous rien entendu pendant que je causais.** Dumas.

REMARK.—These (1, 2, 3) are treated under adverbial clauses, regarding the **que** as the last member of a *compound* conjunction.

145. *Adverbial clauses* are—

a. Temporal, defining the time of the action of the principal clause. Connectives **quand, comme, lorsque** *when;* **si tôt que, aussitôt que, dès que** *as soon as;* **pendant que, tandis que** *while;* **depuis que** *since* (**ex quo**); **jusqu'à ce que, tant que** *until;* **avant que** *before;* **après que** *after*, etc. **Quand je revins à moi, il était nuit.** V. H. **Quand vous aurez fini votre prière vous m'apprendrez.** de V.

1. **Quand même, lors même que** are frequent with concessive force, *even though.* **Je serai votre ami, quand même vous ne voudrez pas.** Acad.

b. Local, defining the place of the action of the principal clause. Connectives **où, d'où, par où. Où va l'esprit, là va la vie.** Lamart. **Où l'homme d'action disparaît, le rhéteur surgit.** Sardou.

1. **Où** as a relative introduces also adjective clauses (146), and as an interrogative indirect questions (144).

c. Modal, defining the manner, degree, measure, proportion, etc., of the action of the principal clause. Connectives **comme, que,** also phrases such as **à proportion que, à mesure que, selon que, à ce que,** etc. **Il fuyait les discussions comme il cherchait les batailles.** V. H. **La combe devient belle à mesure que le soleil s'abaisse.** Theuriet.

1. **Comme si** introduces a conditional clause for comparison. **Il me traite comme si j'étais son valet.** Acad.

2. Correlative words in the principal clause, such as **tel, le même, tant, autant, si, aussi, ainsi,** are very common particularly before **que** in the sense of *as.* **Comme chante le chapelain, ainsi répond le sacristain.** Prov.

3. The correlative of **que** *than* is the comparative **plus** or **moins,** or a word containing a comparative idea, such as **plutôt, autre,** etc. **Vous avez l'âme plus basse que je ne supposais.** Theuriet (cf. 270 *f.*)

4. In **ne . . . que** *only* (268 *c*), **que** is logically *than* after the comparative notion involved in the principal clause. **Un peuple n'est grand que par lui-même.** Lamart. **Il n'a que cinq francs.**

d. Final, denoting the *end* (**finis**) or *purpose* of the action of the principal clause. Connectives **afin que, pour que,** or sometimes **que** alone. **Cachez-vous dans votre chambre qu'on vous croie sorti.** V. H.

e. Consecutive, denoting the *result* of the action of the principal clause. Connective **que,** with correlatives **si, tel, tellement, tant, de sorte, de manière, de façon,** etc. **Il est si sage qu'on le cite pour modèle.** Acad.

f. Causal, denoting the *reason* for the action of the principal clause. Connectives **parce que, à cause que, c'est que,** *because;* rarer **d'autant que** *inasmuch as;* **puisque, comme, vu que, attendu que,** etc. *since.* **Que** alone may be causal where no ambiguity can arise. **On ne prononce mal que parce qu'on entend mal.** G. S. **Le ciel ne m'abandonne pas, puisqu'il m'avait conduite auprès de vous.** Ead. **Qu'avez-vous donc, dit-il, que vous ne mangez point?** Boileau.

g. Conditional, denoting a condition of the action of the principal clause. Connective **si,** negative **si non, si ce n'est que** *unless.* **Si j'étais blessé, je serais dans un hôpital.** *Mérimée.* **Il vous ressemble si ce n'est qu'il est trop petit.** *Acad.*

1. The conditional sentence consists of two parts, the protasis or condition and the apodosis or conclusion. The latter is logically the principal clause. Either part may be placed first, as in English. In French but four types of the conditional sentence need special mention:—

α. Conditions of fact in present or past time with present or past tenses of the indicative in both clauses. **Si l'amour vit d'espoir, il périt avec lui.** Corn. **S'il court de méchants bruits, c'est qu'on le calomnie.** Ponsard. **Si Stanislas demeurait, il était perdu.** Lücking.

β. The future more vivid condition, with the present indicative in the protasis and the future indicative or present imperative in the apodosis. **Je te rosserai si tu parles.** Mol. **Si vous me vengez, venge-moi dans une heure.** Rac.

γ. The future less vivid and present unreal condition, with the imperfect indicative in the protasis and the present conditional in the apodosis. **Je mentirais, si je vous le disais.** Mol. **Si un petit enfant voulait le tuer, il se laisserait tuer par un petit enfant.** G. S.

δ. The past unreal condition, with the pluperfect indicative or subjunctive in the protasis and the perfect conditional or pluperfect subjunctive in the apodosis (233, 235). **Elle me l'aurait dit, s'il avait parlé.** Scribe et Legouvé. **Il n'aurait pas parlé, si la chose eût été douteuse.** Grév. **S'il eût fallu nager sans relache, nos forces eussent été bientôt épuisées.** Fén. **Ils se fussent battus sur-le-champ, si on ne les eût arrêtés.** Id.

REMARK.—It is not uncommon for the protasis to be of one type and the apodosis of another, particularly in the case of *γ* and *δ*. **Il aurait parlé** (*δ*), **s'il l'aimait** (*γ*). Scribe et Legouvé. **La république a le droit de lui ôter la couronne, s'il transgressait les lois de l'état.** Vol.

2. Connectives introducing a *hypothesis* are **posé que, supposé que, posé le cas que, au (en) cas que,** etc. (235 *c*). **Posé que cela fût, que feriez-vous?** Acad.

3. Connectives introducing a *proviso* are **pourvu que, bien entendu que, à condition que,** etc. **Je ne le blâme point, pourvu qu'il se contente.** Nodier.

h. Concessive. Connectives **quoique, bien que, encore que, nonobstant que, malgré que,** etc. (235 *d*). **Quoique la cause du combat n'existât plus, le combat ne s'engagea pas moins.** Mignet.

1. The clause introduced by the general relative has concessive force (235 *d* 1), i.e. **qui que, quoi que, quel que, quelque . . . que, où que,** etc. **Qui que ce soit, parlez.** Rac. **Quoi que vous écriviez, évitez la bassesse.** Boileau.

2. So also a **que**-clause preceded by the adverbs **si, tout, quelque,** or by the preposition **pour** in the sense of *however*. **Le dernier, si petit qu'il soit, est un grand homme.** Scribe.

146. *Adjective* or *relative clauses*, which appear for the most part as attributive modifiers of a substantive, introduced by the relative pronouns **qui, que, lequel,** etc., or by the relative adverbs **dont, où, d'où, par où. Le monde qui lit et qui médite.** V. H. **Cette enfant dont tu parles est la première affection de ma vie.** Sardou. **À l'instant où il avait traversé la chambre.** V. H.

a. Logically every relative pronoun must agree with its antecedent in gender and number, but **lequel** is the only variable relative (190, cf. also 139 *e*). **Il existe un arbitre du sort des hommes duquel nous sommes tous les enfants.** J.-J. Rousseau.

b. Clauses introduced by a general relative are mostly adverbial in function, and are classed accordingly (145 *h* 1).

c. The logical relation of a relative clause to the principal clause is various.

1. *Copulative,* where the English idiom would usually employ coördination and the copulative *and.* **Le roi le sut, qui en rit aussi.** St-Simon.

2. *Final.* **Mentor voulait une grande quantité de jeux qui animassent le peuple.** Fén. (236.)

3. *Consecutive.* **Il n'y a que le bon Dieu qui puisse gouverner les choses.** G. S. (236.)

4. *Causal.* **L'oiseau qui ne peut se defendre a des ailes pour se sauver.** G. S.

5. *Conditional.* **Qui ne craint point la mort, ne craint point les menaces.** Corn.

6. *Concessive.* **L'honneur qui se tait n'en est que plus funeste.** Rac.

d. A relative clause is very frequent where the English idiom requires a participle. **Elle est à la cousine qui fond** (*casting*) **des balles.** Mérimée.

WORD-ORDER.

147. In synthetic languages the order of words is largely free, because the relations between the parts of the sentence are made clear by the inflectional endings. The order in which the ideas are presented depends thus in great measure on other considerations than need of clearness, e.g. on emphasis, balance, euphony, etc. In an analytic language, on the contrary, the relations of words to one another are indicated chiefly by their positions, which cannot be greatly changed without changing or destroying the sense. Latin is largely synthetic and its word-order is very free. In modern French it follows for the most part rigid rules, as declension has been almost wholly lost. Old French occupies an intermediate position in both respects. The language has thus gained in clearness and precision, but lost in flexibility. *Cæsar conquered the Gauls* is in Latin **Cæsar Gallos vicit**, but the same sense with varying tone and emphasis is given by the five other possible arrangements of the words. In French as in English there is but one proper order, viz. **César vainquit les Gaulois.**

148. The subject usually stands first, followed by the predicate (149). **La cérémonie commence.** Thiers.

a. The modifiers of the subject (or of a substantive in any relation) are grouped about it.

1. Articles, pronominal adjectives, numerals, and some qualifying adjectives (165) precede their nouns. **Cette douce union régna jusqu'à la fin des travaux.** Thiers. **Quatre cent mille spectateurs chargeaient les amphithéâtres.** Id.

2. Most qualifying adjectives, appositives, prepositional phrases, and adjective clauses follow their nouns. **Une révue générale des fédérés eut lieu.** Thiers. **L'orgueil, vice qui se nourrit de vertus.** Château.

a. For the sake of clearness however one of two such modifiers of

an object-noun may be placed before its noun. **J'ai de connaître Dieu un besoin qui me consume.** G. S.

b. The modifiers of the verb mostly follow it. **Il baissa la tête, croisa les bras sur sa poitrine, salua trois fois son juge impitoyable.** V. H.

1. The chief exception is the personal pronoun-object (173). **Ne me soupçonne pas, je t'en conjure.** V. H.

2. Certain indefinite pronoun-objects and adverbs regularly precede the infinitive, and in compound verb-forms the past participle (263 *c*). **Ma promenade . . . ne m'a rien rapporté.** About. **Tu as beaucoup perdu.** V. H. **Vous avez bien fait.** About.

3. For the position of the adverb, see 263.

4. Prepositional phrases, and nouns limiting a verb in some adverbial relation (161 *h*), have a freedom of position greater even than that of adverbs. **En l'écoutant, je ne sais quelle puissance me dominait.** V. H. **Les citoyens qui l'avaient une première fois entendu.** Lamartine. They stand even between subject and verb. **Le Clergé, par sa formidable hiérarchie, . . . se serait maintenu.** Mignet.

INVERSION.

149. Inversion consists in placing the verb (or, in compound tenses, the personal part) before its subject, while retaining the verb modifiers in their normal place.

a. In principal clauses. Here the inversion concerns chiefly the pronoun-subject (cf. 126).

1. In questions (cf. 126).

2. With a verb of saying and thinking introduced parenthetically after quoted speech. **Scélérat! m'écriai-je, que fais-tu?** V. H. **Pauvre petit oiseau! pensa-t-il, le cage va se renfermer.** Grév. **Je vous le promets! dit-elle.** Theuriet.

3. With the subjunctive of wish, condition, or concession (233 *b*). **M'en préserve le ciel!** Acad.

4. Regularly when the adverbs and adverbial phrases **aussi, encore, toujours, peut-être, en vain, vainement, au** (or **du**) **moins, à peine,** and a few others head the clause. ***Ces étoffes* sont belles, aussi coûtent-elles cher.** Acad.

À peine suis-je encore arrivé dans l'Épire. Rac. **Ainsi va le monde.** G. S.

5. Sometimes when an adverbial modifier is placed emphatically at the head of the sentence. **Après poisson viennent les noix.** Prov. **À ce carnage succéda un moment de stupeur.** Mérimée.

6. Sometimes when a predicate substantive or adjective precedes the copula. **L'effet du commerce sont les richesses.** Montesquieu. **Bon est le médecin qui se peut guérir.** Prov.

7. In rare cases some intransitive verb may head a declarative sentence. **Restait le précipice.** About. **Viennent ensuite les députés de la Grèce.** Le Bas. This is quite noticeable in some recent writers.

b. In subordinate clauses. Here it is a noun-subject, not a pronoun-subject, that is often inverted.

1. In indirect questions introduced by an interrogative not itself the subject; less commonly in other substantive clauses. **Je comprenais enfin d'où venaient les respects que rendaient** (cf. *b* 2 below) **tous les rebelles . . . au chef Bug-Jargal.** V. H.

2. Often in relative clauses where the relative is not itself the subject, especially when the subject has modifiers. **Tu sais les malheurs qu'entraina cette rébellion.** V. H. **Cette mémoire fatiguée au sein de laquelle flottent les images confuses de tout un siècle.** O. Feuillet.

3. In concessive clauses introduced by a general relative pronoun, adjective, or adverb (143 *h* 1, 235 *d*). **Quelques efforts que fassent les hommes, leur néant parait partout.** Rollin.

4. Less commonly in other adverbial clauses, local, temporal, modal. **Est-il vrai que nous sommes plus méchants que ne l'étaient nos pères?** Lemare.

150. The order of words is much more free—

a In phrases preserved from the older language. **Quand bon me semble. À Dieu ne plaise**, etc. **Grand bien me fasse!** Sandeau.

b In poetry. **Maître corbeau, sur un arbre perché, Tenait en son bec un fromage.** La F. **Un renard . . . Pour ce prétendu vol par lui fut appelé.** Id. **Mère écrevisse, un jour, à sa fille disait.** Id. **La noble épée Qui d'Holopherne a la tête coupée.** Vol. **Tu veux . . . un baiser dérober.** Regnard.

SPECIAL SYNTAX.

THE ARTICLES.

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

151. The definite article before common nouns is used much as in English. **La langue coupe la tête.** Prov. It has however a somewhat more extended field, as follows:—

a. Before abstracts. **Le regret, l'espoir, la terreur, le recueillement, la consternation, l'enthousiasme, la foi, le doute, la gloire, le calme, tout cela et plus encore.** G. S. **La musique et la poésie sont les plus hautes expressions de la foi.** Ead.

b. Before class names (generic), both singular and plural. **Les arts prennent naissance au pied de l'autel.** G. S. **Tous les malheurs des hommes, tous les revers funestes dont les histoires sont remplies, les bévues des politiques, les manquements des grands capitaines, tout cela n'est venu que faute de savoir danser.** Mol. **La femme et l'amour ne pouvaient perdre leur empire.** G. S.

c. In several more idiomatic uses.

1. With words denoting parts of the body or mind where the English idiom requires a possessive. **J'ai le froid sur la tête et la mort dans le cœur.** de V. **Le marquis y prêtait la main.** Sandeau. For greater distinctness the possessive may be used, or else a personal pronoun in the dative case in addition to the article (174 *d*). **Tu leur touches la main.** Ponsard.

2. In descriptive phrases after the verb **avoir** the French generally uses the definite article and a predicative adjective, where the English has the indefinite article and an attributive adjective. **Il avait le front large.** de V. **Il**

(l'âne) a les yeux bons, l'odorat admirable, l'oreille excellente. Buffon.

3. With nouns in the absolute construction (161 *g*), where the English generally uses a possessive and the preposition *with*. **Elle resta pensive, les yeux attachés à terre.** G. S.

4. In a distributive sense where the English idiom uses the indefinite article. **Deux fois la semaine.** Acad. **Une fois le jour.** Mol. **Dix sous la livre,** etc.; but before expressions of time **par** is now more common (277 *b*).

5. Before titles either with a proper name (**le docteur Henri, le général Boulanger,** etc.) or after **monsieur, madame,** etc. **Monsieur le maréchal.** de V. **Madame la comtesse.** Id.

6. In exclamations the article is frequent where we should use *what, what a,* and where **quel** might be substituted. **La belle matinée, mon père!** Sandeau. **Oh! l'étrange chose que d'avoir affaire à des bêtes!** Mol.

7. With a tone of familiarity the article is used with a vocative. **Tout doux! la vieille, répondit un bourgeois.** A. France. **Adieu donc, la fille; bonjour, l'ami.** Marivaux.

8. Before names of days and seasons, and before other parts of speech used substantively. **Le dimanche, le jeudi; le oui, le non, les mais et les si.** But not of days immediately preceding or following. **Je viendrai mardi.**

9. For the partitive use of the definite article see below, 153.

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE WITH PROPER NOUNS.

152. With proper nouns the article is used far more than in English.

a. With the names of countries, of some large islands, of single mountains, and of cities accompanied by a modifier, together with the names of a few individual cities for the most part descriptive in their origin; also as in English with the names of mountain ranges, seas, and rivers. **L'Europe, la France, le Japon, la Lorraine; la Sicile; la Nouvelle Orléans; le Havre, la Haye, la Rochelle; les Alpes, la Baltique, le Hudson, le Rhin,** etc.

1. The names of countries however omit the article after the preposition **en** (276 *b*, rem.). **En Europe, En Amérique,** etc.

2. Feminine names of countries omit the article after **de,** except when the phrase is equivalent to a possessive, partitive, or objective genitive. **Il vient d'Angleterre, La reine d'Italie, L'histoire d'Allemagne**; but **Le pouvoir de la France,** etc.

b. Also with the names of persons:—

1. When accompanied by a modifier. **La pauvre Marie.** V. H. **La pauvre Françoise est presque sur les dents.** Mol. This applies to all proper names, cf. above.

2. When used as common nouns. **Elle fait l'Agnès.** Acad. **Si tous les hommes étaient des Socrates** (*i.e. philosophers*). J.-J. Rousseau.

3. In the plural with surnames as in English. **Les Stuarts, Les Louveau.** Daudet. **Les Penarvan.** Sandeau. (Cf. 87 *a* 2.)

4 In the literary style the names of distinguished men may be accompanied by the plural article. **Les La Fontaine, les Boileau, les Molière vivaient entre eux.** B. de St. Pierre.

5. Exceptionally with the names of a few noted persons, mostly Italians, or public characters such as actresses. **Le Dante, le Tasse, la Rachel, la Bernhardt. Je me suis fiancé à la Juana.** Dumas.

6. With the name of feast-days by an ellipsis of **fête**. **La Saint-Michel, la Saint-Jean, la Toussaint,** for **la fête de Saint-Michel,** etc.

7. Similarly **à la (l')** is a familiar abbreviation for **à la mode (de). à la russe, à la Rembrandt, à l'anglaise.**

THE PARTITIVE ARTICLE.

153. The definite article preceded by the preposition **de** is employed before a noun used in a partitive sense, i.e. denoting an indefinite portion of something. In English this notion is expressed by *some* or *any*, or more frequently left without definite expression to be gathered from the context. Hence the forms **du, de la, de l', des** *are often* called the partitive article. For the genesis of *this construction* see 272 a 4 γ.

154. Nouns with the partitive article may be used in all constructions, as subject, predicate, object of a verb, after prepositions (cf. below), etc. **Des vieillards, des femmes, des enfants les entouraient.** de Maistre. **Des annales ne sont pas de l'histoire.** Lamartine. **Tout petit prince a des ambassadeurs.** L. F. **Vous aviez affaire à des gens d'honneur.** de V. **Vous confondez par des paroles profondes ma raison.** G. S.

a. The definite article is omitted and **de** alone used—

1. Where an adjective or adjective pronoun precedes the noun. **On sent de grands hommes dépaysés dans de petites choses.** Lamart. **Je connais de ces gens.** Ponsard.

α. The article appears however when the modifier follows. **Des tolérances merveilleuses, de délicates bontés, des indulgences divines et de sublimes pardons.** de V.

β. Also when adjective and noun by frequent association have come to form one idea. **Du petit vin, des jeunes gens, des rouges-gorges, des petits-maitres,** etc.

γ. Colloquial violations of the rule are common, and examples are found in good authors, particularly in the singular. **Moi, qui n'ai dans les veines que du bon sang plébéien.** G. S.

2. When the partitive noun is the object of a negative verb expressed or understood (266 *a*). **Point de pain quelquefois et jamais de repos.** L. F. **Ne portez-vous pas de gourde?** Mérimée. **Vous n'avez pas de cœur.** Scribe et Legouvé. Compare **Ce ne sont pas des chants, ce ne sont que des larmes.** de Musset.

α. But not when the sense is in fact positive. **Il n'y a que des femmes.** Grév.

β. Nor when the negative affects a modifier of the noun instead of the noun itself. **Je ne vous ferai des reproches frivoles.** Rac.

b. Both *the preposition* and the article are omitted, *and the simple noun* used as in English—

1. After **ni... ni.** **Je n'ai ni fortune ni position.** About. **Il n'y a, en poésie, ni bons ni mauvais sujets, mais de bons et de mauvais poëtes.** V. H.

2. In long enumerations. **Tout ce qu'on trouve, fagots, portes, tables, solives.** Michelet.

3. Always after **de** and often after a few other prepositions, as **avec, par, sans,** etc. **Enveloppez-moi de parfums et couronnez-moi de fleurs.** Lamart. **Je cherche la lumière avec angoisse.** G. S. **O politique sans entrailles!** Daudet. With all except **de** the more formal expression of the partitive sense is allowable. **Il n'y parvenait pas sans des efforts et des souffrances.** G. S.

4. In many phrases made up of verb and noun-object chiefly with **avoir, faire, prendre, rendre, tenir.** Such are **avoir appétit, pitié, peur,** etc.; **faire peur, attention; prendre congé,** etc. See Lexicon. Such expressions are archaic forms which have continued in use. In the earliest period of French the partitive article was not used. In the fifteenth century the syntax varied between its use and its omission. In the following century its use became the law, but certain expressions of the earlier type have remained till the present time.

REMARK.—Noteworthy is the idiomatic use of **avoir** with nouns, and adjectives used substantively, to denote bodily states, etc., e.g. **avoir faim, soif, sommeil, froid, chaud, mal, raison, tort,** etc. *to be hungry,* etc. Similarly **qu'avez-vous?** *what is the matter with you?*

THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

155. The indefinite article is used much as in English. **Une grenouille vit un bœuf.** L. F. Compare, however, 157 below.

REPETITION OF THE ARTICLES.

156. The articles are regularly repeated with successive nouns (cf. 183, 185*b*). **Il ébranle le ciel et la terre.** Fén. **O père des dieux et des hommes!** Id. **Le frère et la sœur *arrivèrent* à un petit village.** Mérimée. **Une vengeance,**

un défi et une menace. Id. Not however if the nouns denote the same object. **Son neveu Loth est établi dans la ville ou bourg de Sodom.** Vol.

a. So too before adjectives qualifying the same noun but referring to distinct objects. **La bonne ou la mauvaise fortune dépend de sa piété.** Bossuet. **Les bons et les mauvais conseils.** Bossuet. **La poésie anglaise, la française et l'italienne.** Vol. But: **Un long et lâche malaise.** Ste-Bve. **Il était vêtu d'une longue et large robe rouge.** de V.

1. Careless omission of the article even where logically required is sometimes found. **La législation civile et criminelle.** Mignet.

b. The definite article is repeated with a superlative adjective that follows its noun. **Il vous fait un crime des choses les plus innocentes.** Fén.

OMISSION OF THE ARTICLES.

157. In some cases no article is required where the English idiom demands it. Most important are the following:—

a. In proverbial expressions, titles of books, and in enumerations. **Pierre qui roule n'amasse pas mousse.** Prov. **Courtes prières pénètrent les cieux.** Prov. **Il y a quelque anguille sous roche.** Prov. **Confessions d'un ouvrier.** Souvestre. **Dictionnaire général anglais-français. Puissance de la concorde.**

b. Before appositives and before predicate nouns (not modified by an adjective), particularly such as denote titles, professions, nationalities, etc. This affects particularly the indefinite article. **L'orgueil, vice qui se nourrit de vertus.** Chateau. **L'homme, fantôme errant, passe sans laisser même son ombre sur le mur.** V. H. **Il est avocat, docteur, français, botaniste,** etc. (But **c'est un avocat, docteur, Français, botaniste.**) **Je deviens parricide, assassin, sacrilège.** Rac. **On la suppose fille de Delaunay.** Thiers.

c. Before numerals that follow the nouns they limit. **Livre premier, *chapitre* deux; Charles cinq, Louis quatorze,**

etc. *A hundred* is **cent**, and *a thousand* **mille** without the article. **Un cent** = *one hundred*, etc.

d. Idiomatically before **plus, moins, mieux**, beginning a sentence. **Plus il buvait, plus il était grave et fier.** G. S. **Jamais** *never a* is also an isolated idiom. **Jamais Anglaise n'avait été en Corse.** Mérimée. **Jamais honnête homme ne fut plus impatiemment attendu.** Mérimée. **Jamais prince ne sut mieux braver les dangers, jamais prince ne les sut mieux éviter.** Montesquieu.

ORIGIN OF THE ARTICLES.

158. *a.* The definite article, being derived from the forms of **elle** used as a proclitic (cf. 97, rem. 2), is both in form and function a weak demonstrative. Compare the definite articles in Greek and in the Teutonic languages, also by origin demonstrative pronouns.

b. The indefinite article, being derived from the numeral **unu, una** (cf. 95 *e*), is in function a weak numeral. The origin of the indefinite article in modern Greek and in the Teutonic languages is the same.

NOUNS.

NUMBER.

159. The use of the singular and plural of nouns is the same in French as in English save for a few idiomatic differences.

a. Nouns denoting parts or appurtenances of an individual are in the singular, if singular in the individual, even when a number of individuals is mentioned. English usage wavers. **Ils avaient la barbe longue et négligée, les cheveux plus courts mais blancs.** Fén. (*long, unkempt beards*). **Il avait sauvé la vie de plusieurs d'entre eux.** V. H.

b. A noun, accompanied by two or more adjectives in the singular number connected by **et**, is itself regularly singular. **Quelques scènes de la Phèdre grecque, de la latine, de la française et de l'anglaise.** Montesquieu.

1. But when by the same noun different objects are denoted with *each adjective*, a plural noun may be accompanied by singular

adjectives (cf. 163). **Les langues romane et tudesque.** Duclos. **Quelques membres des assemblées coloniale et provinciale.** V. H. Even a singular article with the adjective. **Les bons auteurs du dix-septième et dix-huitième siècles.** Vol.

CASE.

160. The Literary Latin had six cases and five declensions. This system broke down in two ways, first by the confusion of one declension with another, and secondly by the reduction in the number of cases, resulting from the gradual operation of phonetic law, e.g. in Folk-Latin **dominus** and **dominos**, **dominum** and **domino** became indistinguishable in sound. The confusion and simplification went on until in O.F. there were but two cases left, viz. a subject-case and an object-case (cf. 85 *a*), and in modern French even this distinction has been lost and but a single form remains for each number. In the pronouns the obliteration has not gone so far (cf. 97), and the nominative, dative, and accusative are distinguished in a sufficient number of instances to preserve the feeling for case. Even the genitive is felt in the adverbial pronouns **en** and **dont** (cf. 97 *f*, 100 *c*). With nouns, and to a large extent also with pronouns, the prepositions **de** and **à** are used to express genitive and dative case-relations. (Cf. 272, 273.)

161. The noun without a preposition is used:—

a. As subject. **L'homme existe.**

b. As predicate. **C'est mon frère.**

c. As object. **J'ai une sœur.**

d. As appositive. **L'homme, fantôme errant, passe** etc.

e. As vocative. **Belle marquise, vos beaux yeux me font mourir d'amour.** Mol.

f. As predicate accusative after verbs of naming, choosing, calling, appointing, etc. **On le fit sergent.** Acad. **Je te fais le chef d'un grand peuple.** Dumas. **Il me couronna Dame de la Beauté.** Dumas. **Ils n'osaient s'avouer républicains.** Thiers. **Je me sens poëte.** de V.

1. This construction involves sometimes the ellipsis of the infinitive *to be*, and is extended in French beyond the limits of the English idiom. **On la suppose fille de Delaunay.** Thiers.

2. The connectives **comme** *as* and **pour** *for* are often inserted as in English. **Ils m'élurent pour leur chef.** V. H. **Il considérait les électeurs comme ses prête-noms, et les émigrés comme ses instruments.** Mignet.

g. In an absolute construction with a participle, expressed or understood, representing the Latin ablative absolute. **Elle resta pensive les yeux attachés à terre.** G. S. **Le jour à peine levé, l'évêque arriva.** Guizot. **L'air serein, le regard brillant, le pas ferme, marchant même plus vite que la troupe.** Id.

h. In various adverbial relations, to express—

1. Time when or how long (cf. 273). **Qui rit le matin, le soir pleure.** Prov. **Je le dis l'autre jour.** de V. **Le dîner dura trois heures.** Vol. **La cigale ayant chanté Tout l'été Se trouva fort dépourvue.** L. F.

2. Place where or whither (cf. 276), in a few phrases. **J'ai vu cet abbé-là quelque part.** Beaumarchais. **Tiens, dit-elle, pose ça quelque part.** Grév. **Pouvais-je vous conduire autre part?** Delavigne.

3. Measure of distance, dimension (cf. 272), weight, price, etc. **Je continuai ma route . . . l'espace de six milles.** Volney. **Je t'ai vendu treize piastres.** V. H. Cf. **Je t'ai vendu pour le prix de treize piastres.** Id.

REMARK.—Except by coördination (see 137, rem. 1; cf. 161 *f*) two direct objects cannot stand with one verb, nor is the preposition **à** expressing the dative relation ever omitted. Compare *I have given my brother a present* and **J'ai donné un cadeau à mon frère.** This principle applies even to the verb-phrase of causation, etc. See 244 *b*.

ADJECTIVES.

AGREEMENT.

162. Adjectives, including pronominal adjectives, articles, variable nouns (82 *a* 2), and participles used adjectively, agree with the substantives to which they refer in gender and number (cf. 138). **Sa bonne large figure toute brouillée de larmes.** Daudet. **Elle était petite mais fort bien faite.** de V. **Cette première journée lui parut délicieuse.** Vol. **La prudence humaine est peu maîtresse des événemens.** Id. **Ces hautes montagnes**

toujours couvertes de glace et de neige. Fén. **Des chariots armés de faux tranchantes**. Fén. To this rule there are no real exceptions (see however 152 *b* 4, 6, 7, and cf. 89 *b*), but some details may be briefly stated.

a. Certain adjectives are variously treated according to their position:—

1. For the relation of **beau** to **bel**, etc., see 90 *d*. **Un bel homme,** but **l'homme est beau, un beau jour.**

2. **Demi** *half* before the noun is written as a compound and is invariable, but added as a fraction it is inflected. **Une demi-heure,** but **une heure et demie.**

3. **Nu** *bare* is similarly treated, **nu-tête,** but **la tête nue, nu-pieds,** but **les pieds nus.**

4. **Feu** *late* is inflected in attributive position, but is otherwise invariable. **Feu ma mère,** but **ma feue mère; feu les rois,** but **les feus rois.**

5. A few words have the function of adjectives in one position and are inflected, and of adverbs or prepositions in another when they are of course invariable. Such are **ci-joint, ci-inclus, franc de port; excepté, supposé, y compris. Vous trouverez ci-joint (ci-inclus) copie de la lettre,** but **Vous trouverez ci-jointe (ci-incluse) la copie de la lettre. Excepté ses amies,** but **ses amies exceptées,** etc.

b. After the phrase **avoir l'air,** an adjective may agree as predicate with the subject, or may be construed with **air.** The choice of construction is generally determined by the sense, but sometimes seems arbitrary. **Pour la maréchale, elle avait l'air affligé et inquiet.** de V. **Dosia n'avait pas l'air contente.** Grév.

c. When used adverbially adjectives are regularly invariable, but this rule was not settled in Old French and some remnants of the older usage remain. Thus **frais** with a past part., as in **frais cueilli** *newly picked*; also in **tout-puissant** (202 *b*) *all-powerful* and a few less common compound adjectives both parts are inflected.

d. Compound adjectives denoting color are invariable, as also a few nouns of color used adjectively, **bleu-foncé, bleu-clair,** etc. **Ses cheveux blond cendré étaient longs et soyeux.** Lamart. **Elle est jolie comme un cœur.—Blonde? dit un** ***curieux.—Châtain*** **clair.** Grév.

163. An adjective qualifying more than one noun is plural and masculine if one or more of the nouns are masculine. **Le cloître et le tombeau sont synonymes.** G. S. **Le théâtre de quelque miracle ou de quelque crime traditionnels.** Ead. **Une résolution et une responsabilité si terribles.** Lamart. **Son fils ou sa fille perdus pour la société.** Vol.

a. It usually agrees only with the nearest noun—

1. When the nouns are connected by **ou** where one alternative excludes the other. **Nous ne savons ce que c'est que bonheur ou malheur absolu.** J.-J. Rousseau.

2. When the different nouns are arranged as a climax or as synonyms. **Toute sa vie n'est qu'un travail, qu'une occupation continuelle.** Massillon. **Le fer, le bandeau, la flamme est toute prête.** Rac.

b. Adjectives which precede the noun (165 *a*) are usually repeated with each noun they modify. **Il... Faisait tel bruit et tel fracas,** etc. L. F.

REMARK.—The rules of agreement are the survival of the Latin usage.

164. The substantive use of the adjective is freer in French than in English. It is allowed in both genders and both numbers.

a. Of persons. **Blonde? dit un curieux.** Grév. **Que chantes-tu là, petite?** Mérimée. **Les fous inventent les modes et les sages les suivent.** Prov.

b. As abstracts. **Le laid y existe à côté du beau, le difforme près du gracieux, le grotesque au revers du sublime, le mal avec le bien, l'ombre avec la lumière.** V. H.

1. Observe that those adverbs of quality which are used adjectively 261 *a* 2) share this substantive use of the adjective. **Le mal, le bien, le mieux, le pis,** etc.

POSITION.

165. The attributive adjective has great freedom of position, oftener following the noun but frequently preceding it. **C'est dans une alternative analogue, que s'écoulait la vie puissante et misérable de cet homme incompris, qu'une tendresse active, délicate et intelligente, pouvait seule sauver de ses propres détresses.** G. S. In O.F. the Latin freedom was almost entirely preserved, but custom has to some extent crystallized, and a few rules, subject to exceptions, may be given. They must be supplemented by observation and taste.

a. Before the noun are placed:—

1. Some common adjectives when used singly. Most important are **bon (meilleur), mauvais (pire), méchant; beau, joli, vilain; grand, gros, petit (moindre); jeune, vieux. Les petits ruisseaux font les grandes rivières.** Prov.

2. Most adjectives, when the noun has a prepositional dependency immediately following. **L'héroïque fin du marquis.** Sandeau.

3. Adjectives with proper names and titles of address. **Mon bien-aimé Ordener.** V. H. **La délaissée Ethel.** Id.

b. After the noun are placed:—

1. Adjectives denoting physical qualities, as color, shape, taste, etc. **Le chien boiteux, un cheval noir, des fruits amers,** etc.

2. Participles used adjectively (253). **Ses pas chancelants, une voix glacée, une voix éteinte,** etc. **L'an passé est toujours le meilleur.** Prov.

3. Adjectives derived from proper nouns. **Race romane, grecque, arabe,** etc. **La langue française, italienne,** etc.

Adjectives with modifiers other than the short adverbs **aussi, fort, plus, si, très, trop,** and even with these it is generally [illegible]l. **Ses discours pleins de sagesse.** Fén. **Un homme grand**

163. An adjective qualifying more than one noun is plural and masculine if one or more of the nouns are masculine. **Le cloître et le tombeau sont synonymes.** G. S. **Le théâtre de quelque miracle ou de quelque crime traditionnels.** Ead. **Une résolution et une responsabilité si terribles.** Lamart. **Son fils ou sa fille perdus pour la société.** Vol.

a. It usually agrees only with the nearest noun—

1. When the nouns are connected by **ou** where one alternative excludes the other. **Nous ne savons ce que c'est que bonheur ou malheur absolu.** J.-J. Rousseau.

2. When the different nouns are arranged as a climax or as synonyms. **Toute sa vie n'est qu'un travail, qu'une occupation continuelle.** Massillon. **Le fer, le bandeau, la flamme est toute prête.** Rac.

b. Adjectives which precede the noun (165 *a*) are usually repeated with each noun they modify. **Il . . . Faisait tel bruit et tel fracas,** etc. L. F.

REMARK.—The rules of agreement are the survival of the Latin usage.

164. The substantive use of the adjective is freer in French than in English. It is allowed in both genders and both numbers.

a. Of persons. **Blonde? dit un curieux.** Grév. **Que chantes-tu là, petite?** Mérimée. **Les fous inventent les modes et les sages les suivent.** Prov.

b. As abstracts. **Le laid y existe à côté du beau, le difforme près du gracieux, le grotesque au revers du sublime, le mal avec le bien, l'ombre avec la lumière.** V. H.

1. Observe that those adverbs of quality which are used adjectively 261 *a* 2) share this substantive use of the adjective. **Le mal, le bien, le mieux, le pis,** etc.

POSITION.

165. The attributive adjective has great freedom of position, oftener following the noun but frequently preceding it. **C'est dans une alternative analogue, que s'écoulait la vie puissante et misérable de cet homme incompris, qu'une tendresse active, délicate et intelligente, pouvait seule sauver de ses propres détresses.** G. S. In O.F. the Latin freedom was almost entirely preserved, but custom has to some extent crystallized, and a few rules, subject to exceptions, may be given. They must be supplemented by observation and taste.

a. Before the noun are placed:—

1. Some common adjectives when used singly. Most important are **bon (meilleur), mauvais (pire), méchant; beau, joli, vilain; grand, gros, petit (moindre); jeune, vieux. Les petits ruisseaux font les grandes rivières.** Prov.

2. Most adjectives, when the noun has a prepositional dependency immediately following. **L'héroïque fin du marquis.** Sandeau.

3. Adjectives with proper names and titles of address. **Mon bien-aimé Ordener.** V. H. **La délaissée Ethel.** Id.

b. After the noun are placed:—

1. Adjectives denoting physical qualities, as color, shape, taste, etc. **Le chien boiteux, un cheval noir, des fruits amers,** etc.

2. Participles used adjectively (253). **Ses pas chancelants, une voix glacée, une voix éteinte,** etc. **L'an passé est toujours le meilleur.** Prov.

3. Adjectives derived from proper nouns. **Race romane, grecque, arabe,** etc. **La langue française, italienne,** etc.

4. Adjectives with modifiers other than the short adverbs **aussi, bien, fort, plus, si, très, trop,** and even with these it is generally optional. **Ses discours pleins de sagesse.** Fén. **Un homme grand**

163. An adjective qualifying more than one noun is plural and masculine if one or more of the nouns are masculine. **Le cloître et le tombeau sont synonymes.** G. S. **Le théâtre de quelque miracle ou de quelque crime traditionnels.** Ead. **Une résolution et une responsabilité si terribles.** Lamart. **Son fils ou sa fille perdus pour la société.** Vol.

a. It usually agrees only with the nearest noun—

1. When the nouns are connected by **ou** where one alternative excludes the other. **Nous ne savons ce que c'est que bonheur ou malheur absolu.** J.-J. Rousseau.

2. When the different nouns are arranged as a climax or as synonyms. **Toute sa vie n'est qu'un travail, qu'une occupation continuelle.** Massillon. **Le fer, le bandeau, la flamme est toute prête.** Rac.

b. Adjectives which precede the noun (165 *a*) are usually repeated with each noun they modify. **Il... Faisait tel bruit et tel fracas,** etc. L. F.

REMARK.—The rules of agreement are the survival of the Latin usage.

164. The substantive use of the adjective is freer in French than in English. It is allowed in both genders and both numbers.

a. Of persons. **Blonde? dit un curieux.** Grév. **Que chantes-tu là, petite?** Mérimée. **Les fous inventent les modes et les sages les suivent.** Prov.

b. As abstracts. **Le laid y existe à côté du beau, le difforme près du gracieux, le grotesque au revers du sublime, le mal avec le bien, l'ombre avec la lumière.** V. H.

1. Observe that those adverbs of quality which are used adjectively 261 *a* 2) share this substantive use of the adjective. **Le mal, le bien, le mieux, le pis,** etc.

POSITION.

165. The attributive adjective has great freedom of position, oftener following the noun but frequently preceding it. **C'est dans une alternative analogue, que s'écoulait la vie puissante et misérable de cet homme incompris, qu'une tendresse active, délicate et intelligente, pouvait seule sauver de ses propres détresses.** G. S. In O.F. the Latin freedom was almost entirely preserved, but custom has to some extent crystallized, and a few rules, subject to exceptions, may be given. They must be supplemented by observation and taste.

a. Before the noun are placed:—

1. Some common adjectives when used singly. Most important are **bon (meilleur), mauvais (pire), méchant; beau, joli, vilain; grand, gros, petit (moindre); jeune, vieux. Les petits ruisseaux font les grandes rivières.** Prov.

2. Most adjectives, when the noun has a prepositional dependency immediately following. **L'héroïque fin du marquis.** Sandeau.

3. Adjectives with proper names and titles of address. **Mon bien-aimé Ordener.** V. H. **La délaissée Ethel.** Id.

b. After the noun are placed:—

1. Adjectives denoting physical qualities, as color, shape, taste, etc. **Le chien boiteux, un cheval noir, des fruits amers,** etc.

2. Participles used adjectively (253). **Ses pas chancelants, une voix glacée, une voix éteinte,** etc. **L'an passé est toujours le meilleur.** Prov.

3. Adjectives derived from proper nouns. **Race romane, grecque, arabe,** etc. **La langue française, italienne,** etc.

4. Adjectives with modifiers other than the short adverbs **aussi, bien, fort, plus, si, très, trop,** and even with these it is generally optional. **Ses discours pleins de sagesse.** Fén. **Un homme grand**

dans ses projets. Boiste. **Un aussi grand péril**. Mérimée; or, **un péril aussi grand**.

c. Position is farther determined by various considerations :

1. Some adjectives follow their nouns when used in a literal sense, but precede them when used figuratively. Such are **brave, cher, certain, cruel, grand, noir, pauvre, sage, simple**, etc. **La noire malignité de cette femme**. Fén.

2. An adjective, which generally follows its noun when it attributes to the noun a quality not belonging to it as a matter of course, may precede it when the quality is really, or supposedly, implied in the noun. **Une odeur douce** but **un doux parfum**.

3. Adjectives, which usually follow their nouns, may precede them when used with an emotional emphasis of love, hate, indignation, surprise, pity, etc. **Est-ce une femme charmante ?—Mais, oui. C'est une charmante femme.**

d. When two or more adjectives with one noun are coördinated they must all follow, unless each used alone would precede. When not coördinated each takes its place independently. **Un bon et honnête homme**. de V. **Ses longues et larges mains**. Lamart. But **un cheval grand et noir** (cf. *b* 1). On the other hand: **Une jolie jeune fille. Quelques méchantes perdrix rouges**. Mérimée. **Un fameux bandit corse**. Id.

COMPARISON.

166. The Latin superlative is wholly lost (93). Its function is performed by the comparative with the definite article or the possessive. **La plus belle femme, les plus grands maîtres, ma plus belle fille, mon fils le plus agé**, etc. **La meilleure façon de louer, c'est de louer avec les mains**. Mol. The comparative after a definite article is therefore ambiguous; it may be either comparative or superlative.

a. A predicate superlative may express either relative comparison or absolute comparison. In the latter case **le plus, le moins**, or **le mieux** are used adverbially with the adjective and **le** is invariable. **Cette pièce est la plus grande de l'auberge**, but **Le roi dont la mémoire est le plus révérée, c'est ce bon Salomon**. Volt. **Ceux-mêmes qui s'y étaient le plus divertis ont eu peur de n'avoir pas ri dans les règles**. Rac. The line between the adjectival **le** (**la, les**) *nins and the* adverbial **le plus** is not always clearly drawn.

b. The absolute superlative used attributively is expressed by means of **très, bien** or **fort** *very,* **très facile** = **perfacile** or **facillimum; bien amiable, fort grand,** etc.

c. Comparison of equality is expressed by **aussi** (or by **si** after a negative or interrogative). **L'âne est de son naturel aussi humble, aussi patient, aussi tranquille que le cheval est fier, ardent, impétueux.** Buffon. **Dans la monarchie il n'y a pas une force si réprimante que dans les autres gouvernements.** Montesquieu. **Ira-t-il si loin que vous allez?** Corn.

d. The second member of a comparison is always introduced by **que** < **quam** *than, as*; or by **de** before a numeral (272 *b* 6).

NUMERALS.

167. *a.* **Un** (alone or in compounds), **premier,** and **second** are the only numerals that vary for gender.

b. **Vingt** and **cent** take **s** in the plural, but not when another numeral immediately follows nor when they are used for the corresponding ordinals (cf. below). **Quatre-vingts** *fourscore* = 80, but **quatre-vingt-neuf** 89; **deux cents** 200, but **deux cent dix** 210.

c. **Mil** < **mille** and **mille** < **millia** are by derivation singular and plural respectively, and were so used in the early language, but now **mil** is used only in writing dates later than 1000 A.D. **L'an mil huit cent quatre-vingt-seize,** but **l'an mille.**

d. **Quart** < **quartu** is still used for **quatrième** in antiquated style and for fractions. **Un quart voleur survient.** L. F. **Deux et un quart** $2\frac{1}{4}$, **douze et trois quarts.** Other fractions that present peculiarities are *one half,* which is either **moitié,** a noun (**la moitié d'un jour**), or **demi,** an adjective (162 *a* 2); and *third* **tiers** (f. **tierce**). For fractional denominators greater than 4 the ordinals are used as in English. **Sept vingtièmes** $\frac{7}{20}$. The old ordinal **quint** for **cinquième** is still found in the names **Charles-Quint, Sixte-Quint.**

e. **Deuxième** and **second** are not sharply differentiated, but the former has been gradually displacing the latter. **Charles second** or **deux** (168 *a*); **le second tome,** or **le deuxième tome.**

168. In a few cases modern usage has gradually introduced the cardinals where logically and in our idiom the ordinals would be required:—

a. In the titles of sovereigns, and wherever the numeral is placed last, except in the case of **premier.** Either **deux** or **second** is allowable for second. **Henri premier, Charles second** or **deux, Édouard trois; chapitre cinq, page cent dix.**

b. In numbering the days of the month, excepting the first. **Le premier juin, le deux août, le trente et un janvier.** Observe that the name of the month is added without a preposition.

1. The day of the month is asked or stated personally with **avoir** or **être,** and impersonally with **être. Quel jour du mois (Quel quantième) avons-nous** (or **sommes-nous** or **est-il) aujourd'hui? Nous avons** (or **nous sommes** or **il est) le quinze.**

2. The names of the months are **janvier, février, mars** (75 *c* 1), **avril** (67 *b* 1), **mai, juin, juillet, août** (58 *a*), **septembre, octobre, novembre, décembre.**

3. The names of the days of the week are **dimanche, lundi, mardi, mercredi, jeudi, vendredi, samedi.**

PRONOUNS AND PRONOMINAL ADJECTIVES.

AGREEMENT.

169. Pronouns that refer to a definite antecedent must agree with it in gender and number. **Renferme ta folle passion dans ton cœur comme une honte, cache-la! étouffe-la!** Scribe et Legouvé. **La majesté de lui, maire, celle du curé méconnues.** Mérimée. **La position critique dans laquelle elle se trouvait.** Balzac. **Lequel (des royaumes) est mûr pour ton rêve sublime?** Dumas. **Il en a remporté quelques unes (des victoires)! — Mon Dieu! Je ne dis pas non. Mais à quoi lui ont-elles servi?** Sandeau.

a. Many pronouns however do not vary for gender and number. Cf. 97–101.

b. Details of pronoun agreement will be treated under particular *heads.* (*See* below.)

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

170. In syntax personal pronouns are divided into conjunctives (atonic forms), i.e. those used in connection with a verb as subject (97 *a*), direct object (97 *b*), or indirect object (97 *c*; cf. also 97 *e*, *f*), and disjunctives (tonic forms), those not so used (97 *d*).

CONJUNCTIVE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

171. The nominative or subject forms (97 *a*) are regularly placed before the verb, and allow nothing to intervene except the negative **ne** (cf. 267), and the object pronouns (cf. 173). **La République avait confisqué tous vos biens. Jamais je ne lui en ai reconnu le droit.** Sandeau.

a. In certain legal formulas, preserved from the older language, this rule suffers exception. **Je, soussigné, conservateur des hypothèques, certifie que**, etc.

b. In the inverted order (149) the pronoun-subject immediately follows its verb.

172. The subject-pronouns presents few difficulties.

a. **Nous,** like our editorial *we*, is sometimes used as a singular. In this use the verb is plural, but adjectives or nouns in agreement are singular. **Nous ne guérissons que des écrouelles, dit le Roi.** de V. **Nous sommes prince, ne l'oublions pas.** Sardou.

b. The pronoun of ordinary address, whether in speaking to one or more persons, is the second person plural **vous** *you.* **Tu** *thou* (also **te, toi**) is however not confined as in English to the language of poetry and of worship, but is employed in all more familiar address, to a child, a near relative, a friend, etc. The rule of agreement for **vous** is the same as for **nous** above.

Partez, vous êtes jeune, noble, riche, brave, aimé. de V. **Vous et celui qui vous mène, vous périrez.** Fén. **Toi-même tu te fais ton procès.** L. F.

1. The choice between **vous** and **tu** is often delicate, and a change from one to the other in addressing the same person is not uncommon with a change of feeling. LA COMTESSE (*avec anxiété*). **Que veux-tu dire ? . . .** — LÉONIE (*avec douleur*). **Oh ! mais, vous m'en voulez !** — LA C. (*avec impatience*). **Mais non, vous dis-je.** — LE. **Vous ne m'avez jamais parlé ainsi ! vous ne me dites plus — toi !** — LA C. (*avec émotion*). **Tu pleures ? Pardon, chère enfant, pardon !** Scribe et Legouvé. Cf. the verb **tutoyer**.

2. The use of **vous** for **tu** is very old, beginning even in Latin, but was at first deferential and used only in speaking to those who called themselves **nous**. (Cf. *a*.)

c. The third person il has an extended impersonal use as *it, there*. (Cf. 186 *b*.)

1. As redundant pronoun-subject (132 *b* 1, 2).

2. As subject of the impersonal verbs (214). **Il tonne, il neige, il grêle,** etc.

3. As impersonal subject of **être**. (Cf. 132 *b*.)

α. In expressions of time. **Il était dix heures, et tout dormait.** de V. (**c'était dix heures** would mean *that was ten o'clock*, said for instance on hearing a clock striking). **Il est aujourd'hui le six de mars.** Sév.

β. In the parenthetical **il est vrai**. **Tu peux sembler commettre, il est vrai, quelque erreur.** de Musset. **C'est vrai** is also used, generally with more emphasis.

173. The objective forms (accusative or dative, 97 *b*, *c*, *e*) with the pronouns **en** and **y** (97 *f*) immediately precede the verb. **Qu'on me laisse ici.** Mol. **Vasile se retira en me saluant.** About. **Il lui défendait même, mais toujours en vain, de lui en parler davantage.** Mérimée. **Ne me rappelez point une trop chère idée.** Rac. **Ne la laissez point échapper.** G. S.

a. In affirmative commands (not in prohibitions, see above) the pronoun-object follows its verb and is *joined to it* by a hyphen; moreover the tonic forms

moi and **toi** are used conjunctively in place of **me** and **te** (cf. 178 *c*). **Venge-moi, venge-toi, montre-toi digne fils d'un père tel que moi.** Corn. **Dites-moi qui vous êtes, dites-le-moi bien vite.** G. S.

1. **Voici** and **voilà**, old imperatives whose origin (**voi-ci, voi-là**, cf. 105, rem. 1) is obscured, do not follow this rule. **Me voici, te voilà**, etc.

2. In the second of two affirmative commands, connected by **et** or **ou**, it was formerly demanded that the regular order, i.e. pronoun before verb, should be followed. **Porte lui ma réponse et nous laisse en repos.** Corn. **Prends ton pic et me romps ce caillou.** L. F. **Poëte, prends ton luth, et me donne un baiser.** de Musset. This rule is now often disregarded. **Lève-toi, et donne-moi à boire.** de V. **Allez-vous-en et laissez-nous continuer notre route.** Mérimée.

b. A pronoun-object with two successive verbs (the second an infinitive) is placed before the one to which it logically belongs. **Vous devriez me ménager.** Mérimée. **Elle...ne veut pas m'effrayer.** Mérimée. **Il ne faut pas lui en vouloir.** Sandeau. **Il me fallut retourner au pays.** Mérimée.

1. A verb-complex consisting of a verb of causation or sense-perception and an infinitive is felt as a unit (cf. 244 *b* 1) and the object-pronouns are placed with reference to the first verb, except that the infinitive controls the place of its *reflexive* pronoun-object. **Vous m'avez aussi fait faire des souliers.** Mol. **Faites-le moi donc savoir.** Sandeau. **Il s'est fait tuer comme un lièvre.** Sandeau. But **J'aime à te voir ainsi te sacrifier.** Mérimée.

2. A greater license prevails in the earlier language, of which modern examples are not lacking. **Je m'allais mettre en colère contre vous.** Mol. **L'un voulait le garder, l'autre le voulait vendre.** L. F. **Du pain si tu veux, on n'en doit refuser à personne.** Mérimée.

174. The rules for the employment of the object-pronouns are for the most part obvious. (Cf. 97.)

a. **Me, te, se** (cf. 177), **nous, vous** do not distinguish gender, and are used both as direct and indirect object.

Il me (te, se, nous, vous) loue, *he praises me* (*thee, himself, us, you*). **Il me (te, se, nous, vous) donne quelque chose** *he gives something to me* (*thee, himself, us, you*).

b. **Le, la, lui, les, leur** (forms of F. L. **elle**; cf. 97, rem.) constitute a more complete declension, distinguishing case in both singular and plural, and gender as well in the accusative singular. **Je le (la, les) loue** *I praise him* (*her, them*). **Je lui (leur) donne quelque chose** *I give something to him* (or *her, them*). **Le, la, les** are used of things as well as of persons; for **lui, leur,** cf. 176. **Je me l'** (*it*) **imagine, parce que je le** (*it*) **sens.** Mol. **Je suis très content de ses lettres. — Vous les aviez lues!** Sandeau.

c. **Le, la, les** are used in the predicate after the verb **être,** as well as objectively after a transitive verb, often where no corresponding word is needed in English. **Vous devenez prudent, comme on doit l'être.** Mérimée. **Ce qu'étaient ces hommes, on le saura tout à l'heure.** Id. Both as object and as predicate it is important to distinguish between the variable **le (la, les)** and the invariable **le.**

1. When its antecedent is a noun or an adjective used substantively it conforms in gender and number. **La reine! vraiment oui: Je la suis en effet.** L. F. **Je plains cette abusée, et c'est moi qui la suis.** Corn.

2. When its antecedent is an adjective (or noun without an article used adjectively, cf. 157 *b*), or a clause, it is invariable. **Fus-je jamais si cruel que vous l'êtes?** Rac. **Tu n'es plus malheureux; moi, je le serai toujours.** V. H. **Je veux être mère, parce que je le suis.** Mol. **Je vous retrouve telle que je le désirais** (i.e. **de vous retrouver**). **Les fourmis sont industrieux, on le sait.** L. F.

d. The dative forms (**me, te, se, lui** (cf. *γ* below), ***nous, vous,*** **leur**) may stand in general to denote all

objective relations expressed with nouns by the preposition **à** (cf. 273), and thus are often used when the Latin would require the preposition **ad** with the accusative, but certain verbs of physical or mental direction still preserve the Latin idiom and require **à** with the disjunctive forms (cf. 180). Such are particularly *go*, *come*, *run*, *march*, etc., also **penser, songer, appeler, renoncer, avoir recours, faire attention, être à** *belong to*, etc. **J'aime ce qu'il me donne, et je plains ce qu'il m'** (cf. 273 *a* 3) **ôte.** Corn. **Le chien lui** (151 *c* 1) **lécha les pieds.** V. H. **Paul l'aimait et lui passait tout.** Sandeau. But **un jour Marie accourt à moi tout effrayée.** V. H. **L'armée d'Italie est à moi.** de V.

1. When the dative forms are emphasized or explained by an appositive noun or pronoun following, the latter must be preceded by the preposition **à**. **Je regrettais que ce misérable se fût fait justice à lui-même.** V. H.

175. En *of it*, *of them*, *some*, *any*, represents a noun with the preposition **de**. Owing to the wide range of the latter (cf. 272) the translation of **en** must vary with the context. It is often redundant to our idiom. It is used chiefly of things, of persons mostly as a plural in a partitive or indefinite sense, or to avoid repetition. **Leurs cheveux étaient blancs; plusieurs n'en avaient presque plus.** Fén. **Tous les berceaux de la France étaient des boucliers, tous les cercueils en étaient aussi.** de Musset. **Vous en êtes sûr? — Très sûr. — Vous en répondriez? — Sur ma tête.** Sandeau. **C'est elle, qui, sans s'en douter, paya la dette de son père.** Sandeau. **J'en (d'affreuses idées) suis à jamais délivré.** Mérimée. **Heureux le roi qui aime son peuple, qui en est aimé.** Fén. **Pour avoir de vrais amis, il faut être capable d'en faire, et digne d'en avoir.** *La Roche.*

a. **En**, as an adnominal genitive, is translated *its* or *their*, like the possessive adjective (cf. 181 *ff.*). The noun it limits must stand as object of a verb, or as subject or predicate nominative with **être**. **Quand on est dans un pays, il faut en suivre l'usage.** Montesquieu. **Cette vérité est déjà comprise à peu près de tous les bons esprits, et le nombre en est grand.** V. H. **Ils sont les enfants du peuple, ils en sont l'espérance et la force.** Fén.

b. **En** was formerly used of persons with far greater freedom than at present. **Un vieillard amoureux mérite qu'on en rie.** Corn. **Je te réponds de lui, moi; je m'en charge, et j'en ferai un bon soldat.** de V. (to avoid repetition of **de lui**.) **Savez-vous que j'en deviens jaloux, de votre frère?** G. S. In all periods of the language the disjunctive with **de** has been far commoner of persons.

c. **En** < **ende** is by derivation an adverb (cf. 97 *f*), *thence, from there, away*, and is frequently so used, giving rise to many idiomatic expressions, e.g. **s'en aller, s'en venir, en imposer**, etc.

176. Y *to it, to them* represents a noun with the preposition **à**, and is used freely of things both as a singular and as a plural, but of persons rarely any longer except to avoid the repetition of a disjunctive pronoun, otherwise **lui** or **leur** is required. **Vous avez peu de bien, joignez-y ma fortune.** Dorat. **Le canon y mêle ses bruits solennels.** Thiers. **Je ne crois pas au hasard...je n'y croirai jamais.** de Maistre. **Je n'y manquerai pas.** Mol. Of persons the antecedent immediately preceding. **C'est un homme équivoque, ne vous y fiez pas.** Acad. **Les conseilleurs... n'avaient rien stipulé pour ces malheureux. La Pucelle y songea seule.** Michelet.

a. **Y** was formerly used of persons with far greater freedom than at present. **Est ce peu de Camille? y joignez-vous ma sœur?** Corn. **Ah! qu'un seul des soupirs, que mon cœur vous envoie, S'il échappoit vers elle, y porteroit de joie!** Rac.

b. **Y** < **ibi** is by derivation an adverb (cf. 97 *f*), *here, there, thither*, and is frequently so used. **Il était ici tout à l'heure. Il y était, mais *il n'y est plus*.** Sandeau. **En quelque pays que j'aie été, j'y ai vécu *comme si* j'avais dû y passer ma vie.** Montesquieu. **Ne pourrais-je**

y aller vivre avec toi ? de Maistre. It gives rise to many idiomatic expressions, as **il y a, il y va de q. ch.**, etc.

REFLEXIVES.

177. The Latin syntax of reflexives is faithfully preserved in French, **me, te** (or **toi**), **nous** and **vous** being used reflexively for the first and second persons, but a particular form **se** < **se** being set apart for the reflexive of the third person. It serves as dative or accusative, as singular or plural, does not distinguish gender and is used also as the indefinite reflexive *one's self*. **Je me jette sur vous.** Mol. **Ôte-toi de mes yeux.** Id. **Éloignons-nous un peu.** Id. **La vraie gloire ne se trouve point hors de l'humanité.** Fén. **Mes gardiens se rétirèrent.** V. H. **Elle avait réussi à se concilier l'estime générale.** Balzac. **Il faut donc se hâter.** Scribe et Legouvé.

a. The emphatic reflexive is reinforced by the compounds with **même** (cf. 180 *g*). **Je me trompois moi-même.** Rac.

b. **Nous, vous** and **se** (pl.) are also used in a reciprocal sense (cf. 180 *g*, 174 *d* 1). **Ils s'aiment tous d'un amour fraternel.** Fén. **Nous ne nous sommes jamais quittées. Jamais nous ne nous quitterons.** Daudet.

1. When emphatic or ambiguous they are reinforced by **l'un l'autre** (cf. 200 *a* 1). **Ils étaient toujours prêts à se déchirer l'un l'autre.** Fén. **Ils se reprochent avec fureur l'un à** (174 *d* 1) **l'autre les crimes qu'ils ont faits.** Id.

ARRANGEMENT OF OBJECT-PRONOUNS.

178. When two object-pronouns are used with one verb, the direct object (accusative) stands nearest the verb, whether both precede or both follow (cf. 173 *a*). **La mort me l' (son ami) a ôté.** de Maistre. **Envoie-le-moi.** Grév. **Je te les rendrai, tu peux en être sûr.** Ead.

a. But the accusatives **le, la, les** always precede the datives **lui, leur,** making a special case except in affirmative commands (cf. 173 *a*). **Elle alla droit à lui, déganta une de ses mains et la lui tendit loyalement.** Sandeau. **Je les lui promettais, tant qu'a vécu son père.** Rac. **Donnez-le-lui, et elle me le remettra.** Mérimée.

b. **En** uniformly follows all other conjunctives; **y** follows all but **en** (cf. *d*). **Au lieu de t'en haïr, je t'en aimerai mieux.** Corn. **Il ne m'en a pas laissé le temps.** Sandeau. **L'incrédulité, souvenons-nous-en, est le fondement de toute sagesse.** Volt. **Allez-vous-en à vos chèvres.** Mérimée. **Mercure, au lieu de donner celle-là, Leur en décharge un grand coup sur la tête.** L. F. **Pour moi, je n'y en comprends pas.** Mol.

c. After the verb the regular forms **me** and **te** are used with **en** (making **m'en, t'en**), and not **moi** and **toi** (173 *a*). **Rends mes armes, va-t'-en.** Fén.

d. After the verb **-y-moi, -y-toi, -nous-y, -vous-y** occur; other combinations with **y** are rare. **La mer promet monts et merveilles: Fiez-vous-y: les vents et les voleurs viendront.** L. F.

REMARKS.—1. The above rules of order may be condensed as follows into a table showing the most frequent combinations:—

before the verb	1. Dat.	2. Acc.	3. Dat.	4	5	after the verb	1. Acc.	2. Dat.
	me, te, se	le, la	lui	y	en		-le, -la	-moi, -nous
	nous, vous	les	leur				-les	-lui, -leur

2. Many imaginable combinations such as an accusative of the first or second person with a dative of the third, e.g. **me lui** *me to him*, etc , are avoided by the use of the disjunctives with a preposition (cf. 180 *g*). **Nous nous donnons à eux.** de V. **Vous trouverez moins étrange que je me sois donnée à lui.** Mol. **La voilà (la paix) qui se présente à vous.** Fén. **Puis-je me fier à vous ?**

3. Particularly in the older language two conjunctive datives (cf. *174 d), one the* indirect object and one an ethical dative, are occasion-

ally found with one verb. **Dressez-lui-moi son procès comme larron et comme suborneur.** Mol. **Qu'on me lui fasse griller les pieds.** Id. **Le renard sort du puits, laisse son compagnon, Et vous lui fait un beau sermon.** L. F.

REPETITION OF THE CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

179. *a.* The subject-pronouns, particularly **je**, are commonly repeated with each verb to which they belong. **Je pars et je reviens.** Scribe et Legouvé. **Il pleure, il hésite, il bégaye, il tremble.** Fén. But **Il effraya mais fit horreur.** de V. **Elle s'assit à côté de moi, se fit donner une tasse, et tira à elle le sucrier.** Grév. Even with different tenses **Je suis et serai toute ma vie, madame,** etc. Courier.

b. The object-pronouns must be repeated, except sometimes in poetry. **Tout ce que j'aperçus me charme et m'intéresse.** La Harpe. **Elle la sert, la plaint et la console.** Mol. **Sa colère m'amusait et me touchait à la fois.** Grév. But **Je le crains et souhaite.** Corn.

DISJUNCTIVE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

180. The tonic or disjunctive forms **moi, toi, lui, elle, nous, vous, eux, elles,** and the reflexive **soi** are used as follows (cf. also 173 *a*):—

a. With prepositions. **Je ne crains rien pour moi.** de V. **Je veux contre elle conserver mon ressentiment.** Mol. **Le secret doit mourir avec moi.** Sandeau.

1. With **de** and **à** the disjunctives refer only to persons (cf. 175, 176), and even with other prepositions they are commonly avoided when things without life are referred to.

b. Absolutely, i.e. as subject, object, or predicate of a verb implied from the context. **C'est lui qui m'a donné le jour.—Lui?—Oui.** Mol. **Peu de gens l'ont connu mieux que moi.** Id.

c. In the predicate after **c'est, ce sont** (cf. 139 *c*). **C'est toi, mon pauvre La Flèche.** Mol. **Sera-ce vous ou moi?** de V.

d. For emphasis in apposition with a conjunctive pronoun (cf. 174 *d* 1). **Il ne voulut pas, lui; pourquoi? je l'ignore.** — **Je le sais moi.** Dumas. **Je suis paysan, moi aussi.** G. S.

1. The disjunctive forms of the third person are sometimes used for emphasis in the place of conjunctives. **Les partis s'arrêtaient; lui ne s'arrêtait pas.** Lamart. **Lui pensait à sa femme.** Daudet.

e. In a compound subject or object. In this case it is common to sum up the whole by the appropriate conjunctive form. **Lui, elle et toi, vous me promenez dans un amphigouri.** Grév. **La fortune nous a persécutés lui et moi.** Fén. The conjunctive subject is however not necessary. **Les soldats et moi l'attribuâmes d'abord à quelque incendie.** V. H.

f. As subject, when separated from its verb by a clause, or by a word other than **ne** or an object-pronoun (cf. 171 *a*). **Lui, brave, se balance tout exprès pour la taquiner.** Daudet. **Lui seul était digne de boire le sang et les larmes du Christ.** G. S. **Toi seul es selon mon esprit.** Dumas.

g. To form compound intensives with **même** *self* (205 *a*).

moi-même	*myself*	**nous-même(s)**	*ourself* (*selves*)
toi-même	*thyself*	**vous-même(s)**	*yourself* (*selves*)
lui-même	*himself*	**eux (elles)-mêmes**	*themselves*
elle-même	*herself*	**soi-même**	*one's self* (cf. *h.*)

These compound forms are used :—

1. In emphatic apposition. **Moi-même en cet adieu, j'ai les larmes aux yeux.** Corn. **Je m'oubliai moi-même.** de Maistre.

2. Alone as intensives, in various constructions, even as subject. **Je renais, je redeviens moi-même.** Ponsard. **Je crains pour vous-même.** de V. **Ce sera lui-même.** Id. **Choisis ou de les tuer toi-même ou de mourir avec eux.** V. H. **Si je veux vous quitter, vous fuir, c'est que vous-même à l'instant allez m'en donner l'ordre.** Sandeau.

3. To distinguish clearly between the reflexive and the reciprocal sense (cf. 177 *a* and *b* 1). **Ils ignorent les hommes, ils s'ignorent eux-mêmes.** Fén.

h. **Soi** is now rarely used except in the singular and indefinitely. **Chacun travaille pour soi.** Acad. **On a souvent besoin d'un plus petit que soi.** L. F. **Je ne méconnais point un acte noble en soi.** Ponsard. ***Tout ce qui est gentilhomme ne dépend que de soi.*** Volt. In other

uses it is mostly replaced by **lui, elle, eux, elles.** **De Thou était chez lui avec son ami.** de V. **Elle était occupée à se regarder elle-même.** de Maistre. **Il est des temps où les rois veulent être servis comme malgré eux.** de V. **Toutes les sociétés correspondaient entre elles.** Lamart.

1. Formerly **soi** was the regular disjunctive corresponding to **se.** Remnants of this wider usage are abundant in the older language and are still found, particularly in reference to things. **Un cœur toujours maître de soi.** Rac. **Il se craint . . . soi-même.** Id. **La poésie porte son excuse avec soi.** Boileau.

POSSESSIVES (98).

181. Possessive adjectives agree in gender and number with the substantives they limit (cf. 162), except that the masculine forms **mon, ton, son** must stand before feminine nouns and adjectives beginning with a vowel or **h** mute, e.g. **mon amie, ton humeur, son aimable fille,** etc. **Prenons parti, mon âme, en de telles disgrâces.** Corn. **Ta mémoire, ton nom, ta gloire vont périr, mais non pas ton amour, si ton amour t'est chère.** de Musset.

REMARK.—The use of masculine forms before vowels became established in the fourteenth century; the earlier and more correct syntax employed the forms **ma, ta, sa,** consistently, eliding the vowel to prevent hiatus, e.g. **m'amour** for **ma amour,** etc. **Tante** < **t'ante** < **ta ante** and **ma mie** < **m'amie** < **ma amie** are survivals of the older usage. **Et je veux mourir pour ma mie Sans la nommer.** de Musset.

a. In person, not of course in gender and number, they agree with their antecedent. **Son (sa, ses)** is therefore ambiguous and is translated *his, her,* or *its* according to the context. **Chaque gouvernement a sa nature et son principe.** Montesquieu.

1. The Latin restriction of **suus, a, um,** to a reflexive sense is wholly removed in French. **Suum filium amat, il aime son fils; ejus filium amo, j'aime son fils.** Cf. the double use of **leur.** **Suam patriam amant, ils aiment leur patrie; eorum patriam amamus, nous aimons leur patrie.** (Cf. 98, rem.)

b. The possessive adjective may be emphasized or explained by an appositive noun or pronoun with the preposition **à** (cf. 174 *d* 1, 273). **Son Dieu à lui, c'est la gloire.** Lamart. **Vous serez notre sœur à tous deux.** Ponsard.

c. The French often avoids the possessive where the English idiom requires it, using instead the definite article (151 *c* 1, 3) with or without a dative personal pronoun (cf. 174 *d*), or the conjunctive adverbial pronoun **en** (175 *a*).

182. Mon, ma, mes are used to form the titles of address **monsieur (M.), messieurs (MM.), madame (Mme.), mesdames (Mmes.), mademoiselle (Mlle.), mesdemoiselles (Mlles.).**

a. The possessive is similarly used with other words of address besides **sieur, dame,** etc., e.g. **Oh! ma sœur; non, ma sœur; rien, mon père; quoi, mon père?** etc. **Mon Dieu! mon père, vous n'avez pas lieu de vous plaindre.** Mol.

b. **Monsieur, madame,** etc., are used in polite address before the possessives in mentioning the relatives of the person addressed or spoken of, e.g. **Madame votre mère, mademoiselle votre sœur,** etc. **C'était un ordre de monsieur son père, de faire venir monsieur son fils à Paris.** Volt.

REPETITION OF THE POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

183. The possessive adjectives are repeated (cf. 156) before each successive noun they limit. **Son cœur, sa pensée et sa voix soupiraient comme de concert.** Chat. **Vous connaissez ma tendresse et ma complaisance.** de V.

a. Even where the nouns refer to the same person or thing. **Contre son bienfaiteur, son sauveur et son père.** L. F.

b. Before successive adjectives referring to different objects. **Je lui ai montré mes beaux et mes vilains habits.** Littré.

THE SUBSTANTIVE FORMS.

184. The substantive forms must be used whenever the noun limited does not immediately follow. **Son sang est ton sang, son bonheur est le tien, sa douleur est la tienne.** de Musset. **Ma main et la vôtre sont toutes rouges de sang.** de V. **Cet Achille, l'auteur de tes maux et des miens.** Rac. **La cause des rois était la sienne partout.** Lamart.

a. The use of *mine,* etc., in English as predicate adjective has no *exact parallel in* French. The personal pronouns with **à** are used in-

stead (cf. 174 *d*). **Nous sommes seuls, l'univers est à nous.** de Musset. **L'argent n'est pas à lui.** de V. **Ce que j'ai, c'est à toi.** Ponsard.

1. The use of **mien, tien,** etc., in this construction without the article is antiquated. **La belle Orante sera tienne.** Malherbe. **Ses intérêts sont miens.** Rotr. **Ainsi ce rang est sien, cette faveur est sienne.** Corn. **Marquer au cœur d'un petit signe qui était sien.** Ste-Beuve.

b. After **un, ce,** or **quelque** they are sometimes used adjectively, with a touch of familiarity or jocoseness. **Un mien cousin** (i.e. **un de mes cousins** *a cousin of mine*) **est juge-maire.** L. F. **Vous prétendez avoir recours à quelque mienne rhapsodie.** Volt. **Un vieux sien matelot était un cuisinier estimable.** Mérimée.

c. They may be used as independent substantives denoting property as in English (cf. **mea,** etc.). **Ces peuples, ignorant le tien et le mien, mangèrent quelques provisions du vaisseau.** Volt.

d. In commercial correspondence an antecedent **lettre** is sometimes understood. **La vôtre = votre lettre.**

DEMONSTRATIVES (99).

185. Of the two masculine singular forms (99 *a*) of the demonstrative adjective, **cet** is used before vowels and **h** mute, the shortened form **ce** before consonants, e.g. **ce roi, ce héros; cet ami, cet homme.** The use of the other forms needs no explanation. **Ces flambeaux, ce bûcher, cette nuit enflammée, Ces aigles, ces faisceaux, ce peuple, cette armée.** Rac.

a. **Cet (ce), cette** is to be translated *this* or *that*, and **ces** *these* or *those*, according to the context. For emphasis, clearness, or contrast the adverbs **ci** and **là** are appended to the noun limited, being joined to it by a hyphen, e.g. **ce papier-ci, ce papier-là; cette plume-ci, cette plume-là; ces lettres-ci, ces lettres-là. Vous connaissez donc cette route-là?** G. S.

b. The law for the repetition of the demonstrative adjective with successive nouns is the same as for the possessive. **Voyez-vous ces bois et ces maquis?** Mérimée.

PRONOMINAL FORMS (99 *b*).

186. The simple form **ce** *this, that, it* is used regularly in only two constructions.

a. As antecedent of the relative **qui, que** *which*, referring to things. **On craint plus ce qui est plus près de soi.** Lamart. **Ce qu'elle (la poésie) célèbre n'est pas encore mort, ce qu'elle chante existe déjà.** Id.

1. When a sentence is the antecedent of the relative, an appositive **ce** is inserted as grammatical antecedent.

2. After prepositions **ce** is the antecedent of a substantive **que**-clause (cf. 232 *b*). Hence **jusqu'à ce que, sur ce que, parce que,** etc. Cf. Latin **quod**-clause.

b. As impersonal subject of **être.** (Cf. the use of **il,** 172 *c*, 132 *b* and *c*.)

1. To point out a person or thing in the predicate. Here the verb is plural if the predicate be a plural noun or a plural pronoun of the third person (cf. 139 *c*), i.e. **c'est moi, toi, lui, elle, nous, vous**; but **ce sont eux, elles; ce sont des enfants,** etc. **Ce n'est pas moi, ce sont les miens.** V. H. **Ne sont-ce pas les oiseaux qui chantent?** Chateau. **Ce sont les ingrats, les menteurs, les flatteurs qui ont loué le vice.** Fén. **Sont-ce ses grands canons qui vous le font aimer.** Mol.

α. The above rule of agreement is that which now prevails. In the earlier language agreement with a predicate of the first or second person was not rare, i.e. either **c'est vous** or **c'estes vous,** etc., and the singular was not infrequently found with a third plural. **C'est eux qui ont bâti ce superbe labyrinthe.** Bossuet. **Est-ce eux qui ont incendié ta cabane?** Chateau. **Ce n'est pas les Troyens, c'est Hector qu'on poursuit.** Rac. Examples of the singular are still common when the predicate is followed by the relative **que.**

β. From this use **c'est** has become a mere grammatical device to introduce a word or phrase with emphasis. **C'est d'eux que tu descends, c'est de moi que tu viens.** Corn. **C'est dans la fleur qu'il faut préparer les fruits.** Fén. **C'est que vous êtes la vérité et la vie.** G. S.

γ. The question introduced by **est-ce que** (126 *c*) and that made by *an appended* **n'est-ce pas?** (126 *b*) are further developments of the

same construction. **Est-ce qu'il y a quelqu'un ici?** Chateau. **Il ne va pas mourir, n'est-ce pas?** Daudet.

2. Like **il** as grammatical subject to anticipate a logical subject clause, when a predicate substantive follows **être** (132 *c*). **C'était chose perilleuse au roi de régler sa conduite sur les discours d'une villageoise.** Barante.

α. With a predicate adjective in this construction **ce** in the literary style is rarely used except before words of emotion. **C'est triste de ne plus pouvoir dire "maman" à celle qui pardonne tout.** Daudet. In popular speech it is much more common.

3. **Ce** may also point backward to a notion already expressed:—

α. Redundantly to repeat the subject (132 *d* 1), particularly an infinitive. **M'ordonner du repos, c'est croître mes malheurs.** Corn.

β. Taking up impersonally a word or thought just expressed. **Si jamais homme a été capable de soutenir un si vaste empire, ç'a été Alexandre.** Bossuet. **Il y en avait un autre dans le nord, c'était la Suède.** Lamart.

REMARKS.—1. As impersonal subject of **être**, **ce** is often determined by the adverb **là** after the verb. **C'est là une situation tout à fait nouvelle.** Flammarion. **Sont-ce là mes seules fautes?** de V. **Ci** thus used is rare.

2. **Ce** may stand also impersonally before the quasi auxiliaries **devoir, pouvoir, venir** (244 *c*), with the dependent infinitive **être**; and exceptionally in the phrase **ce me semble**, e.g. **ce peut être moi**, etc.

187. The compounds **ceci** *this* and **cela** *that* are used in all constructions, generally without reference to a definite expressed antecedent. **Cela est bon, mais ceci vaut encore mieux.** Littré. **Je prends ceci, gardez cela**, etc. **Cela est beau, cela est grand, ô poëte! mais cela est triste.** Ste-Beuve.

a. **Cela** is colloquially contracted into **ça**. **Qu'est-ce que c'est que ça?** etc. **Tiens, dit elle, pose ça quelque part.** Grév.

b. When **cela** refers to persons it is used contemptuously or familiarly. **Une fille mortelle . . . , comment pouvez-vous aimer cela?** A. France. **Regarde Bernard, ça n'a pas encore vingt-huit ans.** Sandeau. **Les enfants, ça ne comprend pas et ça jase.** G. S.

1. Rarely **ce** is similarly used of persons. **C'est jeune, c'est faible, ça ne connaît pas le mal.** G. Droz. (Speaking of a young girl.)

188. The simple forms **celui, celle** *this one, that one,* **ceux, celles** *these, those,* refer to a definite antecedent, expressed or distinctly understood. They are regularly used in but two constructions:—

a. As antecedent of the relative. **Ceux qui font des heureux sont les vrais conquérants.** Volt. **Heureux celui qui possède un ami.** de Maistre. **Qu'il est faible celui que les passions dominent.** Chateau.

1. Even in this case the compound forms (see below) are used if the relative clause is merely explanatory or parenthetic, or if any word other than a preposition intervenes between the demonstrative and the relative. **Celui-là vit ignoré qui vit heureux.** Boniface. **C'est une réligion bien divine que celle-là qui a fait une vertu de l'espérance.** Chateau. **C'était celui-là même que je cherchais.** V. H.

b. Before a prepositional phrase, mostly introduced by **de.** **Son rôle de tribun cesse. Celui de l'homme d'état commence.** Lamart. **C'est votre cause, celle de votre royale famille, celle de toute votre nation.** de V.

REMARKS.—1. This restricted use of the simple forms is modern, and isolated examples of the wider usage formerly prevalent are still found. **La blessure faite à une bête et celle faite à un esclave.** Montesquieu.

2. For the etymology of **celui**, etc., see 99, rem. The Latin demonstratives have weakened gradually and become in French personal pronouns and articles; with **ecce** however they remain full demonstratives.

189. Except in the above constructions (188 *a* and *b*) the compound forms **celui-ci, celui-là,** etc. must now be used. **De toutes les batailles . . . celle-ci était peut-être la plus glorieuse.** Volt. **Ceux-ci couraient au feu pour l'éteindre, ceux-là pour faire du butin.** Thierry. **Je n'avais d'autre péché que celui-là.** Guizot.

a. The former . . . the latter are expressed by **celui-là . . . celui-ci. Vivaient le cygne et l'oison: Celui-là destiné pour *le regard* du maître, Celui-ci pour son goût.** L. F.

b. English *this is* and *that is* are often best translated by the words **voici** and **voilà** (cf. 173 *a* 1). **Voici votre roi, peuple, et voilà votre reine.** Corn. **Voilà un homme qui sera toujours mon ami.** Volt.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS (100).

190. Qui and **que** are used both of persons and things (cf. 100, rem.; also *a* 2; *b* 2, 3 below), without distinction of gender and number.

a. **Qui** *who*, *which*, *that*, is used:—

1. As subject. **Jamais je n'embrasserai celui qui m'aimait tant.** Fén. **L'amour avidement croit tout ce qui le flatte.** Rac.

α. **Qui** is also used as a compound relative for **celui qui** (less commonly for **ce qui**) as subject and after prepositions. **Qui ne dit mot consent.** Prov. **J'étais enivré d'une joie qu'on ne saurait faire comprendre à qui ne l'a point éprouvée.** V. H. **Je vais chez qui me plaît, et non chez qui m'invite** Ponsard.

2. After prepositions of persons, not of things unless personified (cf. 192 *a*). **Il y a du plaisir à rencontrer les yeux de celui à qui l'on vient de donner.** La Bruyère. **Ceux de qui** (cf. 193 *a*) **la conduite offre le plus à rire.** Mol.

α. In older usage also of things. **Deux pivots sur qui roule aujourd'hui notre vie.** L. F.

β. **Parmi** requires **lesquels (lesquelles)** even of persons (cf. 192 *a*).

b. **Que** *whom*, *which*, *that* is used:—

1. As direct object of a transitive verb. **Ils élisent un chef qu'ils déposent et qu'ils égorgent.** Volt. **Elle crut que ce qu'elle voyait était un rêve.** A. France.

2. As predicate nominative (< **quod**) of things with neuter verbs, especially **être**. **Aveugle que j'étais! je crus voir la nature.** Volt. **Je ne sais point, seigneur, ce que c'est que d'aimer.** Regnard. **Qu'est-ce que c'est?** etc.

3. In some old phrases as neuter subject, e.g. **advienne que pourra**. **L'architecture fait ce que bon lui semble.** V. H.

191. The disjunctive form (cf. 170) **quoi** *what*, as a relative, is now essentially compound; it is used only of things in an indefinite sense, chiefly after prepositions. **Approchez, j'ai de quoi Vous parler en secret.** Mol. **En conséquence de quoi un chien peut bien regarder un évêque.** A. France.

a. **Quoi** may stand as object at the head of a sentence, e.g. **quoi faisant,** etc. But **ce que** is more common. **Ce que voyant, le vertueux Tad la tira doucement par la manche.** A. France.

b. The antecedent of **quoi,** when expressed, is an indefinite, as **ce, rien,** etc. **Il faut avoir ce à quoi les hommes ont attaché partout la puissance.** Montesquieu.

192. Lequel (**laquelle,** etc.) varies for gender and number (cf. 169 and 162), and is used in all constructions, often where **qui** (**que**) would be ambiguous or indistinct. **Un homme s'est levé au milieu de l'assemblée lequel a parlé d'une manière extravagante.** Acad. **Il offrait tous les jours le sacrifice d'une brebis... à Apollon, par lequel il était souvent inspiré.** Fén.

a. With prepositions it is generally used of things, and of persons also after **parmi** (cf. 190 *a*). **La position critique dans laquelle elle se trouvait.** Balzac. **Il y avait en ce lieu une caverne affreuse, de laquelle on descendit sur les rives de l'Achéron, par lequel les dieux mêmes craignent de jurer.** Fén.

b. **Lequel** is occasionally employed adjectively in formal style. **Oui, sans laquelle clause Le présent testament sera nul.** Regnard. **Auquel cas il faisait répondre par son premier valet.** G. S.

193. *a.* **Dont** < **de onde** is commonly used in place of **de qui, duquel,** etc., as a possessive genitive meaning *whose, of whom, of which;* it may be separated from its

governing noun. **C'est un homme . . . dont les lumières sont petites.** Mol. **Le tableau dont je parle est un miroir.** de Maistre. **Il déracine Celui de qui la tête au ciel était voisine, Et dont les pieds touchaient à l'empire des morts.** L. F. **Ne doutez pas du bras dont partiront les coups.** Corn. **Messieurs les maréchaux dont j'ai commandement.** Mol. **On n'aime guère la personne dont on est aimé.** Fén.

1. **Dont** cannot be used to limit a noun in a prepositional phrase, nor when an ambiguity would arise (cf. 192). **Une voix émue au fond de laquelle on sentit des larmes.** de V. **Il existe un arbitre du sort des hommes duquel nous sommes tous les enfants.** J.-J. Rousseau.

2. *From whom, from which* are expressed generally by **de qui, d'où** (cf. *b* below), though **dont** may be used to express origin, descent, or agency. **Un procès d'où** (*on which*) **dépend ma fortune.** Acad. **L'esprit retourne au ciel dont il est descendu.** Rac.

b. **Où** *where,* **d'où, par où** are frequently used instead of a preposition with **lequel,** in the sense of *in which, from which, through* or *by which.* **Les endroits par où nous passons.** Acad. **Dans les circonstances malheureuses où nous sommes, l'endroit où nous vivions ensemble était pour nous une nouvelle patrie.** de Maistre.

1. In the older language occasionally even of persons. **Touchant cette pucelle d'où leur devait venir du secours.** Barante.

194. The indefinite **quiconque** < **quicomque** *whoever* as a compound relative is used of persons as subject and with prepositions. **Quiconque est loup agisse en loup.** L. F. **La cruauté ne saurait s'éteindre dans les entrailles de quiconque appartient à la race humaine.** G. S.

a. **Qui, quoi,** and **quel** followed by **que** are also used indefinitely, meaning, *whoever, whatever,* but always in a concessive sense (cf. 235 *d* 1). **Qui que ce soit, parlez et ne le craignez pas.** Rac. **Allons, quoi qu'il en soit, en attendre l'issue.** Corn. **Le grand mystère de la mort, quel qu'il soit, doit donner du calme.** De Staël.

195. The precision and clearness of the French syntax

forbid some constructions that are tolerated in other languages.

a. The relative is never omitted as in English. **Les livres que vous lisez**, *the books you read;* **les amis que nous aimons**, *the friends we love*, etc.

b. The relative is placed as near its antecedent as possible. Even the following is rather a poetical license: **nous perdons des moments en bagatelles pures, Qu'il faudrait employer a prendre des mesures.** Mol.

INTERROGATIVES (101).

196. Quel (**quelle**, etc.; cf. 162) *which*, *what*, as an interrogative, is used adjectively. **Quel service as-tu rendu? Quel bien as-tu fait?** Chateau. **Je ne sais quelle soudaine terreur me saisit.** Id.

a. It is used also in exclamations, *what*, *what a*, without an article. **Quelle figure!** Mol. **Quel animal!** Id. **Quelle belle confession!** Id.

b. As a predicate with **être** it is used both of persons and things, *who*, *what*. **Quel est donc le vrai Dieu?** G. S. **Quel est le plus heureux de nous deux?** Dumas. **Je ne sais point quel il est.** Mol. **Quel est ce cri?** Dumas.

c. **Lequel** (**laquelle**, etc., cf. 169), the same word with the article (cf. 164), is used substantively, *which*, *which one*. **De toutes ces façons-là laquelle est la meilleure?** Mol. **Lequel (des royaumes) est mûr pour ton rêve sublime?** Dumas.

197. Qui *who*, *whom*, is now used of persons only (cf. *a* 1), **que** (atonic) and **quoi** (tonic) *what*, of things only, as follows (cf. 101, rem.):

a. **Qui** in all constructions, without distinction of gender or number. **Qui peut savoir le destin qui m'amène?** Rac. **Et qui donc cherchiez-vous d'un air si soucieux?** G. S. **Vous souvient-il encore de qui vous êtes fille?** Corn.

1. In the older language **qui** is sometimes found of things as subject and as predicate nominative with **être**. **Mais, dis-moi, qui t'a porté à cette action?** Mol. **Qui te**

rend si hardi de troubler mon breuvage? L. F. **Qui sont-elles, ces trois opérations de l'esprit?** Mol.

2. **Qui . . . qui** are used sometimes as indefinite pronouns, *some . . . others*, cf. Lat. quis, Greek τὶς. **Quelques autres étaient restés en route; qui chez les bergers, qui dans un village, qui sur la roche nue.** About.

b. **Que** is used of things as direct object, and as predicate nominative with intransitive verbs, particularly **être**. **Que veux-tu? Qu'avez-vous? Que peut-on dire?** etc. **Que t'a-t-il répondu sur la sécrète brigue, Que font auprès de toi don Sanche et don Rodrigue?** Corn. **Qu'est ce que sa vue a pour vous de funeste?** Rac. **Que vous semble, mes sœurs, de l'état où nous sommes?** Id. (Cf. 198*a*).

1. In exclamations **que** with a partitive **de** (cf. 272 *a* 4 *α*) is very common in the sense of *how much! how many!* (cf. *c* 1 below). **Que de pleurs vont couler!** Rac. **Que les pleurs d'une amante ont de puissants discours!** Corn. **Que de fous et de méchants dans ce meilleur des mondes possibles!** D'Alemb.

2. **Que** is also used adverbially, *how* (cf. 283 *d*, rem. 1), or *why* (cf. Latin quid). **Que vous êtes joli! que vous me semblez beau!** L. F. **Pourquoi suis-je Romaine, ou que n'es-tu Romain?** Corn. **Que parlez-vous ici d'Albe et de sa victoire?** Id.

c. **Quoi** of things as the regular tonic form (cf. 180 *a*, *b*) is used with prepositions and absolutely. **À quoi pensent ces flots?** V. H. **Sur quoi comptez-vous donc?** de V. **Eh bien, quoi? que craiguez-vous?** Id. **Qu'est cela?** lui dit-il. — **Rien** — **Quoi! rien!** L. F. So as an elliptical indirect question after **savoir**, e.g. **je ne sais quoi** = Lat. **nescio quid.**

1. Also in questions and exclamations with a partitive **de** (cf. *b* 1 above). **Quoi de plus heureux que ce qui vous arrive?** Acad. **Quoi de plus simple encore? Se venger de ceux qui nuisent à nos projets en renversant les leurs, c'est ce que chacun fait.** Beaumarchais.

198. Certain circumlocutions are much used. (Cf. 126.)

a. **Qu'** (197 *b*) **est-ce qui?** (190 *a* 1) *what is it that, what* is the regular form for the subject, referring to things (cf. 197 *a* 1). **Qu'est-ce qui se passe là-bas?** Daudet.

b. Analogous forms very frequent in colloquial style are, for things (as object) **qu'est-ce que** (190 *b* 1); of persons (as subject) **qui** (198 *a*) **est-ce qui**, (as object) **qui est-ce que. Qu'est-ce que vous voulez faire de cette bête ?** Grév. **Qu'est-ce qu'ils faisaient ?** Daudet. **Qui est-ce qui compose tous ces airs ?** G. S. **Qui est-ce que tu entends par là ?** Mol.

c. Colloquial speech has also for persons (as subject) **qui est-ce que c'est qui**, (as object) **qui est ce que c'est que**; for things (as subject) **qu'est-ce que c'est qui**, (as object) **qu'est-ce que c'est que.**

INDEFINITES.

199. As indefinites are classed a considerable number of words more or less like pronouns, which refer to some person or thing indefinitely. The commonest are as follows:—

a. Construed as adjectives: **autre** *other,* **chaque** *each,* **même** *same,* **quelconque** *whatever, whatsoever* (always follows its noun), **quelque** *some, several,* **tel** *such.*

b. As substantives or adjectives: **aucun** and **nul** *no, no one,* **plusieurs** *several,* **tout** *all, every,* **un** *one.*

c. As substantives only: **autrui** *others,* **chacun** *each one,* **on** *one,* **personne** *nobody, no one,* **quelqu'un** *some one,* **rien** *nothing.*

200. Autre < **altru** *other.* **On se voit d'un autre œil qu'on ne voit son prochain.** L. F. **Autres temps, autres mœurs.** Prov. **Je suis père, seigneur, et faible comme un autre.** Rac. **Comment cela m'est-il arrivé ? Pourquoi ces choses et non pas d'autres ?** Beaumarchais.

a. In combination with **un** it is used in several idiomatic phrases.

1. **L'un l'autre** *each other,* **les uns les autres** *one another* (cf. 177 *b* 1). The second part of the combination may be governed by a preposition. **Nous fûmes sans amour attachés l'un à l'autre.** Rac. **Le roi et le président étaient assis à côté l'un de l'autre.** Thiers.

2. Analogous phrases are **l'un et l'autre** *both,* **l'un ou l'autre** *either,* **ni l'un ni l'autre** *neither.* **Mais vous serez *trompés l'un* et l'autre.** Mol.

b. **Autres** is idiomatically used with **nous** and **vous** to emphasize them as representing a distinct class. **On voit de quelle considération nous autres nous devons être dans un État.** Mol. **Vous autres femmes des villes, vous vous inquiétez toujours de ce qui est convenable; nous autres femmes de village, nous ne pensons qu'à ce qui est bien.** Mérimée.

c. **Autrui** < **altrui** (F. L. dative of **alter**, cf. 97, rem., 99, rem.) was formerly used as a possessive dative in the sense of **alienus** *belonging to another*, e.g. **l'autrui cheval, equus alienus**; now however it is dissociated from **autre** and is used substantively after a preposition or rarely as a direct object. **Je ne veux rien d'autrui.** Corn.

201. Chaque (quisque) *each* makes with **un** the substantive form **chacun, e** *each one, every one.* They are individual and exclusive and admit no plural (cf. **tout**, below). **Chaque âge a ses devoirs.** J.-J. Rousseau. **Chaque tête, chaque avis.** Prov. **Chacun court après le bonheur.** Beaumarchais.

202. Tout, e, tous (cf. 92 *d*), **toutes** *all, every* is inclusive. Before the definite article it means *all, whole;* without an article *every, any;* pl. *all, all kinds of.* **Toute la ville** *the whole city,* **toute ville** *every city.* **Vous verrez dans une seule vie toutes les extrémités des choses humaines.** Boss. **Tout père frappe à côté.** L. F. **Toute philosophie ne parle pas dignement de Dieu.** La Bruyère. **À tout propos, à toute occasion,** etc. Substantively: **En France tout arrive, tout passe, et tout revient.** Sandeau.

a. In a few phrases the article is irregularly omitted or employed. These are preserved from an older usage, e.g. **à toute force, de toutes sortes, toujours (tous jours), tous deux** or **tous les deux** *both,* etc., and on the other hand **tous les jours** *every day,* **tous les ans,** etc.

b. **Tout** is often used adverbially, but even then if the noun or adjective following begins with a consonant it varies for gender and number. **Tout émotionnée et toute confuse.** G. S. **Ô beauté tout aimable!** Mol. **Enfin me**

voilà toute reposée, toute tranquille, toute contente. Sév. **Ces lois . . . l'ont rétabli presque toutes seules.** Boss.

1. **Tout** is used idiomatically before the gerund with **en** to emphasize the simultaneousness of two actions (see 255 *c*, rem. 2). **Tout en marchant elle lui parlait de son frère.** Mérimée.

2. Followed by a dependent **que**-clause it is concessive, *however*, *although* (cf. 235 *d* 2). **Je sens que je l'aime, Tout rebelle qu'il est.** Rac.

REMARK.—The variability of **tout** in adverbial function is a remnant of an older period of the syntax, when adjectives used adverbially were often inflected (cf. 162 *c*). Even yet the adverb **tout** is sometimes inflected beyond the limits of the rule given above (*b*), e.g. **toute expliquée et toute dévoilée.** G. S.

c. **Tout le monde** is a very common phrase for *everybody*. **Tout le monde se leva (de la table) avec elle.** de V.

203. Quelque (now written as a simple word although originally **quel que**, separable; cf. 194 *a*) *some* makes the substantive form **quelqu'un** for persons, and **quelque chose** *something* for things. **À quelque temps de là, la cigogne le prit.** L. F. **Quelques crimes toujours précèdent les grands crimes.** Rac. **Si j'aimais quelqu'un, je n'aurais de plus grand plaisir que de le voir aimé de tout le monde.** Mol. **Il est bon qu'un mari nous cache quelque chose.** Corn.

a. **Quelque** with a following **que**-clause (cf. 194 *a*) is used adjectively meaning *whatever*, and adverbially *however*. **À quelque prix qu'on mette une telle fumée, L'obscurité vaut mieux que tant de renommée.** Corn. **Quelque méchants que soient les hommes, ils n'oseraient paraître ennemis de la vertu.** La Rochefoucauld.

b. With numerals and the like it is used adverbially in the sense of *about, nearly*. **Et quel âge avez-vous? Vous avez bon visage. — Hé! quelque soixante ans.** Rac.

c. In **quelqu'un** both parts are variable, i.e. **quelqu'une, quelques uns, quelques unes. Le czar se tourna, à cette réponse, vers quelques uns de ses courtisans.** Volt.

d. **Quelque chose** though written separately is felt as one word, and an adjective in agreement is masculine (cf. 84 *c* 4). ***Attendez-vous* à voir quelque chose de beau.** Piron.

204. The corresponding negatives are: **aucun, nul, pas un, personne, rien.**

a. **Aucun, e; nul, le; pas un, e** are used both of persons and things, and vary for gender. They are now rarely used in the plural. **Aucun n'est prophète chez soi.** L. F. **Ce que tu tiens du ciel, nul ne me l'a promis.** de Musset. **Pas un ne le dit.** Laveaux.

b. **Personne** (cf. 84 *c* 4) *nobody* is used only of persons, **rien** *nothing* only of things. **Qui m'appelle? Personne.** de Musset. **Rien ne manquait au festin.** L. F.

c. These are used not only as true negatives, but also in the sense of *any, any one, anything,* in certain constructions where the negative is implied. **Sans espoir de nulle couronne humaine ou divine.** de V. **Y a-t-il rien de plus bas et de plus honteux que cette passion?** Mol.

REMARK.—**Rien** < **rem, personne** < **persona, aucun (alqu'un** < **alque unu)** still retain traces of their original positive sense (cf. 266 *a*), e.g. in the phrase **aucuns disent** or **d'aucuns disent. D'aucuns m ont dit qu'elle me ressemblait un peu.** G. S.

205. Même < F.L. **metepsmu** *same* must stand immediately before its noun. **Une même ardeur, une même joie court dans les rangs, les mêmes chants apprennent aux échos de ces monts le présence, la gaité, la victoire de nos soldats.** Salvandy.

a. After a noun or pronoun (cf. 180 *g*) it is intensive, meaning *self.* **Les dieux mêmes combattront pour eux.** Fén.

b. As an adverb it is invariable and means *even.* **Ses amis même n'osent l'aborder.** Fén. **Là l'honneur, se mêlant partout, entre dans toutes les façons de penser et toutes les manières de sentir et dirige même les principes.** Montesquieu.

206. On < **omo** (etymologically nominative to the accusative **omme** < **omne,** cf. German man : Mann), a

very common pronoun, has no English equivalent and is variously rendered by *one*, *people*, *they*, *we*, etc., or by the passive (cf. 217). It is construed grammatically as masculine singular. **Peut-on haïr sans cesse, et punit-on toujours?** Rac. **On courait dans les églises, on priait, et même on pleurait beaucoup.** de V. **Ce qui ne signifie pas que dans une certaine république on soit vertueux.** Montesquieu.

a. **On** may be preceded by the definite article after the words **et, ou, où, si, que,** where it serves to prevent hiatus. This is a survival from the time when **on** was still felt as a noun. **Si l'on m'y force, je signerai.** de V. **Oui, il y a un avenir; et l'on y pense souvent, si l'on n'en parle jamais.** Daudet.

1. The rule however is not mandatory; **qu'on** is quite as common as **que l'on**, and in any case the article is not used if an unpleasant repetition of *l*'s would result. **Decidée à avoir des convulsions, si on la séparait de son ami.** Dumas.

b. When **on** manifestly refers to a feminine noun or to a plural, an adjective in agreement with it usually follows the sense as to its gender and number. **On n'est jamais indépendante des hommes.** de V. **Seule, on se croit maîtresse de sa destinée.** Id. **Arrivés, on se mêle, et on travaille en commun.** Thiers.

207. Tel, le, *such* stands between the indefinite article and the noun. **Une telle conduite vous fait horreur.** Acad. It has several idiomatic uses:—

a. To designate a person or thing without naming it, *so and so, such and such, many a one.* **Un tel a fait un mauvais pas dans une telle affaire.** Mol. **Tel ou tel prince.** L. F. **Tel excelle à rimer qui juge sottement.** Boileau.

b. **Tel . . . tel**, correlatively *as . . . so.* **Tel saint, tel miracle.** Prov. **Tel arbre, tel fruit.** Prov.

c. **Tel quel** (**quel** being a relative used elliptically) *such what*, i.e. *such as it is, of whatever sort.* **Des gens tels quels, une femme telle quelle,** *etc.* **Son patois, traduit . . . en Italien tel quel.** Mérimée.

208. Some less common indefinites are:—

a. **Maint** *many* (*a*), e.g. **maintes fois**.

b. **Quant** *as many*, e.g. **toutes et quantes fois.**

c. **Néant** *nothing*, a rare word.

VERBS.

CLASSIFICATION.

209. From the point of view of syntax verbs may be variously classified:—

a. As independent verbs and auxiliaries.

1. Auxiliaries are used to make the compound forms in the conjugation of the independent verb (cf. 109), i.e. the compound tenses of the active and the whole passive voice.

b. As personal and impersonal verbs.

1. The subject of a personal verb may be of any person and of either number, **j'aime, tu aimes**, etc.

2. Impersonal verbs are such as are used only in the third person singular (and the infinitive) with the pronoun **il** (172 *c* 2) as subject, e.g. **il faut, il doit pleuvoir**, etc.

c. Personal verbs are again either transitive or intransitive.

1. Transitive verbs are such as admit of a direct object. **Dieu a créé le ciel et la terre.** Acad.

α. Where the object refers to the same person or thing as the subject the verb is called reflexive (115), e.g. **je me couche, il se sauve, vous vous levez**, etc.

β. Many verbs transitive in English are intransitive in French, e.g. **approcher (de), jouir (de), obéir (à), commander (à)**, etc. (cf. 273 *a* 1 *α*). The reverse is less common, e.g. **écouter.**

2. Intransitive verbs either take no object or at most an indirect object, i.e. one introduced by a preposition.

REMARKS.—1. In French Grammar there is no advantage in distinguishing intransitive from neuter verbs. In this book intransitive verbs include all that are not transitive.

2. The distinction between transitive and intransitive is not absolute. Transitives become intransitives when used without any object being thought, e.g. **tous les animaux mangent et boivent.** Again, many intransitives may be used causatively and thus become in fact transitive, e.g. **sortir = faire sortir. En lui voyant sortir d'un tiroir les originaux mêmes de toutes les lettres.** J.-J. Rousseau. So **cesser = faire cesser, descendre = faire descendre,** etc. Again, verbs of *breathing, smelling*, etc., are used in the sense of *breathe of, smell of*, with an object. **Cet or sent-il le sang?** Chateaubriand. **Tout y respire la vie et le travail.** Sandeau.

3. Even intransitives admit an inner object, i.e. a noun of cognate meaning with the verb (cf. Latin Cognate Accusative). **Puisse-t-elle pleurer tous les pleurs de ses yeux!** Ponsard. **Il joue un jeu d'enfer.** Id. So **dormir un sommeil, vivre une vie,** etc. In French other constructions, e.g. with the preposition **de,** are more common. **Cinq-Mars . . . rit aussi d'un rire amer.** de V.

THE AUXILIARIES.

210. Avoir is used to make the compound tenses of—

a. All transitive verbs, including intransitives used in a causal sense. (Cf. 209, rem. 2.)

b. The great mass of intransitives, e.g. **être, courir, obéir,** etc., etc.

c. All proper impersonal verbs. (Cf. 214.)

REMARK.—For **abeo** as a suffix to form all futures and conditionals see 105, rem. 9.

211. Être as an auxiliary is used to form—

a. The entire passive voice of all transitive verbs (cf. 116).

b. The compound tenses of all reflexives (cf. 115).

c. The compound tenses of a few intransitive verbs, denoting motion or change of condition, chiefly **aller, arriver, choir, décéder, mourir, naître, tomber, venir** (with **de-, par-, revenir**). Also **éclore, entrer (rentrer), partir, retourner, sortir,** but these last occasionally have **avoir.**

212. In the case of a few verbs of the same general class usage fluctuates.

a. Some take **avoir** when the action itself, **être** when *the resulting* state, is had in view. Such are **accourir,**

cesser, croître, déchoir, descendre, disparaître, échapper, échoir, grandir, monter (remonter), passer, vieillir. Mon frère a vieilli de quinze ans pendant les quinze jours. G. S. **L'horreur que m'inspire cet homme est passé dans mon sang.** de V.

b. In some instances the sense varies more widely still with the auxiliary, e.g. **convenir (avoir)** *suit*, **(être)** *agree;* **demeurer (avoir)** *dwell, live,* **(être)** *stay, remain behind*; **expirer (avoir)** *perish* of persons, **expirer** *expire, run out* of things, e.g. a lease. Cf. also **échapper, rester.**

REMARKS.—1. All transitive verbs should theoretically be compounded with **avoir** (cf. 109 *a*), and all intransitives with **être** (cf. 109 *b*), but in the history of the language many verbs have changed now one way now the other, and usage has never been entirely settled in individual cases. On the whole **avoir** has been gradually enlarging its domain, until now but a handful are left to **être.** On the other hand, beginning with deponents used reflexively, e.g. **me miseratus sum, me ultus sum,** etc., **être** has come to be used for all reflexives (cf. 115), e.g. **je me suis plaint, je me suis trompé,** etc. In vulgar speech **avoir** has come to be nearly universal (as *have* in English), such forms even as **j'ai venu, je m'ai trompé** being heard.

2. The distinction, made by grammarians (212 *a*) in the case of those verbs where usage varies, is not one justified by the history of the language, nor altogether by present unvarying custom, but it represents the tendency of the more careful writers of the present century.

213. Several other verbs have at various times performed the rôle of quasi-auxiliaries. The following are still so used:—

a. As auxiliaries of tense:—

1. **Aller** *go, be going,* in the sense of an immediate future, like the Latin first periphrastic conjugation (cf. the English idiom). **Puisqu'elle va combattre, elle va s'agrandir.** Corn. **Ma fortune va prendre une face nouvelle.** Rac.

2. **Venir (de)** with the infinitive (247 *d*) has the sense of an immediate past. **Nous ne venons que d'arriver.** Mol. **Il invita le capitaine qui venait de passer six semaines en Corse.** Mérimée.

b. As modal auxiliaries with a complete conjugation, not defective as are the corresponding English verbs:—

1. **Vouloir** *will, wish.* **Il eût voulu pouvoir se tenir à la porte d'entrée pour voir qui paraîtrait.** de V.. In English the perfect of the dependent infinitive is illogically used, *he would like to have been able*, etc.

2. **Pouvoir** *can, be able.* **J'aurais pu faire de mon garçon un monsieur.** Daudet. *I could have made*, etc. (Cf. above.)

3. **Devoir** *owe, ought.* **N'as-tu pas dû cent fois te le faire redire?** Rac.

4. The conditional of **savoir** is used as a synonym of the present of **pouvoir.** **Je ne saurais assez reconnaître cette générosité.** Grév. **On ne saurait changer son naturel.** Ead.

REMARK.—Because of the defective conjugation of the corresponding English verbs, various devices are necessary in translating the French forms, especially the conditional mood (cf. 229 *a* 2).

IMPERSONAL VERBS.

214. Impersonal verbs are such as are used in the third person singular with the impersonal **il** (172 *c* 2) as subject. They are classified as:

a. Proper impersonal verbs, which are never used with a personal subject. These are mostly descriptive of the weather, e.g. **bruiner, geler, dégeler, grêler, neiger, pleuvoir, tonner,** etc. Also **falloir,** etc.

b. Occasional impersonal verbs, such as are also used personally. As impersonals they often have a somewhat specialized meaning, e.g. **il arrive** *it happens,* **il importe** *it is of consequence* **il semble** *it seems,* **il vaut mieux** *it is better.* Such are also **y avoir, faire, paraître, plaire, résulter,** etc.

215. A few present some idiomatic difficulty.

a. **Il s'agit** *the question is, it concerns.* **Il s'agissait de Claude.** V. H. *the question was of Claude.*

b. **Il y a** *there is, there are,* the noun following as object. **Il y avait quelque peuple dans la place.** V. H. **Il y eut bien quelques petits accidents.** Grév.

1. It is used idiomatically of time, reckoning back from the present, *to* be translated *ago, since,* etc. **Il y a quatre siècles, mes aïeux vous auraient ouvert leur porte.** Dumas.

c. **Il est** used of time (172 *c* 3 *a*), and less commonly in the sense of il y a *there is, there are.* **Il n'est pas de couronne dont son front n'eût rehaussé l'éclat.** Sandeau.

d. **Il fait** *it is,* to describe the state of the weather or the atmosphere, e.g. **il fait beau temps,** *it is fine weather,* **il fait chaud, froid, du vent, de l'orage, jour, nuit,** etc.

e. **Il faut** *it is necessary, must* is construed—

1. With an infinitive (cf. 240 *a* 1), the subject of which is either unexpressed, or stands as a dative conjunctive pronoun before **faut** (cf. 173 *b*). **Que faut-il faire pour cela?** Grév. **Me faudra-t-il combattre encore vos cruautés?** Rac.

2. With a subjunctive **que**-clause (cf. 234 *a*). **Richelieu a bien ses coquins, il faut que vous ayez les vôtres.** de V.

3. Absolutely in the sense of *there is lacking,* e.g. **que vous faut-il?** *what do you want?* **À cette âme, il fallait nécessairement une haute passion.** Balzac.

REFLEXIVE VERBS.

216. A verb conjugated with an object-pronoun of the same person as the subject is called reflexive. **Elle... s'étend, et s'enfle, et se travaille.** L. F. **Je me haïssais, je me maudissais, je me méprisais.** V. H. The object-pronoun may be:—

a. The direct object. Almost any transitive verb may be thus used. Very common are **s'appeler, s'arrêter, se hâter, se lever, se tromper, se trouver,** etc., or more idiomatically, **se battre** *fight,* **se mettre (à)** *put one's self* (*at*), *begin,* **se porter** *be, do* (of health), **se promener** *take a walk,* **se sauver** *run away,* **se servir (de)** *serve one's self* (*with*), *make use* (*of*), etc. **Il me comprit et se mit à sourire avec amertume.** V. H. **La paix se conclut.** L. F. Often the best translation is the English passive, or an intransitive verb. **Le ciel se couvrit de nuages et le vent s'éleva.** G. S. **Le jour s'approchait et les préparatifs se faisaient.** Thiers.

b. The indirect object. Such may be transitive and have a direct object beside, e.g. **se donner** *give to one's self,*

s'imaginer, se prendre, se rappeler, etc. **Il se figurait qu'il allait peut-être l'y retrouver.** V. H. **Il se rappela mille détails.** Id. Or they may be intransitive with no other object, e.g. **se nuire** (cf. **sibi nocere**), **se commander,** etc. **Motif (la vertu) qui se suffit à lui-même et qui exclut tous les autres.** Montesquieu.

c. It may stand without definite function, e.g. **s'écrier, s'écrouler, s'emparer, se mourir, se réfugier;** or more idiomatically **se passer (de)** *dispense* (*with*), **s'en aller** *go away* (cf. 175 *c*), **s'agir (de)** *concern* (cf. 215 *a*), etc. **Je me passerais bien de votre amitié.** Mol. **Il s'agit d'autre chose que de souper.** Id. **C'en est fait, je n'en peux plus, je me meurs, je suis mort, je suis enterré.** Id.

REMARK.—In many cases the force of the pronoun is not appreciable. As the habit of using verbs pronominally extended, many which could not be genuinely reflexive became by analogy pronominal in conjugation. This abuse is much less common now than formerly; many verbs which at one time had assumed a pronominal inflection have again lost it, e.g. **cesser, commencer, dîner, partir, vivre,** etc.

THE PASSIVE VOICE.

217. Stating an action passively serves to bring into prominence the object, which becomes the subject of the passive sentence. The agent is added as a prepositional adjunct. **Chaque famille est gouvernée par son chef.** Fén.

a. Excepting **obéir** no intransitive verb forms a passive. **Il fut promptement obéi.** V. H. (Cf. 209 *c* 1 *β*.)

1. There is nothing in French like the Latin (or German) impersonal passive of intransitive verbs. Cf. **patri obeditur** (dem Vater wird gehorcht), and **le père est obéi,** but **l'enfant obéit au père.**

b. The prepositions **par** (277 *c* 1), and less commonly **de** (272 *b* 2 *α*), introduce the agent or instrument. **Cette guerre a été conduite par un habile général.** Acad. **Elle était adorée de son fils.** Balzac. **Il fut suivi aussitôt de *tous les* survivans.** Mérimée.

c. The passive seems heavy in French and is used much less than in English. Its place is supplied by the active with indefinite subject **on** (206) and by the reflexive (216 *a*).

d. The active infinitive, not the passive, is used after verbs of causation and the like (244 *b*). **Je suis ici pour faire observer les lois.** Balzac. Cf. *I am here to cause the laws to be observed.*

THE INDICATIVE MOOD.

218. The indicative is properly the mood of the real, i.e. of direct statements or questions. **Il but à longs traits. Sa soif était ardente.** V. H.

The sphere of the indicative has been gradually enlarged at the expense of the subjunctive. As compared with the Latin syntax it has gained chiefly as follows:—

a. In indirect discourse and indirect questions. **On me demanda pourquoi je pleurais.** Fén. **Dites qui est celle que vous aimez.** Mol.

b. Conditional sentences (147 *g*) have for the most part the indicative (cf. 233 *c*, 235 *c* 1). **Si je ne retrouve mon argent, je me pendrai moi-même après.** Mol. **Si vous n'aviez été qu'un moyen au lieu d'un but, que diriez-vous ?** de V.

c. In clauses of pure result (cf. **ut** with subj.). **Ce sang empoisonnait ses flèches, en sorte que toutes les blessures qu'elles faisaient étaient incurables.** Fén. (Cf. 235 *b* 1.)

TENSES OF THE INDICATIVE (104 *a*, *b* 1).

THE PRESENT TENSE.

219. The present denotes an action or state as now existing, or absolutely without reference to time. **J'ai dix-huit ans ! Il n'y paraît guère, j'en conviens, mais enfin j'ai dix-huit ans tout de même.** Grév. **Tout ce qui est dans la nature est dans l'art.** V. H.

a. The French does not, in the present tense, distinguish kind of action, as simple, continuing, repeated, etc., e.g. the one form **j'aime** corresponds to *I love, I do love,* and *I am loving.*

1. **Être** with a present participle, e.g. **je suis aimant**, was a common construction in the sixteenth century, but is now entirely obsolete.

b. The present with expressions of time is used in French (as in Latin) to denote an action begun in the past and still continuing, where the English idiom requires the perfect (cf. 215 *b* 1). **Y a-t-il longtemps que vous êtes là?** Mol. **Depuis qu'elle n'est plus, quinze jours sont passés.** de Musset. Cf. **Mithridates annum jam tertium et vicesimum regnat.** Cic.

1. Similarly the imperfect, of an action continuing in the past, having been begun at a previous time. (Cf. 221 *b*.)

c. The present is used freely, in principal clauses, in the sense of a future (cf. 226 *c*). **Je pars et je reviens.** Scribe et Legouvé. **Si personne n'en veut, je le prend.** Daudet.

1. After **si** *if*, in a future condition, the present is required (cf. 145 *g* 1 *β*, 221 *c*.)

d. In vivid narration the present is used for a past tense (cf. Latin historical present) much more freely than in English. **L'arbre tient bon, le roseau plie, Le vent redouble ses efforts et fait si bien qu'il déracine,** etc. L. F.

1. Similarly the perfect may stand for the pluperfect, and the future and future perfect for the present and perfect conditional (cf. 229 *a* 3, *b*, 230). **Là passera aussi une armée: Bonaparte l'a dit; il a marqué du doigt la route. Martigny et Saint Pierre sont encombrés d'apprêts qui attestent aux soldats que leur chef a pensé à tout.** Salvandy.

THE PAST TENSES.

220. Of the past tenses, the imperfect, the preterit, and the perfect (104 *a*, *b* 1) need to be carefully discriminated. In the literary style all are used and their relations may be in general expressed thus: imperfect: preterit: perfect = Latin imperfect: historical perfect: perfect definite = Greek imperfect: aorist: perfect.

REMARK.—The Latin perfect came to be used more and more as an historical tense, and when the new compound perfect (cf. 109) had become fairly established it usurped entirely the place of the old perfect definite. A similar process is going on now in French. The new (i.e. compound) perfect in the popular speech has almost if *not* quite crowded out the preterit, and is used in the same two

senses that the Latin perfect possessed. While the preterit still holds its own in the language of literature, the aoristic use of the compound tense is by no means uncommon even there (cf. 223 *b* 1), and seems to be gaining ground.

221. The imperfect denotes an action or state as continuing or repeated in past time, particularly in description. **Un silence profond régnait dans l'assemblée.** de V. **Sa poitrine nue se soulevait avec force et il semblait près d'étouffer. Cependant la montre oscillait, tournait et quelque fois lui heurtait le but du nez.** Mérimée. **Pendant qu'un Franc lançait le trait, son compagnon tenait la corde.** Thierry. **De temps en temps je soulevais péniblement ma poitrine, et j'appelais de toute ma force.** V. H.

a. It discriminates the *kind* of action, performing for past time one part of what the present performs for present time. (Cf. 219 *a.*)

b. With expressions of time the imperfect has a use corresponding to that of the present (219 *b*), and must be translated by a pluperfect. **J'étais** (*had been*) **si malheureuse depuis quinze jours.** Scribe et Legouvé. **Le génie de notre nation fermentait depuis plusieurs siècles.** Villemain.

c. After **si** *if* it stands with the sense of a present conditional (cf. 219 *c*, 145 *g* 1 *γ*, 229 *b* 2). **Si sa santé le lui permettait, il sortirait.** Scribe.

222. The preterit denotes an action or state simply as occurring in time wholly past, i.e. in the way of simple narration. If a time be mentioned the present can form no part of it. **La princesse se leva et se mit à marcher.** Grév. **On fit retirer les témoins, auxquels un huissier ouvrit une porte étroite.** de V. **Il partit hier.** Acad.

a. As the tense of simple past action it performs for past time one part of what the present performs for present time. (Cf. 219 *a.*)

b. A very common use of the preterit is to interrupt the

imperfect. **J'étais en un lieu sûr, lorsque je vis passer Les cent têtes d'un hydre.** L. F.

223. The perfect has a twofold use (cf. 220, rem.):—

a. To denote an action or state as now completed (= Lat. perfect definite). **Jusqu'ici j'ai été papillon, je deviens ver à soie.** Grév.

1. The perfect is required in French when the present moment forms a part of the time mentioned, i.e. with **ce jour, aujourd'hui, cette semaine,** etc. **Il m'a envoyé chercher ce matin.** Grév.

2. Rarely the perfect represents the future perfect (cf. 219 *c*). **Attendez, j'ai fini dans le moment.** Wailly.

3. More frequently the pluperfect, like historical present (219 *d* 1).

b. To denote an action or state indefinitely as past (= Lat. historical perfect). **Elle m'a demandé si je voulais te sauver.** V. H. **Mercredi, il a passé le soir ici.** Grév.

1. It is this use that is encroaching on the preterit even in literature. **Elle a appelé maman, qui est venue, on a voulu battre mon Pluton! Il s'est levé, il a déchiré ma camisole, il a grogné, montré ses dents, et maman a décidé,** etc. Grév.

224. The pluperfect, compound of the imperfect, is the perfect (definite) transferred to the past, and denotes an action or state completed in past time. **Il était alors plus de minuit et la lune s'était cachée.** de V. **Le nègre avait obéi et vécu.** V. H.

225. The past anterior, compound of the preterit, denotes an action or state as completed in past time, and followed immediately by another past action. It is now used only in temporal clauses depending on a principal verb in the preterit, introduced by **quand, dès que, lorsque, à peine,** etc. **La porte céda dès qu'elle eut tourné la clef.** G. S. **Dès qu'il eut tiré la quantité de sang voulue il plaça l'appareil.** Id.

1. The principal clause after **à peine**, etc., may be made grammatically dependent, but the thought is not changed.

THE FUTURE TENSES.

226. The future denotes an action or state that will take place hereafter. **Je t'aime, je t'aimerai toujours.** Scribe.

a. Colloquially as a confident prediction it often has the force of an imperative. **Vous m'entendrez jusqu'au but.** Theuriet. **Je veux que le blanc meure. Vous m'obéirez, il mourra.** V. H.

b. Also to denote probability or likelihood. **Vous saurez que je suis fils unique d'un riche bourgeois.** Le Sage.

c. In subordinate clauses, except after **si** *if*, the future is used where logically demanded, as in Latin (cf. 219 *c*). **Je vous le dirai quand je le comprendrai moi-même.** G. S. **Tant qu'il vivra, je lui appartiendrai.** de V. **Dès que je pourrai, je reviens sur vos traces.** Rac.

d. For the conditional, see 219 *d* 1.

227. The future perfect, compound of the future, denotes an action or state as completed at a future time. **Avant ce coup Sabine aura vécu.** Corn. **En un instant je l'aurai jugé.** Scribe.

a. Its special uses correspond to those of the future. **O ciel! je me serai trahi moi-même.** Mol. **Quand vous m'aurez perdu, vous connaîtrez ce que je valais.** de V. **Si vous avez traversé . . . la belle Touraine, vous aurez longtemps suivi la Loire.** Id.

THE CONDITIONAL MOOD.

228. The conditional, though called a mood, is by origin and history the future of the past, and therefore as much a tense of the indicative as the pluperfect, thus **aimerai** (< **amare abeo**): **aimerais** (< **amare abebam**, cf. 105, rem. 9) = **amaturus sum**: **amaturus eram.** Now the Latin, even in the apodosis of an unreal condition, regularly

used the indicative when the idea of contingency was expressed in the tense (i.e. with the two periphrastic conjugations) or in the verb notion (i.e. with verbs of *possibility, obligation,* etc.). **Emendaturus, si licuisset, eram.** Ovid. **Quem patris loco si ulla in te pietas esset colere debebas.** Cic. The development of the future and conditional from **abeo** presupposes a notion of obligation (cf. *I have to go*) and puts it in the same category as **debeo** or our *could, would,* etc. Hence the modal character of the French conditional.

229. The present conditional denotes an action: (1) as contingent in present or future (*modal* function); or, (2) from the standpoint of the past as still to occur (*temporal* function).

a. In principal clauses it is largely modal.

1. In the conclusion of conditional sentences (145 *g* 1 *γ*; cf. Latin subjunctive). **Si mon cœur était libre, il pourrait être à vous.** Regnard.

2. As potential (cf. Latin potential subjunctive) without an expressed condition, to represent the opinion of the speaker as an opinion, particularly with verbs of modal force, **as pourrais, devrais, voudrais, aimerais mieux, ferais mieux** (cf. 213 *b*). **Il y a une musique qu'on pourrait appeler naturelle.** G. S. **On la croirait faite pour madame la princesse.** de V.

3. As a genuine future of the past (cf. **amaturus erat**), parallel to **allais** with an infinitive (cf. 213 *a* 1). **Qu'allait-il en sortir? Sagesse ou folie? La sagesse mondaine aurait-elle le dessus? Ou bien une Dosia nouvelle allait-elle se révéler?** Grév.

b. In subordinate clauses it is mostly temporal, used in dependence on past tenses to denote futurity from the standpoint of the past. **Encore était-il probable que nous serions délivrés.** About. **Gérard ... se demandait comment il commencerait sa harangue.** Theuriet. **Il obtint de mon père Que de ses chastes feux je serais le salaire.** Corn.

Nous convînmes que nous partirions le lendemain. Chateau. **J'ai dit** (cf. 223 *b*) **que j'attendrais.** Theuriet.

1. But when the present is the real standpoint, the future is used even in dependence on a past tense. **Maman a décidé** (cf. 223 *b* 1) **qu'on l'enverra à la métairie.** Grév.

2. Particularly in temporal clauses, the conditional is used with strict logic where in English the imperfect is allowed (cf. 227 *c*). **Il s'engagea à leur rendre les places . . . lorsque leurs étendards flotteraient** (*floated*) **sur les murs de Jérusalem.** Michaud. On the other hand after **si** *if* the English is more logical than the French idiom (cf. 221). **Si vous en veniez** (*should come*) **à cette extrémité vous emporteriez ma solennelle malédiction.** Theuriet.

3. In a condition expressed by **quand**, or by inversion, or when the protasis is made the principal clause grammatically, the apodosis being added as a **que**-clause, the conditional is used. **Quand vous me haïriez, je ne m'en plaindrais pas.** Rac. **Quand on ne devrait lire ces vers que cent ans après ma mort, je les ferais toujours.** de V. **Je le voudrais d'ailleurs que la chose serait encore impossible.** V. H. *Even though I might desire it, the thing would still be impossible.*

230. The perfect conditional has precisely analogous functions, being related to the present conditional as the future perfect to the simple future. **Il n'aurait pas parlé, si la chose eût été douteuse.** Grév. **Vous auriez dit un tigre qui flaire sa proie.** About. **Auriez vous entendu parler de quelque situation ?** Theuriet.

1. In the conclusion of a conditional sentence, the pluperfect subjunctive may be used instead of the perfect conditional (145 *g* 1 *δ*). **Ils se fussent battus sur-le-champ, si on ne les eût arrêtés.** Fén.

231. A tendency to use the compound as well as the simple tenses of **avoir** as auxiliaries of tense has given rise to forms doubly compound, e.g. **il a eu aimé, avait eu aimé,** etc., logically representing an action completed in reference to another completed action. Examples are rare in literature. **Il sera sorti, dès qu'il aura eu achevé la lettre.** Duvivier. *He will have gone out, as soon as he shall have got the letter completed.* As the perfect is colloquially the equivalent of the preterit (223 *b* 1), the compound form made with the perfect would equal the past anterior.

Examples of this are not uncommon in temporal clauses (cf. 225). **Quand ma femme a eu trouvé une place, elle a donné son enfant à une vieille.** Daudet.

THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

232. The subjunctive is the mood of the unreal, i.e. of *possibility*, *probability*, *necessity*. It has preserved in French a large part of its Latin uses in dependent clauses, but has largely lost its hold on the independent clause.

a. The **que**-clause (< **quod, quam**) has had a wonderfully rich development in French. It replaces the Latin infinitive with subject accusative, and **que** stands as the equivalent of many subordinating conjunctions. It takes both indicative and subjunctive and in some cases leaves a choice open between the moods to reflect the subjective attitude of the speaker. To treat the subject historically is impossible in brief space. In what follows the modern French usage is compared with the Latin only in so far as the latter illustrates the former.

b. **Que** appears as final member of a very large number of conjunctive phrases of diverse origin (cf. 144*c*) and character. Some are substantive clauses governed by a preposition, e g. **sans que** < **sene quod, dès que** < **de ex quod, avant que** < **ab ante quod, pour que** < **pro quod, etc.**; or in apposition to the demonstrative **ce, jusqu'à ce que, parce que**, etc.; or to a noun **afin que, au cas que**, etc.; or they are **quam**-clauses more or less influenced by the growth of the **quod**-clause, e.g. **tandis que** < **tam diu quam, quoique** < **quod quam, puisque** < ***postius quam, qui que** < **quis quam**, etc.; or are more elliptical in character, e.g. **à moins que**, etc. Such conjunctive phrases are for convenience treated in the traditional manner as compound conjunctions introducing adverbial clauses.

IN INDEPENDENT CLAUSES.

233. The subjunctive in independent clauses is preserved in only a few somewhat isolated idioms.

a. In **je ne sache pas** *I hardly know*, we have an isolated relic of the subjunctive of modest statement (= **haud sciam**, cf. 229 *a* 2). Even here some regard **sache** as an *irregular* old indicative form.

b. The subjunctive, generally with inverted order (149 *a* 3), expresses a *wish*, *command*, *condition*, *concession*. This idiom is not frequent except with a few verbs of which the commonest are the presents, **soit, vive, fasse, plaise, puisse, veuille, garde, vienne,** and the imperfects **plusse** and **dusse. Soit** as conjunction (cf. 142 *b*) is thus explained. **Je suis souris, vivent les rats! Jupiter confonde les chats!** L. F. **Maintenant vienne le poëte.** V. H. **Plût à Dieu qu'on réglât ainsi tous les procès.** L. F. **Fussiez-vous au fond des abimes, la main de Jupiter pourrait vous en tirer.** Fén. **J'irai, dussé-je affronter les dangers réels; j'irai, dussé-je faire une imprudence ridicule.** G. S.

1. **Que** with the present subjunctive in the same hortatory sense is logically a dependent clause after an omitted verb of wishing (cf. 234 *b*), but it is now felt as independent. It is the regular substitute for the missing persons of the imperative (cf. 238 *a* 3, *b*), particularly the third persons singular and plural. **Que jamais tu ne revoies ta patrie!** Fén. **Que le principe de liberté fasse son affaire, mais qu'il la fasse bien.** V. H. **Il est libre! eh bien, qu'il choisisse.** Scribe et Legouvé.

c. In the past unreal condition the pluperfect subjunctive in the apodosis may replace the perfect conditional (145 *g* 1 *δ*). The protasis with omitted **si** and inverted order is in reality a special case of *b*, above. **Si j'eusse été surpris, quels traitements cruels n'eussé-je point essuyés?** J.-J. Rousseau. **Ils auraient résisté, n'eût été le canon.** Ponsard. An unreal apodosis may also occur in dependent clauses. **Il est vrai qu'elle (la résistance) eût été inutile.** V. H.

IN DEPENDENT CLAUSES.

234. The subjunctive is used in substantive or completive **que**-clauses.

a. As logical subject after impersonal verbs with

il or **ce** as grammatical subject (132 *b* 2), unless they imply certainty or fact. **Il suffit qu'on me craigne.** Rac. **Il faut qu'il me donne la mort.** Fén. **Il n'est pas que vous ne sachiez quelque nouvelle de cette affaire.** Mol. Or elliptically. **Non qu'Albe par son choix m'ait fait haïr vos frères.** Corn.

1. The chief impersonals that have this construction are as follows: **il faut, peu (beaucoup, tant) s'en faut, il importe, il se peut, il semble** (cf. 2, below), **il suffit, il me (te, lui,** etc.) **tarde, il tient à (moi, toi,** etc.), **il vaut bien (mieux)**; **il est** with adjectives or phrases denoting uncertainty, emotion, will, etc., such as **il est bon, à désirer, dangereux, difficile, douteux, fâcheux, facile, faux,** etc.; **c'est assez, dommage, peu,** etc.; and more elliptically with **non pas (que), non (que).**

2. **Il arrive, il s'ensuit, il paraît, il résulte, il me (te, lui,** etc.) **semble,** as expressing fact, take the indicative, as also **il est certain, clair, probable, sûr, vrai,** and similar adjectives. **Il est probable qu'il a eu connaissance de cette retraite.** G. S. **Il me semble que tout le monde doit savoir.** Scribe et Legouvé. Anyone of these, however, when used interrogatively, negatively, or conditionally, implying doubt, or when the subject-clause precedes the verb, takes the subjunctive. **Es-tu sûr qu'il soit mort.** Mérimée. **S'il est vrai que vous aimiez la justice,** etc. Fén. **Que le petit soit une charge pour nous autres, ça c'est sûr.** Daudet.

REMARKS.—1. If the subject of the dependent verb is indefinite or a personal pronoun (rarely otherwise) the infinitive (cf. 240 *a* 1, 241) is in general a permissible and sometimes, as being lighter and more compact, a preferable construction. **L'occasion est belle, il nous la faut** (cf. 215 *e*) **chérir.** Corn. **Il était nécessaire à Clovis d'être chrétien.** Peyronnet.

2. In Latin impersonals were followed by the infinitive, by **quod** with the indicative as statement of fact, and often by **ut** with the subjunctive after **accidit, accedit, efficitur, fit, restat, sequitur, mos est,** etc. **Ut** gradually gave place to **quod** > **que.** (Cf. 232 *a*.)

b. *As* object after verbs of *will* and *emotion*. **Je veux**

que tu sortes. Mol. **Il ordonne qu'on vous arrête.** Fén. **Fais que mes yeux s'ouvrent et mon cœur se soumette.** G. S. **Je regrettais que ce misérable se fût fait justice à lui-même.** V. H. **Je suis fière, monsieur, que mon bras soit au vôtre.** Ponsard. **Narbal tremblait dans la crainte que je ne fusse découvert.** Fén.

1. The most important verbs and verb phrases of *will* and *emotion* are **abhorrer, admettre** *allow*, **agréer, aimer, arrêter** (cf. 2), **commander, conjurer, consentir, décider** (cf. 2), **décréter** (cf. 2), **défendre, demander, désirer, dire** *order* (cf. 244 *a* 4), **empêcher, entendre** *intend*, **éviter, exiger, faire, garder, ordonner** (cf. 2), **s'opposer (à ce que), permettre, préférer, prendre garde (soin), prétendre** *require*, **prier, souffrir** *allow*, **souhaiter, supplier, vouloir, admirer, s'affliger, approuver, avoir honte (regret, peur, crainte,** etc.), **blâmer, craindre, déplorer, enrager, s'étonner, être affligé (chagriné, charmé, enchanté, fâché, heureux, indigné,** etc.), **se fâcher, s'indigner, se plaindre, regretter, se réjouir, trembler, trouver bon (étrange,** etc.), and such phrases as **de peur que, de crainte que, voir à regret que,** etc. **Espérer** *hope* takes the indicative, unless used negatively, interrogatively, or conditionally. (Cf. 2, below.)

2. Verbs denoting an official decree or authoritative order may have the future and conditional instead of the subjunctive; such verbs are **arrêter, décider, décréter, ordonner,** etc. **Ils arrêtèrent qu'on enverrait au roi de Suède l'ambassade proposée.** Volt. **Ils décidèrent donc unanimement que . . . le duc Guillaume se ferait couronner roi d'Angleterre.** Thierry. Verbs of fear also were formerly so construed, but this is now rare. **On craignait toujours qu'il finirait trop tôt.** Fén. **J'ai peur qu'il sera blâmé.** Balzac.

3. The indicative after verbs of *emotion* is not rare, particularly when the object of the feeling is expressed by the demonstrative **ce** and the **que**-clause is added appositively. **Es-tu fâchée de ce que ton frère a une montre?** Berquin. Compare, however, **Le général parut s'indigner de ce qu'on lui attribuât une si honteuse inquisition.** Lamart. The difference is a subjective one.

4. For the redundant **ne** after verbs of negative will, of fear, and of doubt, see 270 *b*.

REMARKS.—1. Observe that the object clause serves not only as direct object, but that it often performs an office which with a substantive would require the preposition **de** (cf. 245). For the **que**-clause as an equivalent of the imperative, see 233 *b* 1.

2. With the subjunctive after verbs of *will*, compare the Latin **ut**-clause after **imperare, postulare, optare,** etc.; and after verbs of

emotion, the **quod**-clause with indicative or subjunctive after **gaudere, laetari, dolere**, etc., or **ne** and **ut** with the subjunctive after verbs of fearing, **timere, metuere**, etc.

c. As object after verbs of *thought* and *expression*. These take in general the indicative, but when used interrogatively, negatively, or conditionally implying doubt, the subjunctive. **Vous croyez qu'un amant vienne vous insulter?** Rac. **Je ne savais pas qu'une telle personne existât sous la lune.** Grév. **Je ne suppose pas que tu veuille plaisanter avec ta vie.** V. H. **Comprends-tu que l'on parte et qu'on se dise adieu?** de Musset.

1. The following are the chief verbs of this class: **admettre** (cf. *b* 1), **affirmer, s'apercevoir, apprendre, assurer, s'attendre, avouer, comprendre, concevoir, connaître, conclure, croire, déclarer, deviner, dire** *say* (cf. *b* 1), **espérer** (cf. *b* 1), **se flatter, gager, juger, jurer, mettre** (*assume*), **oublier, parier, penser, prédire, prétendre** *pretend* (cf. *b* 1), **présumer, promettre, se rappeler, reconnaître, remarquer, répondre, savoir, sentir, soupçonner, soutenir, se souvenir, supposer, trouver, voir**. **Douter, ignorer,** and **nier** are themselves practically negative and therefore take the subjunctive when used positively.

2. Even when used affirmatively the subjunctive stands where doubt is plainly implied, e.g. after **on dirait, on croirait. On dirait qu'il soit aveugle.** Jacquenard. **Mettons que Dosia ait cinq ou six sœurs.** Gréville. Cf. **Mettons que tu n'as pas trop bu.** Ead.

3. On the other hand the indicative is found even after interrogative, negative, or conditional clauses to give the effect of a statement of fact, or when no doubt is present in the mind of the speaker. **Je ne puis oublier qu'elle a porté mon nom.** Dumas. **Croirai-je qu'une nuit a pu vous ébranler?** Rac. So also the conditional (cf. 228). **Je ne croyais pas que Mademoiselle me blâmerait de mon zèle.** Scribe et Legouvé. Cf. **Je ne pensais pas que cela offusquât Mademoiselle.** Iid.

REMARK.—After verbs like the above the Latin used the infinitive with subject-accusative. This construction has disappeared from modern French.

235. In adverbial clauses the subjunctive is introduced by a conjunction or conjunctive phrase (232 *b*), the last member of which is **que**.

a. Temporal clauses (cf. 145 *a*) of anticipation, with ***avant que*, jusqu'à ce que, tant que** *until*, **en attendant**

que; cf. Latin **antequam, priusquam, dum, donec.** **Écoutez ce récit avant que je réponde.** L. F. **Je serai votre père jusqu'à ce que vous ayez retrouvé celui qui vous a donné la vie.** Fén. **Versez, versez toujours tant qu'on vous dise assez.** Mol.

1. In narratives of actual occurrence, **jusqu'à ce que** *until,* and **tant que** *as long as,* take the indicative. **Il s'est fait admirer tant qu'ont duré ses frères.** Corn. **Il se contenta d'envoyer dans la Lithuanie vingt mille Moscovites qui y firent plus de mal que les Suédois . . . jusqu'à ce que . . . ils s'en retournèrent par troupes dans leur pays.** Volt.

b. Final and consecutive clauses (cf. 145 *d*, *e*) with **afin que, pour que, que; de sorte (manière, façon) que, si . . . que, tellement . . . que,** etc. Cf. Latin clauses with **ut, ne, quo.** **Pour qu'on vous obéisse, obéissez aux lois.** Volt. **Les séances avaient lieu le soir, afin que le peuple ne fût pas empêché d'y assister.** Lamart. **Hâtez-vous de faire embarquer . . . le jeune étranger . . . afin qu'on ne le voie plus dans la ville.** Fén. **Suivez-moi que j'aille un peu montrer mon habit par la ville.** Mol. **Sors vite que je ne t'assomme.** Id. **Elle saura bien faire en sorte que le roi soit content de vous.** Fén. **Placez-le de manière qu'il soit bien ferme.** Guizot.

1. Unlike the Latin a result actually attained is expressed with logical correctness by the indicative. **Son misérable cœur est fait de telle sorte, Qu'il faut incessamment qu'une ruine en sorte.** de Musset.

c. Conditional clauses of hypothesis or proviso (145 *g* 2, 3), with **posé, supposé, pourvu que; au (en) cas, à condition, à la charge que; à moins, hors, sans que,** etc. Cf. Latin clauses with **dum, modo, dummodo,** etc. **Je ferai votre bonheur pourvu que vous sachiez en jouir.** Fén. **On est très libre, pourvu qu'on craigne les dieux et qu'on ne craigne qu'eux.** Id. **Il avait tout à redouter en cas qu'on**

découvrit sa négociation. Volt. **À moins que vous ne l'exigiez, je ne veux point forcer ma memoire à ce travail.** G. S. **Les lèvres remuaient sans qu'il parlât.** V. H.

1. **Si** *if*, always takes the indicative except with the pluperfect where the subjunctive is also allowed (145 *g* 1).

2. **À condition que** and **à la charge que** take the indicative when the condition is given a positive tone. **Je te pardonne à la charge que tu mourras.** Mol.

d. Concessive clauses (cf. 145 *h*), with **quoique, bien que, encore que; nonobstant que, malgré que; soit** (233 *b*) **que, non que** (cf. 234 *a*). Cf. Latin clauses with **quamvis, quantumvis, quamlibet, licet, etsi, cum,** ut, etc. **Quoiqu'il se fût vendu à la cour, il n'était pourtant pas vil.** Mignet. **Je vous aime nonobstant que vous m'ayez fait bien du mal.** J.-J. Rousseau. **Non que de sa conquête il paraisse flatté.** Rac.

1. The indefinite relatives **qui que, quel que, quoi que, quelque... que, où que, comme que,** etc., have concessive force (145 *h* 1), and require the subjunctive. Cf. Latin indicative clauses with **quisquis, quidquid, quotquot,** etc. **Qui que ce soit, parlez et ne le craignez pas.** Rac. **Qui que vous soyez, gardez-la.** G. S. **Je vois trop bien qu'il faut, quoi que je fasse, mourir.** Corn. **De quelque** (203 *a*) **côté qu'on l'envisageât, la fuite était donc funeste.** Lamart.

α. Correct, but much less common, are the forms **quelque . . . qui** and **quoi qui** used as subject. **Quelque industrie qui paraisse dans ce que font les animaux.** Bossuet. **Quoi qui vous afflige, soyez toujours content.** Littré.

2. Precisely analogous are **si, quelque, tant** (obsolescent preserved without **que** in the phrase **tant soit peu**), **pour, tout** (202 *b* 2), employed as adverbs before adjectives, and followed by a subjunctive **que**-clause in the sense of *however*. **Si rude qu'on nous veuille faire le présent, l'avenir sera beau.** V. H. **Un roi quelque bon et sage qu'il soit, est encore homme.** Fén. **Pour grand qu'il vous parût, vous le sentiez ami.** de Musset. **Tout auteur que je sois, je ne suis pas jaloux.** Regnard. **Son éloquence toute populaire qu'elle fût, était celle d'un patricien.** Lamart.

3. But **tout ... que** also takes the indicative to give the clause a tone of fact. **Et, tout ingrat qu'il est, il me sera plus doux, De mourir avec lui que de vivre avec vous.** Rac. **Le comte ... est un plus grand artiste que nous, tout philosophe qu'il est.** G. S.

e. **Que** alone is used:—

1. To avoid repetition (283 *c*). It then takes the mood required by the conjunction for which it stands, except that for **si** it takes the subjunctive (cf. *c* 1). **Pourvu que je dise toujours la vérité et que mon cœur n'aime que la justice.** Fén. **Si cet homme-là était vivant, et qu'il vous entendît me parler.** G. S.

2. After a negative it may stand alone in the sense of **jusqu'à ce que, avant que, à moins que, sans que,** and requires **ne** (270 *e*) in the dependent clause; compare Latin **quin. Il ne sera pas content qu'il ne vous ait ruiné.** Mol. **Je ne donnerai point la paix aux Polonais qu'ils n'aient élu un autre roi.** Volt. **Je n'en puis partir, Que mon père, ou Pyrrhus, ne me fassent sortir.** Rac. **Un mois ne se passe pas que l'occasion ne vienne.** Michelet.

236. Adjective or relative clauses (146), which denote purpose, result, or characteristic, and are not simply descriptive (cf. 146 *c* 2, 3), require the subjunctive. **Il veut une paix dont tous les partis soient contents, qui finisse toutes les jalousies, qui apaise tous les ressentiments, et qui guérisse toutes les défiances.** Fén. **Fais-toi des ennemis que je puisse haïr.** Corn. **Je voudrais inventer quelque petit cadeau, Qui coûtât peu de chose, et qui parût nouveau.** Regnard.

a. Thus after a superlative or its equivalent, as **seul, unique, premier, dernier,** except when the relative clause is merely parenthetical or descriptive. **Le plus précieux ami que j'aie sur la terre.** Fén. **La plus vive joie que les mortels puissent sentir.** Id. **C'est la seule chose pour laquelle je ne puisse t'obéir.** V. H. But, **L'être, qui vient à mon secours, est celui-là seul que je puis écouter et croire.** G. S.

b. So, too, after the negative antecedents **pas (point) de, pas un, aucun, nul, personne, rien,** and the similar **ne... guère, ne... que, peu de,** or even after an interrogative implying doubt. **Nous ne trouvions aucun champ où la main du diligent laboureur ne fût imprimée.** Fén. **Il n'appartient pas à un maître qui puisse le fermer ou l'ouvrir à son gré.** G. S. **S'il n'est point dans l'univers un Être suprême... qui me juge, qui m'approuve, qui m'aide, qui me préserve, qui me bénisse.** Ead. **À quoi sert d'avoir un roi qui sache bien gouverner en paix?** Fén.

c. The restrictive clause **que je sache** (233 *a*) (cf. **quod sciam**) *as far as I know,* is the sole relic of this Latin idiom; cf. **que je crois, que je pense. Elle n'a pas bougé, que je sache.** G. S.

REMARK.—For a tabular arrangement of the uses of the subjunctive, see p. 177.

THE TENSES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

237. In connected discourse the verbs of the principal and dependent clauses ordinarily correspond in tense; that is, primary tenses follow primary tenses, and secondary secondary.

The primary tenses are the present, the perfect (definite; see 223 *a*), the future and the future perfect indicative, and the present and perfect subjunctive. The secondary tenses are the imperfect, the preterit, the perfect (historical, see 223 *b*), the pluperfect and the past anterior indicative, the conditional and conditional perfect, and the imperfect and pluperfect subjunctive. **Il veut que je le serve.** Rac. **Je regrette qu'on ne vous ait pas laissée marcher à votre pas.** About. **J'ai été malheureusement le premier qui ait fait connaître en France les poésies anglaises.** Volt. **Il était donc naturel qu'il l'aimât.** Lesueur. **Il comprit alors qu'il fût parti pour Paris.** Dumas. **J'ai voulu que mademoiselle Silvia vît ce joli marmot.** Florian. **Serait-il vrai qu'on être humain vît son semblable dans une position aussi horrible, pût le secourir, et ne le fît pas?** V. H.

a. The standpoint of the writer may, however, change.

1. From the present to the past. **Je ne crois pas qu'il sût distinguer clairement le bien du mal.** About.

USES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD—SUMMARY.

PRINCIPAL CLAUSES.		*a.* Subjunctive of modest statement. **Je ne sache pas.** Cf. Latin **nesciam** (233 *a*). *b.* Optative subjunctive. **Vive la république.** Cf. Latin **vivat res publica** (233 *b*). *c.* In past unreal conditions. **Eût-il cru cela, il se fût trompé.** Cf. Latin **Si id credidisset, erravisset** (233 *c*).
SUBORDINATE CLAUSES.	*a.* SUBSTANTIVE CLAUSES.	1. Subject of impersonal verbs. **Il faut qu'il vienne. Il fallut qu'il vînt** (234 *a*). 2. Object of verbs of will and emotion. **Je veux que tu sortes. J'avais honte qu'il fût de retard** (234 *b*). 3. Object of verbs of thought and expression. **Je ne crois pas qu'il vienne. Savez-vous qu'il fût ici?** (234 *c*.)
	b. ADVERBIAL CLAUSES.	1. Temporal clauses of anticipation. **J'attendais jusqu'à ce qu'il vînt** (235 *a*). 2. Final and consecutive clauses. **Approchez pour que je vous voie. Asseyez-vous de manière qu'on puisse vous voir** (235 *b*). 3. Conditional clauses of hypothesis or proviso. **Je serai content pourvu que vous me le donniez** (235 *c*). 4. Concessive clauses. **Je le ferai bien qu'il soit fort difficile** (235 *d*). 5. With **que** after a negative. **Je ne serai pas content qu'il ne vous ait payé la dette** (235 *e*).
	c. ADJECTIVE CLAUSES.	1. Relative clauses of characteristic. **Je trouverai un ami qui me nourrisse** (236). 2. Relative with superlative antecedent. **Le meilleur ami que j'aie** (236 *a*). 3. Relative with negative antecedent. **Il n'y a pas un roi qui soit parfait** (236 *b*). 4. The restrictive clause **que je sache.** **Je n'ai pas d'amis, que je sache** (236 *c*).

2. Less commonly from the past to the present. **Nous étions à quelque pas de vous sans que vous l'ayez vu.** de V.

b. Formerly it was quite common to put an imperfect subjunctive in dependence on a present indicative, in the sense of a conditional, the protasis being suppressed. **On craint qu'il n'essuyât les larmes de sa mère.** Rac.; i.e. **s'il vivait.**

c. In familiar speech the imperfect subjunctive is avoided, and by a vulgar license the present is often used instead.

THE IMPERATIVE MOOD.

238. The imperative is the mood of command. It has only a present tense and three persons, the second person singular and the first and second persons plural. **Meurs ou tue.** Corn. **Tiens-toi bien en selle, . . . ne t'évanouis pas, et ne tombe pas de cheval.** Lesueur. **Prenons, vous et moi, un de ces grands bancs.** Fén. **Tigres, allez combattre, et nous, allons mourir.** Corn. **Faites votre devoir et laissez faire aux dieux.** Id.

a. The missing first person singular is supplied:—

1. By the first person plural. **Tâchons de me remettre un peu.** Berquin. **On dit que j'ai de l'esprit. Eh bien, servons-nous-en.** Scribe et Legouvé.

2. By the second person singular, in addressing one's self. **Non, non, m'ecriai-je enfin, . . . meurs, infortuné, meurs.** de Maistre.

3. By a subjunctive **que**-clause (233 *b* 1). **Que je vous voie à cheval, bel écuyer!** de V.

b. The missing third person singular and plural is supplied by a subjunctive **que**-clause (233 *b* 1). **Il est libre. Eh bien, qu'il choisisse.** Scribe et Legouvé. **Que Dieu entende et reçoive cette mutuelle promesse.** G. S.

REMARKS.—1. The Latin future imperative is wholly lost.

2. Occasionally a perfect imperative is found. **Ayez fini votre tâche, . . . ou ne l'ayez point fini, on ne vous témoignera ni plus ni moins de satisfaction.** de Sacy.

3. The imperative is not seldom used in the sense of a condition as in English. **Allez plus loin encore, . . . vous trouverez des sons tout nouveaux.** G. Paris.

4. Other forms of the verb are sometimes used with imperative

force, i.e. the present and future indicative (226 *a*), and the present infinitive. **Savoir d'abord la vérité. Faire ce qu'on pourra ou ce qu'on devra ensuite.** Grév. Often in physicians' prescriptions, as **Prendre une cuillerée à bouche, agiter avant de s'en servir.**

5. Many imperatives are used almost as interjections; e.g. **va, allons, tiens, tenez, voyons, voici** (**voi ci**, cf. 111 *c*), **voilà**, etc.

THE INFINITIVE MOOD.

239. The Latin infinitive was an indeclinable verbal noun, presenting the verb-notion without person and number, and used chiefly as subject, predicate, or complement of a finite verb, but not with prepositions. With the latter the gerund was used instead. As a genuine verb-form, however, it might take any of the modifiers of the finite verb. The French has inherited this form and has very greatly extended its use, both in other directions (244) and particularly by construing it with prepositions (251). On the other hand the infinitive preposition, i.e. the infinitive with subject accusative, so common in Latin, is practically lost (cf. 244 *b*, 245 *b*) in French, as also the use of the infinitive in lively narration in place of the historical tenses of the indicative. (Cf. 248 *c*.)

a. By far the commonest prepositions with the infinitive are **à** (246), and **de** (245). At first they were thus used with their regular prepositional force, but so widely has this idiom been extended that in many cases they have now become mere "signs" of the infinitive like our "to" or the German „zu."

b. The French infinitive as a noun may have the definite article, and some through frequent use in this way have come to be felt nearly as ordinary nouns, e.g. **le boire, le devoir, l'être, le manger, le pouvoir, le souper, le souvenir**, etc. **Je tremble au seul penser.** Rac.

INFINITIVE AS A NOMINATIVE.

240. Without a preposition.

a. As subject, generally at the head of the sentence. **Donner l'aumône n'appauvrit personne. Prov. Mourir pour le pays n'est pas un triste sort.** Corn.

1. As logical subject after the impersonals **il faut, il me semble, il fait beau or bon, il vaut autant or mieux** (cf. 241, below). **L'occasion est telle, il nous la faut chérir.** Corn. **Il vaut autant être mordu d'un chien que d'une chienne.** Prov. **Il fait bon être protégé par elle.** Scribe.

a. A second infinitive after the comparative generally has **de** even here. **Il vaut bien mieux prévenir le mal que d'être réduit à le punir.** Fén. **Il vaut mieux lire les pièces que de les voir.** de Staël. Yet not always. **Il vaut mieux plier que rompre.** Prov. **Plutôt souffrir que mourir, c'est la dévise des hommes.** L. F.

b. In the predicate after **être, sembler, paraître, être censé,** etc. (cf. 241 *a*). **C'est beaucoup me dire en peu de mots.** Corn. **Il serait censé avoir abdiqué la royauté.** Mignet.

241. The infinitive with **de** is regularly used as inverted subject or predicate nominative (cf. 240 *a* 1). **Il est doux de revoir les murs de la patrie.** Corn. **Il me restait d'être oublié de vous.** Rac.

a. Where the infinitive as logical subject after **c'est** is preceded by a correlative **que** (see 132 *c*) **de** is usually inserted. **C'est beaucoup que de savoir commander.** Acad. **Quelle joie ce peut être que de relever la fortune d'une personne que l'on aime.** Mol. But **c'est mourir deux fois que souffrir tes atteintes.** L. F.

b. For the construction after the phrase **c'est à quelqu'un** and after a few impersonals, see below.

242. The infinitive with **à** is used as a predicate after **être** and other intransitive verbs to denote capability, adaptability, etc., like the Latin **ad** after the gerund, generally to be translated by a passive. **Les méchants et les lâches sont seuls à plaindre.** G. S. **Tout était à recommencer.** Theuriet. **Une seule remarque reste à faire.** Chateau.

a. Similarly after a noun or adjective. (Cf. 249 *b* 1, 250 *a*.)

b. After the phrase **c'est à quelqu'un** the infinitive may have either **à** *or* **de,** *preferably* the latter. **C'est à vous à vous rendre médiateur.**

Fén. C'est à vous de me dire à quoi vous vous déterminez. Mol. **Est-ce à moi d'en porter la peine? Est-ce aux Germains à m'en punir?** Delavigne.

c. A few impersonal verbs allow **à** with the infinitive following as well as **de**. Such are **coûter, rester, y avoir**, etc.

COMPLEMENTARY INFINITIVE.

243. Very many verbs may take an infinitive as a direct or indirect object or to complete their meaning. **Il résolut de cultiver mon esprit.** Le Sage. **On l'accusa d'avoir eu des intelligences avec l'ennemi.** Acad. **Ils m'exhortèrent à prier.** Le Sage. **Je viens vous sauver.** V. H.

a. This dependent infinitive, called for convenience complementary, represents a large number of Latin constructions. It stands without a preposition, with **de**, or with **à** according to the verb on which it depends. No simple logical principle governs. It must be treated in detail.

b. In very many cases a substantive **que**-clause may be used as an equivalent.

INFINITIVE WITHOUT A PREPOSITION.

244. List of verbs taking the infinitive directly: **accourir**[c], **affirmer**[a], **aimer**[a] **mieux** or **autant, aller**[c], **l'apercevoir**[b], **assurer**[a], **avoir beau**[d], **avouer**[a], *compter*[a], **confesser**[a], **considérer**[a], **courir**[c], **croire**[a], **daigner**[d], **déclarer**[a], **déposer**[a], **descendre**[c], *désirer*[a], **devoir**[d], *dire*[a], **l'écouter**[b], *écrire*[a], **l'entendre**[b], **l'entrevoir**[b], **l'envoyer**[c], *espérer*[a], **être**[c] (cf. 240, 242), *faillir*[d], **le, se faire**[b, d], **se figurer**[a], **s'imaginer**[a], *jurer*[a], **le, se laisser**[b] (cf. 246, 247), **le mener**[c], *nier*[a], **observer**[b], **oser**[d], **ouïr**[b], **paraître**[d], **penser**[a] (cf. 246), *se persuader*[a], **pouvoir**[d], *préférer*[a], **pressentir**[b], *présumer*[a], **prétendre**[a] (cf. 246), **prévoir**[b], *protester*[a], **publier**[a], **raconter**[a], *se rappeler*[a], **rapporter**[a], *reconnaître*[a], **le regarder**[b], **rentrer**[c], **retourner**[c], **revenir**[c], **savoir**[a], **sembler**[d], **sentir**[b], *souhaiter*[a] (cf. 247), **souloir**[d], **soutenir**[a], **témoigner**[a], *venir*[c] **le voir**[b], **voler**[c], **vouloir**[a].

NOTE.—Verbs in italics take also **de**. The exponent letters refer to the classification below. When a verb takes another object besides

the infinitive, it is indicated by the appropriate pronoun-object, **le**, **se**, or **lui**.

a. Verbs of *will, thought*, and *expression*. **Mon père veut partir.** Sp. & Sur. **Il espère revivre en sa postérité.** Rac. **Je croyais avoir assisté à sa mort.** V. H. **Puisque tu sais chanter, ami, tu sais pleurer.** de Musset. **Quelques uns disaient t'avoir vu tomber mort.** V. H. **Je ne prétends pas, moi, les avoir faites pour rien.** Mol.

1. When the subjects of the principal and dependent verbs are not the same a substantive **que**-clause is generally used. (Cf. 234 *b.* and *c.*)

2. All the verbs of will except **vouloir** sometimes take **de** (or **à**), especially **souhaiter** and **espérer**. **Voilà ce que vous désirez de savoir.** Fén. **Hélas! puis-je espérer de vous revoir encore?** Rac.

3. After **aimer mieux** or **autant** and **préférer** a second infinitive generally has **de** (cf. 240 *a* 1 *α*). **J'aime mieux les souffrir que de les mériter.** Corn. **Aimer** alone in the conditional mood sometimes takes the infinitive without **à** (cf. 246). **J'aimerais certainement m'y voir transporté.** Flammarion. Cf. **J'aimerais à l'habiter avec toi.** V. H.

4. Verbs of *saying* and the like are also used to express a command or promise, e.g. **dire** *to say* and *to tell*, **jurer** *to give a sworn statement*, and *to make a sworn promise;* so **écrire**, etc. They then take the preposition **de**. **Ma sœur m'avait dit de ne pas vous le dire.** Mol. **Il jura d'exécuter une constitution qu'il avait fuie.** Lamart.

5. Verbs of *thought* and *expression* are often construed with a predicative adjective, participle, or noun, instead of an object-clause (cf. 161 *f* 1) with logical ellipsis of **être**. **On la dirait née pour cela.** Grév. **Ils nous croient partis par la côte du Limaçon.** de V. **On eût dit un portrait de la débauche antique.** de Musset.

6. In Latin verbs of will take **ut** with the subjunctive, verbs of thought and expression an infinitive with subject accusative.

b. Verbs of *causation* and *sense-perception*. These take an object noun or pronoun which is logical subject of the following infinitive, a construction very similar to the Latin infinitive with subject accusative. **Faites-le entrer.** Guizot. **Elle laisse tomber son mouchoir.** V. H. **J'entendais crier la racine prête à rompre, crier le monstre prêt à tomber.** Id. **Aimant à voir les forêts balancer leurs cimes.** Chateau. **Je l'ai vu saisir sa plume.** de V.

1. *The* verb of *causation* with infinitive is felt in a meas-

ure as forming a unit and allows in general but one direct object (cf. 161, rem.), hence when the infinitive has an object of its own (not reflexive) the object of the principal verb, if a noun, requires the preposition **à** or, if a pronoun, has the conjunctive dative form. **L'aveugle passion de retourner dans sa misérable patrie lui fit rejeter tous ces avantages.** Fén. **Vous vous laissez vaincre à votre malheur.** Id. **L'indolent jeune roi lui-même finit par se laisser soulever à cette vogue populaire.** Michelet. **Tant de gens de bien à qui j'ai si souvent vu faire des actions d'honneur.** Mézeray. **Je faisais . . . tous les mouvements que je voyais faire aux acteurs.** G. S. This may give rise to an ambiguity. **Je lui ferai chanter une messe.** Mérimée. Here **lui** may be either subject or indirect object of **chanter.**

a. Both objects are however construed as direct objects in many cases, especially after verbs of sense-perception. After **faire** this is far less common except when the object of the infinitive is a reflexive. **Je le vis tourner les yeux vers moi.** de Maistre. **Je vis se baisser tous les fusils.** Mérimée. **Je le vis se relever en souriant.** Scribe et Legouvé. **Je les ai laissé boire mon vin.** Gir.-Duvivier. Cf. **Je lui laissai sans fruit consumer sa tendresse.** Rac.

2. The dependent infinitive is often best translated by a passive, and is felt to some extent as such. This is evidenced by the fact that the prepositions of agency **par** and **de** (cf. 217 *b*) may take the place of **à** particularly when the verb-phrase is reflexive, i.e. when the reflexive pronoun object refers back to the subject of the finite verb. **On se laisse persuader par les personnes que l'on aime.** Mol. **Je m'y sens entrainer par une trop douce puissance.** Id. **Il s'était fait remarquer de Richelieu.** Mignet. Or more rarely: **Je l'avais fait condamner par le parlement.** de V.

3. After verbs of sense-perception a present participle or a relative clause often stands in place of the infinitive (cf. 146 *d*). The present participle is more vivid, the relative clause more common colloquially. **Les Saxons virent le roi de Suède marchant déjà à eux.** Vol. **Je voyais l'Indien se civilisant à la voix de la religion.** Chateau. **On ne les voyait jamais cherchant à se faire remarquer.** de V. **J'entends un chien qui aboie.** Mol. **Je la vois qui sourit.** de Maistre.

c. Verbs of *motion.* Here the infinitive denotes an end or purpose. **Je viens vous apporter de fâcheuses nouvelles.** Corn. **Chacun va renouer avec ses vieux amis.** Id. **Va te**

faire fusiller. V. H. **Il m'a envoyé chercher ce matin.** Grév.

1. To emphasize the idea of finality **pour** or **afin de** (252 *d*) may be used. **Je viens pour vous l'apprendre.** Corn.

2. **Aller** is also an immediate future (213 *a* 1). **Qu'allez-vous devenir sans pain, sans amis, sans vêtements ?** G. S.

3. **Venir de** is an immediate past (213 *a* 2). **Il assemble tous ces arbres qu'il vient d'abattre.** Fén. **L'on vient de m'apprendre tout.** Mol. **Mirabeau venait de mourir.** Lamart. **Venir à** is used in the sense of *chance to, come to the point of.* **Chaque société particulière vient à sentir sa force.** Montesquieu.

4. **Être** particularly in the compound tenses is often used as a verb of motion. **J'ai été trouver le roi.** de V. **Tu es venu te reposer à ma place, et j'ai été m'asseoir à la tienne.** Chateau. **Le trésorier . . . se retira . . . et fut chez lui recevoir . . . la dédicace de Cinna.** de V.

d. A few isolated words:—

1. The quasi-auxiliaries **pouvoir, devoir, oser, daigner,** and **faire** in **ne faire que. Il ne te puis blâmer.** Corn. **Nous avons dû avoir des objets une vue totalement différente.** Chateau. **Ils n'osaient se nourrir ni d'œufs ni de lait.** Vol. **Tu ne fais que renoncer aux soucis de la cabane.** Chateau. But **faire plus que** takes **de** (cf. 240 *a* 1 *α*), and also **ne faire que** sometimes. **Devoir** with indirect object in the sense of *owe* takes **de. Nous servions dans le régiment dont je vous dois d'être major.** Beaumarchais.

2. **Paraître** and **sembler** used personally (cf. 240). **Il sembla vouloir réconcilier le roi avec la république.** Vol.

3. **Faillir** in the sense of *come near.* **La famille royale faillit passer sur ce corps sanglant.** Lamart. Occasionally it is found also with **de** (and **à**). **Manquer** is also in the familiar language construed with the infinitive directly (cf. 247). **La barque a manqué chavirer sur** la pièce d'eau. Scribe et Legouvé.

4. **Avoir beau** in the sense of *vainly.* **Mais il eut beau se presser, quelqu'un courut devant.** Daudet. **J'ai beau rêver, je ne puis percer l'obscurité qui m'environne.** Beaumarchais.

INFINITIVE WITH de.

245. List of verbs taking the infinitive with **de**:—

s'absoudre[c], **s'absenter**[a], **s'abstenir**[a], **s'accommoder**[b], **s'**, **l'accuser**[c], **achever**[e], **l'admirer**[c], **affecter**[e], **s'affliger**[b], ***s'agir***[d], **ambitionner**[e], **s'apercevoir**[d], **s'**, **l'applaudir**[c], **appré-**

hender[e], **s'attrister**[b], **l'avertir**[d], **s'aviser**[d], **avoir besoin**[d], etc., **se, le blâmer**[c], **briguer**[e], **brûler**[e], **le censurer**[c], **cesser**[e], **se chagriner**[b], **se, le charger**[d], **choisir**[e], **lui commander**[g], **conclure**[e], **le conjurer**[f], **lui conseiller**[g], **se, le consoler**[c], **se contenter**[b], **le convaincre**[c], **convenir**[d] (see also 241), **se, le corriger**[c], **craindre**[e], **crier**[b], **le décourager**[a], **dédaigner**[a], **se défaire**[a], **lui défendre**[g], **se, le dégoûter**[b], **délibérer**[d], **se dépêcher**[d], **se, le désaccoutumer**[d], **désespérer**[b], **se, le déshabituer**[a], **se désoler**[b], **détester**[e], **se, le détourner**[a], **différer**[a], **discontinuer**[a], **disconvenir**[a], **se, le disculper**[c], **se, le dispenser**[a], **le dissuader**[a], **douter**[e], **s' or éclater**[d], **s'édifier**[d], **s'effrayer**[b], **s'émerveiller**[b], **s', l'empêcher**[a], **lui enjoindre**[g], **s'enorgueillir**[b], **enrager**[b], **entreprendre**[e], **s'épouvanter**[b], **s'étonner**[b], **éviter**[e], **s', l'excuser**[c], **l'exempter**[a], **exiger**[e], **se fâcher**[b], **faire**[d] **bien**, etc., **feindre**[e], **se, le féliciter**[b], **finir**[e], **se flatter**[b], **frémir**[b], **gager**[e], **se garder**[a], **gémir**[b], **se glorifier**[b], **le gronder**[c], **se hâter**[d], **lui imputer**[g], **s'indigner**[b], **s'ingérer**[d], **s'inquiéter**[b], **lui inspirer**[g], **lui interdire**[g], **juger nécessaire**[e], etc., **se, le justifier**[c], **se, le louer**[c], **lui mander**[g], **méditer**[e], **se mêler**[d], **menacer**[c], **mériter**[e], **se moquer**[d], **mourir**[e], **murmurer**[b], **négliger**[e], **obtenir**[e], **omettre**[e], **lui ordonner**[g], **lui pardonner**[g], **parier**[e], **parler**[d], **se passer**[a] (cf. 246), **lui permettre**[g], **lui persuader**[g], **se piquer**[b], **se, le plaindre**[b], **prendre**[d] **garde**, etc., **lui prescrire**[g], **se, le presser**[f], **présumer**[d] (see above, 244), **le prier**[d] *beg*, **professer**[e], **profiter**[d], **projeter**[e], **se, lui**[g], **or promettre**[e], **se, lui**[g], **or proposer**[e], **protester**[e], **se, le punir**[c], **se, lui rappeler**[g] (cf. 244), **se rassasier**[d], **se, le rebuter**[a], **lui recommander**[g], **le récompenser**[c], **redouter**[e], **regretter**[b], **se réjouir**[b], **le remercier**[c], **se repentir**[b], **le reprendre**[c], **le réprimander**[c], **lui reprocher**[g], **le requérir**[f], **se ressouvenir**[d], **le retenir**[a], **revenir**[a] (cf. 244), **rire**[b], **rougir**[b], **se scandaliser**[b], **se or sentir**[d], **le sommer**[f], **se soucier**[d], **le soupçonner**[c], **se souvenir**[d], **lui suggérer**[g], **le supplier**[f], **le trahir**[d], **trembler**[b], **tenter**[e], **trouver**[e] **bon or mal, se vanter**[b], **s', lui en vouloir**[b].

NOTE.—Cf. 244, note.

I. The preposition retains its normal force, as before a noun (Cf. 272.)

c. With a few verbs to denote adaptability or anticipation (cf. Lat. ad c. ger., 242 above). **J'ai à te parler de la part du colonel.** Grév. **Je vous laisse à penser les beaux coups de lance qui se faisaient.** Gautier.

II. The preposition has become a mere "sign," the infinitive being logically direct object of the principal verb.

d. After some verbs of *teaching*, *learning*, etc. **Pierre-le-Grand leur apprit à obéir.** Vol. **Il montre aux plus hardis à braver le danger. Le succès lui avait appris à ne rien trouver impossible.** Lamart.

e. In rare cases where the subject of the principal verb is also that of the infinitive (cf. 245 *e*). **Je cherche à te rejoindre et non à t'en défendre.** Corn. **Il aimait à redire les hauts faits de son administration.** Daudet.

INFINITIVE WITH **de** OR **à**.

247. List of verbs allowing a choice, generally however in somewhat different senses. Some others from the foregoing lists might be put here if isolated occurrences were regarded (cf. also 244, note): **accorder**[a], **accoutumer**[a], **aimer**[b] (246 *e*), **s'amuser**[b], **arrêter**[b], **attendre**[a], *commencer*[c], *consentir*[c], **continuer**[c], **contraindre**[c], *convier*[c], **décider**[a], **défier**[d], **demander**[d], **déterminer**[a], **s'efforcer**[b], **s'empresser**[b], **engager**[b], **enhardir**[a], **s'ennuyer**[b], **essayer**[c], **faillir**[c] (cf. 244 *d* 3), **forcer**[c], **haïr**[d], **hasarder**[c], *hésiter*[c], **laisser**[d] (cf. 246), **se lasser**[b], **manquer**[c] (cf. 244 *d* 3), **obliger**[c], **s'occuper**[b], **offrir**[a], **oublier**[d], *recommencer*[c], **refuser**[a], **résoudre**[a], **rêver**[d], **risquer**[c], **solliciter**[c], **souffrir**[b], **souhaiter**[c] (cf. 244 *a* 2), **tâcher**[c], *tarder*[c], **trembler**[b], **se tuer**[b], **venir**[d] (cf. 244 *c* 3).

NOTE.—Cf. 244, note. Verbs in italics have **à** more often than **de**.

a. Some verbs take **à** to introduce the infinitive as remoter object, when a direct object is expressed (cf. 246 *a*), otherwise **de** (cf. 245 *e*). **La république française s'est décidée à envoyer une puissante armée.** Thiers. **Le lendemain ils décidèrent d'attaquer la forteresse de Galata.** Michaud. **Je ne pouvais me résoudre à voir encore le jour.** Fén. **Il résolut d'être homme, de commander à des hommes, et de créer une nation nouvelle.** Volt.

b. With some verbs **de** gives the cause, or ground (cf. 245 *b*, *c*, *d*), **à** the end, manner, etc. (cf. 246 *b*, *c*). **J'aime à recevoir les lettres, c'est amusant.** Grév. **Je vous aime de m'aimer.** V. H. **S'ennuyer à attendre.** Acad. **Un prince s'est ennuyé d'espérer.** Balzac. **Tout le**

monde dans la salle était occupé à voir, à contempler Voltaire, à lui adresser de bruyants hommages. Ségur. **Bonaparte s'occupa aussi de maintenir les relations avec les contrées voisines.** Thiers.

c. In some cases no distinction can be felt, but usually the custom of the language seems to be settling one way or the other (cf. note above). **Le jour commençait à poindre.** V. H. **La jeune fille . . . continua de filer avec application.** de V. **Ils continuèrent à descendre.** Id. **Je n'ai jamais hésité à faire le sacrifice.** Lamart. **Un lieutenant ne doit pas hésiter à courir au danger et de voler au secours de son chef.** Thiers.

d. A few verbs present individual peculiarities:—

1. **Défier de** *defy* ; **à** *challenge*. **Je défiais ses yeux de me troubler jamais.** Rac. **Défier quelqu'un à boire.** Littré.

2. **Demander** takes **à** *generally* when the subject is also that of the infinitive, **de** when the indirect object is the logical subject of the infinitive (cf. 245 *g*). **La terre ne demande ici qu'à enrichir les habitants.** Fén. **Je demande par grâce à sortir de Byzance, Et d'aller exercer mon courage et mon bras.** Campistron. **On ne vous demande pas de vous récrier : C'est un chef-d'œuvre.** La Bruyère.

3. **Haïr** when positive takes **à**, when negative **de** (or **à**). **Je hais mortellement à vous parler de tout cela.** Sévigné. **Je ne haïrais pas d'être quaker.** Volt. **Je ne hais pas à garder les dindons.** Id.

4. **Laisser à,** *leave,* **ne laisser pas de,** *cease.* **Vous me devez laisser à punir ce grand crime.** Corn. **Il faut ne laisser pas de faire du bien aux hommes.** Fén.

5. **Oublier de** (or **à**) *forget to ;* **à** *forget how to.* **Il a oublié d'être bête.** Prov. **J'ai oublié à vous dire qu'il y a,** etc. Pascal. **Si vous ne lisez jamais, vous finirez par oublier à lire.** Littré.

6. **Rêver de** *dream,* **à** *imagine.*

7. **Venir de** of action just finished, **venir à** *chance to,* see 244 *c* 3.

THE INFINITIVE ABSOLUTE.

248. *a.* Without a preposition the infinitive is used in exclamations and rhetorical questions. **Que faire et que penser? Nier, douter ou croire?** V. H. **Que croire et que penser!** G. S. **Peut-on vivre sans religion? Alors pourquoi vivre?** Id. Cf. Latin Exclamatory Infinitive.

1. See also the infinitive used as imperative, 238, rem. 4.

2. In indirect questions, particularly after **avoir** and **savoir. J'ai de quoi vous parler en secret.** Mol. **Nous**

n'avons que faire de vos écritures. Id. **Elle ne savait plus que faire.** Lamart.

b. At the head of a sentence or parenthetically the infinitive may stand with either **de** or **à**.

1. With **de** it is merely resumptive. **De recourir à Blanche, elle avait trop d'intérêt à déguiser la vérité.** Le Sage.

2. With **à** it has the force of a conditional, causal, or final clause. **À l'entendre, rien n'était jamais difficile.** Fén. **À vous dire vrai, le succès me donne de l'inquiétude.** Mol.

c. With **de** sometimes in narration for the imperfect indicative, cf. Latin historical infinitive. **Grenouilles aussitôt de sauter dans les ondes.** L. F. **Et la foule de rire, surtout les enfants et les jeunes filles.** V. H.

THE INFINITIVE WITH ADJECTIVES.

249. In dependence on an adjective the infinitive usually follows the construction of a noun (see the uses of **de** and **à**, 272, 273). **C'est une chose qui m'étonne toujours, que les Français, qui sont aujourd'hui si peu capables de commettre de grands crimes, soient si prompts à les croire.** Volt. Compare the Latin gerund with adjectives.

a. With **de** adjectives denoting states of mind or feeling are commonest, such as **aise, capable, charmé, content, curieux, désireux, digne, enchanté, étonné, fâché, fier, heureux, honteux, incapable, inconsolable, jaloux, las, mécontent, ravi, satisfait, sûr, surpris,** and the like. **Regardez-moi donc comme incapable de prononcer un discours de réception.** Béranger. **Elle se trouve malheureuse d'être immortelle.** Fén. **Las de perdre en ruinant et sa peine et son bien.** Boil.

1. After the verb **être** and a predicate adjective the infinitive may depend not on the adjective, but on the whole predicate. **Vous êtes bien bon d'y songer.** Beaumarchais. Cf. **Toute vérité n'est pas bonne à dire.** Id. (See *b.*) **Il n'est pas toujours bon d'avoir un bel emploi.** L. F. (Cf. 241.)

b. With **à** in its regular meanings of *to, at,* etc. (see

Remark), the infinitive follows such adjectives as **adroit, aisé, bon, curieux** *remarkable,* **difficile, disposé, enclin, facile, habile, impossible, lent, prêt, prompt, propre, triste, utile,** etc. **La mort est prompte à remplir ces places.** Boss. **Orateur lourd, diffus, obscur, mais habile à parler le langage de tous ceux qu'il voulait séduire.** V. H. **Le poignard toujours prêt à jouer son rôle.** Id.

1. After adjectives such as **curieux, difficile, facile, impossible,** the infinitive with **à** has a passive force like the Latin supine in u. **Cela lui était bien facile à dire.** G. S. **Un problème difficile à résoudre.** Littré.

REMARK.—Of course the infinitive with **de** as logical subject of an impersonal verb (see 241) may stand after any predicate adjective. **Il est bon d'aiguiser les stylets sur des tombes.** V. H.

INFINITIVE WITH NOUNS.

250. The infinitive with nouns is regularly introduced by **de** after the manner of an adnominal genitive. **Le désir de me détruire s'empara de moi.** de Maistre. **Le moment de penser et de résoudre est arrivé, car le temps d'agir n'est pas loin.** de V. **Il n'y avait ni sûreté ni décence pour moi de rester à Paris.** Lamart.

a. With **à** it is used to denote capability, adaptability, etc. (cf. 242). **Au printemps, c'etait un ramage à ne pas s'entendre.** Théo. Gautier. **La même fureur à attaquer, la même promptitude à fuir et à revenir au combat.** Volt. **Ce serait un horrible spectacle à présenter au monde.** Lamart. **Une salle à manger, un spectacle à faire rire,** etc.

1. In a similar way after ordinal numerals and the like used substantively, such as **le premier, le second, le seul, le dernier. Le premier à venir et le dernier à s'en aller,** etc.

INFINITIVE WITH OTHER PREPOSITIONS THAN **à** OR **de.**

251. As certain compound conjunctions of various nature (232 *b*) are made with **que** as final component and introduce a finite form of the verb, so certain compound

prepositions are made with **de** or **à** as final member and take the infinitive. Thus, **près, hors, loin, afin, à force, à condition, faute,** etc., with **de**; **avant, à moins** with **de** or sometimes **que de; de manière, de façon, jusqu'**, etc., with **à**; also more elliptically **sauf à, quitte à. Laisse-moi prendre haleine afin de te louer.** Corn. **Avant que d'être à vous, je suis à mon pays.** Id. **Je crains qu'avant de mourir il ne me joue le tour d'écrire ici la vérite.** Beaumarchais.

252. The infinitive is also used after **après, entre, par, pour** and **sans.**

a. **Après** takes properly only the perfect infinitive. **Après avoir si souvent prié contre moi, . . . ils ne prieront jamais avec moi.** Guizot.

b. **Entre** *between* may have the infinitive. **Il y a de la différence entre avoir égard à et avoir des égards pour.** Boinvilliers.

c. **Par** is thus used after **commencer** and **finir. J'ai commencé par dire comme toi.** Grév. **Le commerce, qui a besoin de la liberté par intérêt, finit par en contracter le sentiment.** Lamart.

d. **Pour** like **afin de** (cf. 251 above) is used freely to express purpose or reason (cf. 244 *c*). **Mais le temps est trop cher pour le perdre en paroles.** Corn. **Je viens pour vous l'apprendre.** Id. **Demandez tout, pour ne rien obtenir.** Rac.

e. **Sans** *without* is much used with the infinitive: **Parlons, sans nous fâcher, monsieur, je vous supplie.** Mol. **Il les regardait en face sans rougir.** Lamart.

THE PARTICIPLE.

253. The participle is a verbal adjective, taking the modifiers of a verb, but itself modifying substantives just as an adjective.

a. Used adjectively it agrees with its noun in gender

and number (cf. 162). **La vie errante et oisive du sauvage.** Chateau. **Cette flamme brûlante que ton sein palpitant ne pouvait contenir.** de Musset. **Ses mots retentissants deviennent les proverbes de la Révolution.** Lamart. **La nation armée et pensante était là en personne.** Id.

b. Many participles have become genuine adjectives, as **amusant, charmant,** etc. Sometimes the adjective has an older spelling. Cf. **différent, différant; excellent, excellant; fatigant, fatiguant; vacant, vaquant;** etc.

THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

254. The present participle is invariable when used with participial function. **Ainsi notre amitié, triomphant à son tour, Vaincra la jalousie.** Corn. **Les animaux, vivant d'une manière plus conforme à la nature, doivent être sujets à moins de maux que nous.** J.-J. Rousseau. In the following compare the variable participle (adjectival) with the invariable participle (participial). **Elle se voyait seule, enfermée avec un mourant, mourante** (adj.) **elle-même, et ne pouvant** (part.) **plus attendre de secours.** G. S.

a. The Latin present participle passed into French (104 *b* 6) and also the Latin gerund (104 *b* 7). Being identical in form, the two have become merged in the feeling of the language. The gerund with **en** is often called the gerundive participle.

b. This participle, being originally of one termination (cf. 87 *b*), did not vary for gender in the oldest French even in adjectival function. In the eleventh century it began to be assimilated to the adjective, distinguishing both number, case, and gender. The existing sharp distinction between the variable adjective (253 *a*) and the invariable participle is but two centuries old. A few participles are still inflected even in participial use, e.g. **La cour séante à Paris, séance tenante,** etc.

255. The chief uses of the present (or perfect, cf. 260) participle are as follows:—

a. As attributive modifier—

1. Of the subject of the sentence. **Mais, ne disant mot,**

je ne pense pas moins. Mol. **La cigale, ayant chanté Tout l'été Se trouva fort dépourvue.** L. F. **Tout à coup, regardant sa montre, il prit le long pistolet dans ses mains.** de V. **Ayant dit cela, le rossignol mourut.** Th. Gautier.

α. With **aller** it is used idiomatically in the predicate. **Il va semant partout et prodiguant sa vie.** de Musset. **Des arpenteurs avec de longues chaines allaient mesurant le terrain.** Chateau.

β. For the use of the present participle in the predicate after **être** as in English *I am running* cf. 219 *a* 1.

2. Less commonly relating to the object of the sentence. **Elle m'a surprise pleurant.** Dumas. **Je me revois enfant . . . jouant, courant, criant avec mes frères.** V. H. (cf. 244 *b* 3). **On voyait aussi Minerve assemblant autour d'elle tous les beaux-arts.** Fén.

3. Occasionally even in remoter relations. **Si le barbier lui tira du sang étant malade, vous lui en avez tiré se portant bien.** Florian. **Il était suivi de ses officiers portant des armes.** A. France.

b. In an absolute construction with a noun or pronoun (cf. 161 *g*). Cf. Latin ablative absolute. **La mère étant morte jeune, le père . . . avait confié l'éducation de son enfant à une vieille tante.** Daudet. **Et d'où prend le Senat, Moi vivant, moi régnant, le soin de mon État?** Corn.

c. The gerund (254 *a*) after the preposition **en** is used with even greater freedom than the participle.

1. Referring to the subject of the sentence. **En priant et en méditant de la sorte, elle oublia l'heure qui s'écoulait.** G. S. **Chacun l'imita en se taisant ou en parlant bas.** de V.

2. Less commonly referring to the object of the sentence. **Sans doute, en me voyant, une pudeur secrète, Ne vous laisse jouer qu'une joie inquiète.** Rac.

3. It may even refer to substantives in other relations, or have no definite connection with any. **En disant ces mots les larmes lui vinrent aux yeux.** Fén. **Des pleurs, en l'embrassant, coulèrent de ses yeux.** Volt. **Mais l'appétit vient *toujours* en mangeant.** Latouche.

REMARKS.—1. This construction is derived directly from the corresponding Latin one, e.g. **en aimant** < **in amando.**

2. The gerund with **en** is frequently strengthened by an adverbial **tout** modifying it. **Tout en marchant elle lui parlait de son frère.** Mérimée. **Tout en parlant, le bandit examinait le bras d'Orso.** Id.

3. The use of the gerund with **à** is obsolete and is found only in a few old phrases. **Elle est prude à son corps défendant.** Mol.

THE PAST PARTICIPLE.

256. The past participle being passive is more nearly an ordinary adjective than the present participle, cf. Latin perf. pass. part. **Le roi fuyant et poursuivi eut son cheval tué sous lui.** Volt.

a. From intransitive verbs that compound with **être** (211 *c*) this passive participle has active force; cf. Latin perfect participle of deponents. **Il ne sera pas dit que moi parti, vous rirez de la dupe que vous venez de faire.** Dumas.

AGREEMENT IN COMPOUND TENSES.

257. In compound verb forms (cf. 109, 116) the past participle is subject to the following laws of agreement:—

a. With **être** (116, 211), excepting in reflexives, it agrees with its subject like an ordinary adjective (162). **Nos plus heureux succès sont mêlés de tristesse.** Corn. **Ses villes étaient réduites en cendres, ses trésors pillés, les provisions... saisies.** Volt. **La cigale, ayant chanté Tout l'été, se trouva fort dépourvue quand la bise fut venue.** L. F. **Frappons la tête et la couronne est morte.** V. H.

b. With **avoir** (210), and with **être** in all reflexives, (211 *b*) it agrees with the direct object when the latter precedes it, otherwise it is invariable. **De toutes les batailles qu'il avait données.** Volt. **Quelle guerre intestine avons-nous allumée?** Corn. **Le bruit de nos trésors les a tous attirés.** Rac. **Elle s'était arrêtée devant la porte.** G. S.

Les ennemis qu'Astarté s'était attirés. Fén.; but **Ils se sont donné l'un à l'autre une promesse de mariage.** Mol.

REMARKS.—1. The object usually precedes the verb as follows:—

(*a*) In some questions and exclamations.

(*b*) The conjunctive personal pronouns (173).

(*c*) The relative pronoun as object.

2. Logically with **avoir** the participle should always agree with the object (109 *a*, 212, rem.), and this was the case in Old French, when the participle could still be separated from the auxiliary, e.g. **elles ont la jeunesse méprisée** (cf. **adulescentiam habent despicatam**). Gradually as the auxiliary and participle grew together, the agreement was neglected, particularly when the object followed at some distance, but not when it preceded. Hence the rule as now observed.

3. In reflexive verbs the participle should historically agree with the subject (212, rem.), and did so in Old French. Instances occur as late as the 16th century, e.g. **Ils se sont frottez leur main.** Rabelais. But reflexives are in fact transitive, and the modern language has gradually come to make the agreement with the object as with other transitives. The patois still preserve traces of the older usage, e.g. **Elle s'est faite un chapeau.**

258. From the above rules of agreement there are no real exceptions. Special cases follow.

a. The participle agrees only with a genuine direct object.

1. Not with an adverbial modifier, of time, space, value, etc. (161 *h*). **Les nombreuses années que j'ai vécu.** J.-J. Rous. **La peine que ce travail m'a coûté.** Acad. Present usage makes **coûter** agree, when used figuratively.

2. An apparent object may in reality belong to a dependent infinitive, to a verb in a dependent clause, or to an infinitive understood. **Tous les soldats se sont laissé prendre.** Volt. **La vérité qu'il a négligé de suivre.** Fén. **Les affaires que j'ai prévu que vous auriez.** Beauzée. **Il a été libre de mettre à cet abandon la condition qu'il a voulu** (**mettre**). Sirey.

3. **Fait,** the past participle of **faire,** used with dependent infinitive to form a causative notion (244 *b* 1), is invariable. **La lettre qu'il m'a fait parvenir.** Acad.

4. Impersonals are regarded as incapable of governing a direct object. **Les chaleurs excessives qu'il a fait.** Condillac.

b. Sometimes the sense rather than strict syntax determines whether the participle shall be variable or not.

1. After adverbs of quantity with a dependent substantive (cf.

139 *d* 2), the participle varies to agree with the substantive. **Que de miracles les historiens ont prodigués . . .** ! Volt.

α. Similarly when **en** as plural pronoun depends on an adverb of quantity. **Combien en ai-je vus mourir.** Chassang. Not, however, when **en** stands alone as object. **La crainte de faire des ingrats ou le déplaisir d'en avoir trouvé.** Fléchier.

2. After collective nouns (including **le peu**) with a dependent substantive, there is room for choice. **Le peu de leçons que j'ai prises ont suffi.** Acad. **Cette troupe de jeunes gens que j'ai vue ou vus.** Littré.

259. The absolute use of the past participle (cf. 255 *b*) is quite common. **Mais le combat fini, c'est alors qu'il se montre.** Ponsard.

a. A few participles thus used have come to be felt as adverbs or prepositions in certain positions (cf. 162 *a* 4) and are then invariable, e.g. **attendu, non** (or **y**) **compris, excepté, ouï, supposé,** etc.

THE COMPOUND PARTICIPLE.

260. The perfect participle is used in constructions parallel to those of the present participle (cf. 255 *a*, *b*), but not adjectively, nor of course as gerund with **en**. For examples, see above.

REMARK.—The compound participle is felt to be somewhat cumbrous and heavy, and is rather to be avoided. There is little occasion to use such forms made from intransitive verbs (256 *a*).

THE ADVERB.

261. Adverbs modify verbs, adjectives, and other adverbs. **Vous me jugez très mal.** G. S. **Le cœur est toujours jeune et peut toujours saigner.** V. H.

a. Adverbs sometimes perform the functions of other parts of speech.

1. **Dont** and **où** are used as relative pronouns (193) and **en** and **y** as personal pronouns (175, 176).

2. A few, such as **ainsi, bien, mieux, mal, pis,** etc., may stand as predicate adjectives. **Si vous l'aviez vu, vous diriez: C'est bien pis.** Mol. **Cette femme est bien.** Acad.

3. Adverbs in attributive use are much less common. **Votre presque éternité.** Lamart. **La page ci-contre.** Acad.

b. On the other hand adjectives are sometimes used where adverbs would better accord with our idiom, cf. Latin **primus, primum**; πρῶτος, πρῶτον. **Tranquille je m'endors, Et tranquille je veille.** Chénier. **Ils ont tiré les premiers.** Mérimée. **Le roi gémissait tout haut** (cf. 121) **de la désobéissance de ses frères.** Lamart.

1. In Old French the distinction between adjective and adverb was not so clearly made as at present, and adjectives used adverbially did not wholly lose their variability for gender (cf. 202 *b*).

c. Adverbial phrases made up of an adverb governed by a preposition are far more common in French than in English, e.g. **à jamais, pour jamais, par où, par ici, par là, d'aujourd'hui, de devant,** etc.

ADVERBS OF QUANTITY.

262. Adverbs of quantity require the preposition **de** before the noun governed (272 *a* 4 *β*). **Assez d'argent.** Acad. **Combien de grands docteurs.** Fén. **Vous lui feriez tant déplaisirs.** Mérimée. Such adverbs are **assez, autant, beaucoup, bien, combien, moins, peu, plus, tant, trop, trop peu,** etc.

a. **Bien** *much, many* is exceptional, in that it requires **de** and the definite article. **Il m'a fallu bien du temps pour arriver à trouver la source de la véritable grandeur.** de V.

b. **Force,** *much, many* takes no preposition and may be regarded as an indeclinable adjective. **On y voit force sangliers.** Mérimée.

PLACE OF THE ADVERB.

263. Adverbs modifying verbs are in general placed immediately after the verb modified or, particularly adverbs of place or time, stand emphatically at the head of the sentence, but not, in prose, between the subject and *predicate.* **On trompe difficilement une nation libre sur ses**

vrais intérêts. Volt. **Il m'intéresse infiniment.** Beaumarchais. **Toujours la tyrannie a d'heureuses prémices.** Rac. **Et tout résolûment je veux que tu te taises.** Mol. In poetry the order is freer (cf. 150 *b*). **Si j'étais en sa place, un homme assurément ne m'épouserait pas de force impunément.** Mol. **En** and **y** are exceptions, having the position of object-pronouns (cf. 173). For the place of **ne** see 267.

a. When modifying adjectives or other adverbs, they are placed directly before them.

b. Interrogative adverbs regularly head the sentence; also adverbs of degree, which are then separated from the word they modify. Such are **comme (comment), que** *how;* **tant** *so,* **plus** *the more,* **moins** *the less.* **D'où savez-vous mon nom?** Regnard. **Pourquoi donc me déplaisez-vous si fort?** Beaumarchais. **Ah! que le sort est injuste!** Id. **Tant il était troublé.** Fén. **Plus leur cause m'est chère, et plus l'effet m'en blesse.** Corn. (Cf. 157 *d.*)

c. With the compound tenses of verbs, adverbs, particularly those of place and time (except **aujourd'hui, demain, hier**), and most of the negative complements, commonly stand between the auxiliary and the participle. **Elle ne vous a encore rien dit.** Mérimée. **Je n'ai jamais rien accordé à la menace.** Scribe. **Les vrais conquérants sont partout révérés.** Volt.

d. **Bien, mieux, mal, pis, assez, trop,** and a few others, with most of the particles of negation (267 *b*), regularly precede the infinitive. **Je ne saurais jamais assez réparer de paroles le crime que j'ai commis.** Mézerai. **Il est impossible de mieux saisir cette réalité.** Flammarion.

RESPONSIVES.

264. The responsives are **oui, si** *yes,* **non (nenni** rare, see below) *no.* **Je ne dis oui ni non, de crainte de mentir.** Th. Corn. **Moi, ma mère?—Oui, vous, faites la sotte un peu.** Mol.

a. Unlike the English equivalents they are used after

mais *but*, and **que** *that*, thus quite elliptically in the phrases **oh que oui, oh que non. Mais oui, ma cousine, on se marie.** Grév. **Vous voyez bien que non.** Dumas. **Les uns disent que non, les autres disent que oui; et moi, je dis que oui et non.** Mol.

b. **Si** is a more emphatic affirmative than **oui** and is often used in answer to a question to which a negative reply is expected (i.e. a **num**-question). **Si** is strengthened by the participle **fait** making the elliptical phrase **si fait** *yes indeed.* **Cela sera, ma fille. — Non. — Si. — Non, vous dis-je. — Si, vous dis-je.** Mol. **Vous avez entendu ? . . . — Non. — Si fait, si fait. — Pardonnez-moi.** Id. **Pas une main amie pour lui fermer les yeux ? — Si, oh ! si fait.** Sandeau.

THE NEGATIVE.

265. Non < Lat. **non** (cf. 26 *b*) has a wider use than merely as a responsive.

a. Standing absolutely for a negative sentence or part of a sentence, like English *not.* **Que m'importe à moi, si Rome souffre ou non ?** Corn. **On peut changer d'amant, mais non changer d'époux.** Id.

1. Frequently in the phrase **non que**, equivalent to **ce n'est pas que. Non que votre colère ou la mort m'intimide.** Corn.

2. It may be strengthened by an added **pas** or **point** (see below). **C'est la loi et non pas l'homme qui doit régner.** Fén.

b. To negative a single word (other than a verb) or a phrase. **Cela est offert par eux et non par moi.** A. France. **Immolez, non à moi, mais à votre couronne,** etc. Corn.

1. In Old French it was used also with verbs. With **faire** it is still sometimes found. **Non ferai, de par tous les diables.** Mol.

c. In the idiomatic phrase **non plus** *no more* (to be rendered variously) after negatives. **Vous ne le voulez pas, ni moi non plus.** Littré. **Personne non plus.** Scribe.

REMARK.—The Latin negative particle **non** has given rise under varying accentual conditions to three French forms: **non, nen, ne. Nen,** formerly common, now occurs only in the compound **nenni,** < **nenil** < **nonelli** *no*, still used in colloquial speech confidentially. **Dites-moi, n'y suis-je point encore ? — Nenni.** L. F. **Vous êtes curieuse, à ce qu'il paraît ? — Nenni ! Je ne suis point curieuse.** G. S.

THE DOUBLE NEGATIVE.

266. **Ne** has become the regular negative particle with verbs (cf. 265 *b*). **Je n'ai pas beaucoup de fortune, mais j'ai de quoi vivre.** G. S.

a. At first **ne** was a complete negative, but the desire for emphasis or explicitness led gradually to the use of a number of words, denoting a small portion of something, in connection with the negative; thus **pas** < **passu** *step*, **point** < **ponctu** *point*, **mie** < **mica** *bit*, **goutte** < **gotta** *drop*, **mot** < **mottu** *mutter*, *word*, **brin** *mote*, etc. Through frequent use with **ne** their own meanings became more and more obscured, till **pas**, **point** (and formerly **mie**) became mere complements of the negative, and the others retained only a general substantive value of *thing* and with **ne** in some phrases are still used as equivalent to **ne . . . rien** *nothing*. **Qui ne dit mot, consent.** Prov. **Combien de grands docteurs qui ne voient goutte, croyant tout voir.** Fén. **Ne les écoutez mie, car ils vous mèneraient loin.** P. L. Courier.

b. The last step was taken when these and similar words from long association with the negative came themselves to have negative force, **ne** being felt to belong solely to the verb, and on the other hand when words by themselves really negative, as **nul** < **nullu**, **ni . . . ni** < **nec . . . nec**, etc., became insufficient alone and required a **ne** before the verb. The negative is therefore double, **ne** belonging particularly to the verb, and the complement constituting, or attaching itself to, another part of the sentence. **Entendez-vous le latin ? — En aucune façon.** Mol. (204, rem.). **Un climat rigoureux qui n'a presque ni printemps ni automne.** Volt.

c. Parallel linguistic developments are seen in Latin **nihil** < **nihilum** < **ni hilum**; English *not* < *ná wiht*, cf. *no* < *ná;* German nicht < ni wiht.

267. In the full negative expression **ne** stands immediately before the verb (only an object-pronoun may intervene, see 173), and the negative complement **pas, point,** etc., follows. **Je ne vous réponds pas des volontés d'un père.** Mol. **Il ne perd point de temps.** Volt.

a. **Pas** and **point** (also usually **guère, jamais, plus, rien,** cf. 204, rem., 263 *c*) with compound tenses precede the participle. **Ne m'avez-vous pas appelé ?** Mol. **Elle n'a rien cassé, rien renversé.** Grév. **Elle ne vous a encore rien dit.** Mérimée.

Ne WITHOUT NEGATIVE COMPLEMENT.

269. Ne without any negative complement, very common in Old French, has maintained itself in a considerable number of cases.

a. Generally with the verbs **savoir** (always in the sense of *am able*), **pouvoir, oser, cesser,** and colloquially with **bouger,** unless the negation is emphatic. **Je ne sais ce qui m'est entré dans l'œil.** Beaumarchais. **Nous ne pouvons vieillard, combattre ensemble.** V. H. **Ne bougez d'ici, je vous prie.** Mol. But **Ils ne pouvaient pas se sauver.** Volt., etc.

b. In relative clauses depending on an antecedent that is *negative* either actually or by implication (236 *b*). **Pas un (des maux) qui ne te touche et qui ne t'appartienne.** de Musset. **Quel sujet pourrais-je traiter qui ne fût insipide?** de Maistre.

c. In some less important cases:—

1. With **si** in the sense of *if not, unless,* and also when **si** is implied by inversion (233 *c*). **S'il ne meurt aujourd'hui je puis l'aimer demain.** Rac. **Ils auraient résisté, n'eût été le canon.** Ponsard.

2. In rhetorical questions introduced by **qui** *who* and **que** *why.* **Qui n'a lu mille fois, qui ne relit sans cesse, Ces vers mystérieux?** de Musset. **Oh! que ne descendis-je alors dans le pays des âmes?** Chateau.

3. With the compound tenses of verbs after **depuis que, il y a . . . que, voilà . . . que** used of time. **Il y a huit jours que je ne vous ai vu.** Mol. But **Il y a six mois que je ne lui parle pas.** Acad. **Depuis que je ne vous ai vu, il s'est passé de bien grandes choses.** Acad.

4. In isolated phrases. **N'importe, n'avoir que faire, n'avoir garde de** *to be unable,* and with some optative subjunctives (233 *b*), e.g. **plaise, déplaise, tienne,** etc. **N'importe pourvu que je dise toujours la vérité.** Fén. **À Dieu ne plaise que je te fasse une pareille injure.** Beaumarchais. **Qu'à cela ne tienne. Il est dans ce bureau.** Id.

Ne WHERE NOT LOGICALLY REQUIRED.

270. The French idiom requires or allows **ne** in a dependent que-clause in many cases where it is not logically required and generally not to be translated into English. In these cases **ne** is used without negative complement.

a. After verbs of *fear*, **craindre, appréhender, redouter, trembler,** etc., and after nouns of kindred meaning, so used as to imply the presence of fear. **Je tremble que le jour ne se lève et ne nous surprenne à notre arrivée.** G. S. **Il ne voulut pas entrer, de peur que sa présence n'agitât le peuple.** Lamart. But **On ne craint pas qu'il venge un jour son père; On craint qu'il n'essuyât les larmes de sa mère.** Rac.

1. When these verbs are followed by the indicative or conditional (234 *b* 3) **ne** is not used. **J'ai peur qu'il sera blâmé.** Balzac.

b. After verbs of *hindering* and *avoiding*, **empêcher, éviter, prendre garde,** etc. **Il fallait empêcher qu'on ne tirât sur elle.** Thiers. **Prends garde qu'on ne te voie.** Dumas. When these verbs are used negatively **ne** may be dropped. **Je n'empêche pas qu'il sorte.** Littré.

1. **Défendre** *forbid* no longer takes **ne,** and in general the tendency of the modern language is towards restricting this use of **ne.**

c. After verbs of *doubt*, *denial*, *despair*, **douter, contester, disconvenir, nier, désespérer,** etc., when used negatively or with implied negation. **Il ne douta pas qu'elle ne vint se venger.** V. H. **Peut-on nier que les bonnes mœurs ne soient essentielles à la durée des empires.** J.-J. Rousseau.

d. After **il s'en faut** and **il tient à,** used negatively or interrogatively (including **il s'en faut peu**). **Peu s'en fallut**

que le vieux Thad ne s'en prît à pleurer comme un enfant. V. H. **Il n'a pas tenu à moi qu'elle ne vint plus tôt.** Id. **À quoi tient que je ne te fasse fusiller?** V. H.

e. After **à moins que, sans que** (sometimes), and **que** (*unless, without,* 235 *e* 2) after a negative clause, also sometimes after **avant que. À moins que vous ne l'exigiez, je ne veux point forcer ma mémoire à ce travail.** G. S. **Ils ne le feraient pas qu'ils n'eussent prouvé leur puissance.** de V. **Elle parvint à rentrer dans la cuisine quelques moments avant qu'Orso ne parût.** Mérimée.

f. After a comparative or word used as a comparative (**autre, autrement**) in an affirmative construction. **Je suis plus à vos ordres que vous n'êtes aux miens.** Lamart. **On se voit d'un autre œil qu'on ne voit son prochain.** L. F.

REMARKS.—1. A dependent infinitive never has the redundant **ne**, only the subordinate **que**-clause. **J'avais peur de vous quitter, j'avais peur de vous suivre.** Sévigné.

2. In all these so-called redundant negatives, the principal clause has a negative or half-negative sense that justifies them. The Latin shows parallel phenomena in nearly every instance. Cf. the following: *a.* **Timeo ne veniat.** *b.* **Cave ne videat.** *c.* **Non dubito quin audiat.** *d.* **Paullum abest quin eum interficiat.** *e.* **Deesse mihi nolo quin te admoneam.** *f.* Here the Greek offers a parallel. *μᾶλλον ἢ οὐ* with pleonastic *οὐ*.

THE PREPOSITION.

271. The prepositions in French are vastly more important than in Latin, because besides the uses paralleled by the Latin prepositions, they have supplanted for the most part the Latin case-forms (cf. 160). The pronoun has preserved some case distinctions (173, 174), but not the noun. The preposition **de** besides other uses (see below) is employed before substantives to express many of the relations for which the genitive case stands in Latin; hence strictly parallel to the genitively used adverbial forms **en** and **dont** (175, 193 *a*). **À**, in addition to other meanings (see below), expresses also with substantives the regular dative relations, standing parallel to the pronoun cases **lui, leur**, etc., and to the datively used adverbial forms **y** and **où** (176, 193 *b*). Hence **de** and **à** are sometimes called case-prepositions, but with no scientific justification. As the most used prepositions they are treated first below and more fully than the rest.

272. De < Lat. **de** possessed by inheritance a wide territory, and in the gradual breakdown of the Latin case-system its use was still more extended until it came to embrace the most of what was expressed by the Latin genitive and ablative cases. Its use seems to be still on the increase. Hence its translations must be various, i.e. *of* or *from*, or less commonly *with*, *in*, *by*, *on*, *to*, etc. A classified outline of its uses follows. For details, see the dictionaries, especially Littré.

a. Genitive relations, expressed in English mostly by the possessive case or the preposition *of*.

1. Possessive. **Les fables de La Fontaine, les épitres de Boileau,** etc. **La barque touchait déjà le rivage de l'empire de Pluton.** Fén. **Le croassement des corbeaux et la voix lugubre des hiboux.** Id. For parallel use of **en** cf. **Quand on est dans un pays, il faut en suivre l'usage.** Montesquieu.

α. From this is developed the use of **de** after **chemin, route,** etc. **Le chemin de Paris,** *the Paris road,* i.e. *the road to Paris.* **La grande route de Prague.** G. S.

β. So in a great variety of expressions, denoting *office, end, nature, quality,* etc., often equivalent to a compound word in English. **Le maître de chant** *the singing-master,* **un coup d'œil, un coup de fusil, un signe de tête,** etc., etc.

2. Objective. **La haine de la pauvreté,** i.e. *towards poverty.* **L'horreur que tu fais voir d'un mari vertueux.** Corn. **Le respect des autels.** Id.

3. Appositive, where of two nouns denoting the same thing the one of narrower significance follows the other and is governed by **de. La ville de Rome,** cf. **urbs Roma** (or rarely **Romae**). **La comédie du Tartufe.** Chamfort. **Le titre de duc de Montebello.** Bignon.

α. An extension of this usage in familiar style gives such phrases as **un diable d'homme, ces fripons d'enfants,** etc., and in old style after **monsieur, monseigneur,** etc. **Bonjour, monsieur du corbeau.** L. F. **Ô bourreau d'homme.** Mol. **Ma brave femme de mère.** G. S. **Ce damné d'hérétique.** Dumas.

4. Partitive, the whole introduced by **de** depending on the part. **Qui de vous? Un peu de sucre; le premier des peuples; le cantique des cantiques; la plus belle fille du village,** etc. **Qui de vous n'a trouvé du charme à suivre des yeux les nuages du ciel?** de V.

α. An extension of this usage is seen in the **de** after the interrogatives **que** and **quoi**, indefinites, adverbs of quantity, etc. **Quoi de plus beau! qu'avez-vous de bon?** etc. **Que de grâces! que d'esprits.** Beaumarchais. **Il y a beaucoup d'appelés, et peu d'élus.** Acad. **Si le ciel tombait, il y aurait bien des alouettes de prises.** Prov. **Nous n'avions rien de caché.** de V.

β. A still wider extension was formerly prevalent where **de** is idiomatically prefixed to words in apposition to the interrogative **qui** as subject. **Qui des deux mène plus sûrement au bonheur, de l'esprit ou du cœur?** Boufflers. The introduction of **de** is due to the influence of the partitive dependency, but is often found even when the latter is only implied. **Qui a raison, de ma fille ou de moi.** Mol. **Qui, de toi ou de moi, a le plus gagné?** Chateau. **Qui serait victorieux, ou de Minerve ou de l'Amour?** Fén.

γ. Hence, too, the partitive use of **de** for *some, any* in all constructions (153, 154).

5. Material or contents (cf. also 276 *b* 3). **Une bague d'or, une maison de bois, un pot de lait,** etc. **Sa charge était de sel.** L. F. **La longue épingle de jais dans ses cheveux.** Daudet. **Des cornes remplies de bière ou de vin.** Thierry.

6. Measure, value, characteristic (cf. *b* 5). **Je ne t'ai plus quitté d'une minute.** Daudet. **Un diamant d'un grand prix.** Acad. **Un homme de talent.** Scribe. **Un rectangle long de cinquante mètres d'environ sur soixante-quinze de largeur.** Grév.

α. Idiomatically after the verbs **traiter, qualifier,** etc. **Ils nous traitent d'égaux.** Vol. **On le qualifie de duc.** Littré.

b. Ablative relations (< Lat. ablative alone or with **de, ab,** etc.) translated by *from*, less commonly by *with*, *in*, *by*, etc.

1. Place and time from which. **Il arrive de Londres.** *Acad.* **De temps en temps,** etc. **Nous nous éloignâmes de**

ce lieu. B. de St. Pierre. **Il y a vingt-cinq ans de cette nuit.** Dumas.

α. After the idea of nearness, **près, proche, approcher**, etc. **Près de moi,** *near from* (i.e. *reckoning from*) *me.* **En approchant de la baie.** L.-P. Ségur. **Les maisons proches de la rivière.** Acad.

β. Similarly in several common phrases with **côté.** **L'armée suédoise marche donc de ce côté.** Volt. **Tous les corps . . . se retiraient en hâte du côté de l'orient.** Id. Thus **de mon côté** *toward me*, etc.

γ. In many phrases **de** denotes also *time at* or *within which.* **De bonne heure, de très grand matin, de mon temps; de toute la nuit, de ma vie, de trois jours**, etc., etc. **Je n'avais ni dormi ni mangé de vingt-quatre heures.** Sévigny.

2. Source or origin. **Les enfants qui naitront de ce mariage.** Acad. **Je me promets du fils ce que j'ai vu du père.** Corn.

α. From this arises the use of **de** to express agency after passive verbs (217 *b*, 277). **Il est respecté de tous.** Acad. **Il est aimé des peuples.** Fén. **Il vaut autant être mordu d'un chien que d'une chienne.** Prov.

3. Cause or reason, *at, with, from.* **Il fit couper la tête à son coq, de colère.** Rac. **Je les suivis de rage.** Corn. **Fort de la loi.** Dumas.

α. This is especially common after expressions of emotion. **Mon cœur souffre de l'idée de sa mort.** de V.

4. Manner, means or instrument, *with.* **Il marchait d'un pas relevé.** L. F. **Tu lui parles du cœur; tu la cherches des yeux.** Rac. **Elle nous faisait signe de la main.** Ponsard.

α. With **jouer** of a musical instrument, *on.* **C'est un parent de David, il joue de la harpe** Prov.

5. After comparatives, to denote degree of difference. **C'est le plus certain de beaucoup.** L. F. (cf. *a* 6 above).

6. After comparatives, *than* (cf. Latin ablative instead of **quam**), but only before numerals or words of a similar character, such as **midi, minuit, à moitié**, etc. **Plus de six mois s'étaient écoulés.** Michaud. **Il était alors plus de minuit.** de V.

273. À < **ad** assumed at the breakdown of the Latin

case-system the functions of the Latin dative case in addition to its own proper sphere. Its use has since become even more extended.

a. Dative relations expressed in English by *to* or *for*.

1. To introduce the indirect object. **Je te donne au seigneur Anselme.** Mol. The personal pronouns possess synthetic dative forms (174 *d*). **J'ai quelque chose à vous dire à tous deux.** Mol. **Que lui dirai-je enfin? je lui dois rendre compte.** Corn.

α. Many verbs require an indirect object whose equivalents in English take a direct object. Such are **conseiller, nuire, plaire, déplaire, renoncer, ressembler, résister, survivre,** etc., etc. The Latin construction has been largely preserved.

2. To denote the possessor, chiefly in the predicate after **être**. **L'espace et le temps sont au poëte.** V. H. **Tous les cœurs sont à elle.** Thiers.

α. Similarly after **trouver, supposer, connaître, croire,** and the like, with an ellipsis of **être** (cf. 174 *d*). **On supposait au duc d'Orléans . . . des projets sinistres.** Thiers.

β. As dative of interest or ethical dative, parallel to the dative pronoun-forms (174 *d*). **Une poutre cassa la jambe à l'athlète.** L. F.

3. After some verbs of *asking, buying, taking,* etc., in the sense of *from,* e.g. **acheter, arracher, demander, échapper, emprunter, enlever, soutirer,** etc. (cf. Latin dat. of separation). **Risquer votre vie pour dérober la mienne à la fureur des flots.** Mol. **Elle n'osa point retirer sa main à cette infortuné.** G. S. (cf. 174 *d*). Most of these may also take **de.**

b. Corresponding to **ad** (or **apud**) *to, at, with, by.* In these uses the personal pronouns frequently require **à** with their tonic forms, **à moi,** etc., instead of the conjunctive dative forms (cf. 174 *d*).

1. To denote *direction* in space or time, *to* (cf. **en** below). **À moi, comte, deux mots.** Corn. **Viens à l'ambulance.** V. H. **Tout mon sang se porte à ma tête.** Dumas. **La fortune qui vient à toi.** Id. **Les parties ajournèrent leurs espérances au jour de sa mort.** Lamart.

α. So of *moral direction, end,* or *purpose.* Here we often have in English a compound noun. **La poudre à canon.** V. H. **Une tasse à café, un pot au lait,** etc. Very frequently before infinitives (cf. 246). **Prépare-toi à être jugé par l'inflexible Mines.** Fén. **Une salle à manger, une chambre à coucher,** etc.

β. Between numerals to express *approximation,* e.g., **dix à douze,** *ten or a dozen.* **C'est une petite fille de sept à huit ans.** Daudet.

γ. Also distributively, like English *by.* **Un à un, goutte à goutte, peu à peu,** etc.

2. To denote *position* in space or time, *at.* **À quatre pas d'ici.** Corn. **Plusieurs balles sifflent à mes oreilles.** V. H. **À l'instant même.** Id.

α. Thus in particular of the location of a pain, etc., e.g. **mal aux dents, à la tête,** etc.

β. So of *circumstance,* etc. **À ses dures paroles, Nabopharsan se jetait le visage contre terre.** Fén.

3. To denote *characteristic, with,* etc. (Lat. **apud** > O.F. **od, o,** which was lost and replaced by **à**). **L'homme à l'oreille cassée, l'enfant aux yeux bleus, du café au lait,** etc. **À l'ongle on connaît le lion.** Prov. **Deux coursiers à longues oreilles.** L. F.

α. Further to denote *manner, means, instrument* (cf. **de**). **Rien n'est plus à mon gré, crier à haute voix, à force d'esprit,** etc. **S'avançant à pas de loup.** V. H. **La pluie tombait à torrents.** Thiers.

274. *a.* **Avec** < **apud hoc** *with,* mainly to denote accompaniment (cf. 272 *b* 4, 273 *b* 3 *α*), less commonly also instrument, means, manner, like English *with.* **Naître avec le printemps, mourir avec les roses.** Lamart. **Il s'est marié avec elle.** Acad.

1. Its opposite is **sans** < **sene** *without* (cf. 252). **Il savait taire un secret sans dire aucun mensonge.** Fén. **Leur langage est le plus pur français, sans lenteur, sans vitesse, sans accent.** de V. For the relation of **sans** to the negative, see 204 *c*, 268 *b*, 281 *b*.

b. **Chez** < **casa** *with, at the house of, among, in;* used of a residence, place of business, country, etc. **De Thou était chez lui avec son ami.** de V. **J'ai été chez vous.** Acad. **Le théâtre, respecté chez les Grecs, avili chez les Romains.** Chamfort.

275. *a.* **Avant** < **ab ante** *before* of time. **Avant le canon, c'était une ville de guerre.** Picard.

deux. V. H. **Pour lui, il se met à la tête de sa cavalerie.** Vol.

a. A very frequent use of **pour** is to express purpose before the infinitive (252 *d*), and in the compound **pour que** before the subjunctive (235 *b*).

279. *a.* **Sur** < **super** *upon, on, about.* **On débarqua des planches sur le quai.** Daudet. **Il versa sur lui des larmes pieuses.** Fén. **Je n'ai rien à dire sur cela.**

1. **Au-dessus de** *above, over.* **Une grande âme est au-dessus de l'injure.** La Bruyère. **Je me plaçai bien au-dessus de mes juges.** de V. **Au-dessus d'eux des pas craquaient.** Daudet.

b. **Sous** < **subtus** *under.* **Je sens mes jambes trembler sous moi.** de V. **En Sicile, sous un soleil plus chaud et un ciel plus pur.** Id. **J'écrivais sous sa dictée.** Id.

1. **Au dessous de** *below, underneath.* **Toute somme au dessous de mille francs.** Acad. **Cet ouvrage est au-dessous de la critique.** Acad.

280. *a.* **Vers** < **versus** *towards,* of physical direction. **Je me tournai vers ma fiancée.** Grév. **Vers le petit théâtre d'été . . . roulaient de nombreuses calèches.** Ead. **Vers la mauvaise saison.** Chateau.

1. **Du côté de** *towards* (cf. 272 *b* 1 *β*) is a close synonym.

b. **Envers** *towards,* of moral direction. **Tu es un traître envers moi, un lâche envers elle.** V. H. **La demeure hospitalière envers laquelle je me montrais si ingrat.** Grév.

1. The distinction between **vers** and **envers** is modern.

REPETITION OF PREPOSITIONS.

281. The prepositions **de, à, en,** and **sans** are generally repeated before each noun governed. **Une question de vie ou de mort.** Balzac. **Un mur bâti à chaux et à sable.** Acad. **En or et en argent.** Mignet. **Le roi marche incertain sans escorte et sans guide.** Volt.

a. When the several nouns refer to the same thing the preposition is not repeated. (Cf. 156.)

b. Instead of repeating **sans** a second noun may be introduced by **ni** (282 *c* 1). **Il était chez lui tout seul sans femme ni enfants.** Saint-Simon.

c. With the other prepositions repetition is not necessary, but is more common than in English. **Parmi les ris, les jeux et les grâces.** Fén. **La nouvelle se répandit bientôt dans le château et dans la ville.** Barante. **Toute femme est coquette ou par raffinement, Ou par ambition, ou par tempérament.** Destouches. **Occupé par la gloire et l'amour et les muses.** L.-P. Ségur.

THE CONJUNCTION.

282. Of coördinating conjunctions the commonest are **et, ou,** and **ni.** (Cf. 142.)

a. **Et** < **et** *and* may be introduced between each coördinate word or clause, or only before the last as in English (not as in Latin). **Qu'importe sa pitié, sa joie et sa vengeance?** Volt. **Ses fils et sa fille et la jeune duchesse l'entourèrent.** de V.

1. Correlatively **et . . . et** has the force of *both . . . and.* **Tous nos ports sont ouverts et pour elle et pour lui.** Rac.

b. **Ou** < **aut** *or* has an entirely similar treatment. **Le roi, l'âne ou moi, nous mourrons.** L. F. **Le successeur est déclaré par le prince lui-même ou par ses ministres ou par une guerre civile.** Montesquieu.

1. Correlatively **ou . . . ou** has the force of *either . . . or.* **Mon esprit ne peut être ou honteux ou confus.** Corn. **Je viens chercher ou la vie ou la mort.** Rac.

2. *Whether . . . or* is expressed by **soit . . . soit** or **soit . . . ou.** **Ils commencèrent le combat en lançant de loin cette hâche, soit au visage, soit contre le bouclier de l'ennemi.** Thierry. **La fortune soit bonne ou mauvaise, soit passagère ou constante, ne peut rien sur l'âme du sage.** Marmontel.

c. **Ni** < **nec** *neither, nor,* correlatively *neither . . . nor,* requires a **ne** before the verb (266 *b*) and may stand before each word or clause introduced, or before all after the first. **Ni le rossignol ni la rose ne se peuvent cacher.** Th. Gautier. **Le sénat et le peuple romain n'oublient ni les services ni les injures.** Vertot. **Nous n'avons ferme ni servante.** G. S. **Je ne veux, ni ne dois, ni ne puis vous obéir.** Boinvilliers.

1. For **ni** after **sans,** see 281 *b.* **Cette grande plaine sans un village ni une maison.** de V.

283. Of subordinating conjunctions by far the most important is **que** (cf. 144, 145). Its most important uses are as follows:—

a. **Que** < **quod** introducing the substantive clause (144). **Voulez-vous que je vous apprenne la logique?** Mol.

1. As final member of many compound conjunctions (144 *c*) < **quod, quam.**

b. **Que** < **quam** *than, as* introduces the modal adverbial clause (145 *c*). **Il est tel que son père.** Acad. **La poésie est plus naturelle à l'homme qu'on ne la pense.** St-Lambert.

c. To repeat other conjunctions, especially those ending in **que**, but also **quand, comme,** and **si** (235 *e* 1). **Quand on s'était bien repu, et qu'on approchait de l'ivresse, on appelait les gladiateurs.** Chateau.

d. In certain constructions for conjunctions of more restricted sense.

1. After **à peine** and **il y a** with expressions of time in the sense of *when, since.* **À peine le soleil était levé qu'on aperçut l'ennemi.** Acad. **Il y a huit jours que je ne vous ai vu.** Mol.

2. In subjunctive clauses with the sense of *until, unless* (= **que**. . **ne**), *in order that* (235 *b*, *c* 2). **Attendez que je la revoie encore une dernière fois.** Fén.

REMARKS.—1. **Que** as a conjunction < **quod, quam,** must be carefully distinguished from the relative pronoun **que** < **quem, quam, quod** (190 *b*), and the interrogative pronoun **que** < **qued** (197 *b*), which last gives rise to the adverbial uses, such as *how? how much? how many? why?*

2. The idiomatic **que** correlative to **ce** expressed or understood (132 *c*, 190 *b* 2, 198 *c*) is to be regarded as a relative pronoun. **Quel tombeau que le cœur, et quelle solitude!** de Musset. **C'est être très riche chez soi que de pouvoir faire de grandes choses.** Volt.

EXERCISES.

In the following exercises the portions of the Grammar to be learned are carefully stated, as well as those to be read. An article-number cited without its subdivisions signifies that only the paragraph bearing the article-number is required; an article-number (or a subdivision letter) followed by ff. is intended to include all its subdivisions. The punctuation, too, should be carefully noted, e.g., 82 *a* (without comma) calls for subdivision *a* only, but 82, *a* (with comma) requires both the main article numbered 82 and subdivision *a*, etc. The more important parts of the Grammar have been distributed among thirty-five chapters, but every experienced teacher will see at a glance that for most classes more than thirty-five lessons will be needed to cover the ground.

I.

THE ARTICLE.

Grammar Sections.

Learn: 81, *a*, 1, 2, *b*; 151, *a*, *b*, *c* 1, 2; 155.
Read: 80 ff.; 81 rem. 1, 2; 151*c* 3–9; 152 ff.

PARADIGM.

je suis, I am.	**nous sommes**, we are.
tu es, thou art.	**vous êtes**, you are.
il est, he is.	**ils sont**, they are.
elle est, she is.	**elles sont**, they are.
j'ai, I have.	**nous avons**, we have.
tu as, thou hast.	**vous avez**, you have.
il a, he has.	**ils ont**, they have.
elle a, she has.	**elles ont**, they have.

VOCABULARY.

à, to, at.	**autour de**, around.
amour, *n. m.*, love.	**aux**, at the, to the.
an, *n. m.*, year.	**carte**, *n. f.*, card.

ce, it, this, that.
chambre, *n. f.*, room.
dans, in.
de, of.
***deux**, two.
***dix**, ten.
douze, twelve.
elle, she.
enfant, *n. m.* or *f.*, child.
est, is.
***et**, and.
***femme**, *n. f.*, woman.
fille, *n. f.*, girl, daughter.
***fils**, *n. m.*, son.
frère, *n. m.*, brother.
garçon, *n. m.*, boy.
homme, *n. m.*, man.
jouent, play, are playing.
le, la, the.
leur, leurs, their.
lit, reads, is reading.
livre, *n. m.*, book.
même, *adj.*, same.
mère, *n. f.*, mother.
***neuf**, nine.
ou, or.
où, where, in which.
père, *n. m.*, father.
personne, *n. f.*, person.
petit, e, *adj.*, little.
quatre, four.
scène, *n. f.*, scene.
sœur, *n. f.*, sister.
sont, are.
suprême, *adj.*, supreme.
table, *n. f.*, table.
***tranquille**, *adj.*, quiet, tranquil.
un, une, a, an.

EXERCISES.

Quatre personnes[1] sont dans la chambre autour de la table, un homme, une femme, un garçon de douze ans,[2] et une petite[3] fille de neuf ou dix ans. Ce sont[4] le père, la mère et leurs deux enfants.[5] Le père lit[6] un livre à la femme. Le frère et la sœur jouent aux cartes.[7] C'est[8] une scène tranquille, où l'amour est suprême.

Four persons are in the room, the father and mother,[9] a boy of ten or twelve years, and the boy's sister.[10] The father and son are playing cards[11] at the table. The mother is at the same table, and she is reading[12] a book to the girl. It is a scene of tranquil love.

[1] Pl. of **personne**. [2] Pl. of **an**. [3] The fem. form of **petit**, cf. 89. **Ce sont** = *they are*. [5] Pl. of **enfant**. [6] **Lit** = *is reading*. [7] = *Are playing cards*. [8] **C'est** = *it is*. [9] Repeat the art. [10] Trans., *the sister of the boy*. [11] See note 7. [12] See note 6.

---

* In the vocabularies words are starred whenever their pronunciation presents any peculiarity. By turning to the French-English vocabulary at the end of the Grammar, the sections that give the required explanation may readily be found.

II.

THE NOUN.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 82, *a*, *b*; 85; 86, *a*, *b*, *c*, *d* 1, 2, 3.

READ: 82 *a* 1, 2, *α–δ*, 3, rem., *b* 1–3, rem.; 83 ff., 84 ff., 85 *a*, *b*; 86 *b* 1, *c* 1, 2, 3, rem.; 159 ff.

PARADIGM.—The possessive adjectives are:—

Sing.	**mon**, *m.*, **ma**, *f.*	Pl. **mes**, *m. f.*, my.
	ton, *m.*, **ta**, *f.*	**tes**, *m. f.*, thy.
	son, *m.*, **sa**, *f.*	**ses**, *m. f.*, his, hers, its.
	notre, *m.*, *f.*	**nos**, *m. f.*, our.
	votre, *m.*, *f.*	**vos**, *m. f.*, your.
	leur, *m.*, *f.*	**leurs**, *m. f.*, their.

VOCABULARY.

à, at, in, to.
ami, *n. m.*, friend.
animal, *n. m.*, animal.
autre, *adj.*, other.
avec, with.
campagne, *n. f.*, country.
château, *n. m.*, country-house.
cheval, *n. m.*, horse.
chien, *n. m.*, dog.
cousin, *n. m.*, cousin.
***des**, of the.
été, *n. m.*, summer.
fleur, *n. f.*, flower.
heureux, **se**, *adj.*, happy.
il, he; **ils**, they.
jardin, *n. m.*, garden.
oncle, *n. m.*, uncle.
***pays**, *n. m.*, place, region, country.
pendant, during.
à présent, at present.
quand, when.
tout, **e**, *adj.*, all, every.
vacances, *n. pl.*, vacation.
vont, go.

EXERCISES.

Les cousins des enfants sont à présent à la campagne, où ils vont[1] tous[2] les étés pendant les vacances à leur château. Leurs autres amis ont leurs châteaux dans le même pays. Tous les garçons et toutes[3] les filles ont leurs jardins de fleurs, leurs chevaux, leurs chiens et leurs autres animaux.

The children's friends have their country-houses in the same region. Every summer[4] during the vacation[5] they go[6] to their uncle's[7] country-house, where they have their flower-gardens, horses and dogs,[8] and play[9] with the other

boys and girls. Their fathers and mothers[8] are happy[10] when the children are in the country.

[1] *They go.* [2] Mas. pl. of **tout.** [3] Fem. pl. of **tout.** [4] Trans., *all the summers.* [5] Use the plural. [6] See note 1. [7] Trans., *the country-house of their uncle.* [8] Repeat poss. adj. with each noun. [9] **Jouent.** [10] **Heureux.**

III.

THE PARTITIVE ARTICLE.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 153; 154 ff. READ: 156 ff.; 157 ff.; 158 ff.

PARADIGM.

ai-je ? have I ?
as-tu ? hast thou ?
a-t-il (elle) ? has he (she)?

je n'ai pas, I have not.
tu n'as pas, thou hast not.
il n'a pas, he has not.

n'ai-je pas ? have I not?
n'as-tu pas ? hast thou not ?
n'a-t-il pas ? has he not ?

suis-je ? am I ?
es-tu ? art thou ?
est-il ? is he?
etc., etc.

avons-nous ? have we?
avez-vous ? have you ?
ont-ils (elles)? have they ?

nous n'avons pas, we have not.
vous n'avez pas, you have not.
ils n'ont pas, they have not.

n'avons-nous pas ? have we not?
n'avez vous pas ? have you not?
n'ont-ils pas ? have they not.

je ne suis pas, I am not.
tu n'es pas, thou art not.
il n'est pas, he is not.
etc. etc.

VOCABULARY.

apporte, brings.
après que, after.
bibliothèque, *n. f.*, library.
café, *n. m.*, coffee.
domestique, *n. f.*, servant.
écrire, to write.
encre, *n. f.*, ink.
finir, to finish.
grand, e, *adj.*, large.
je, I.
lettre, *n. f.*, letter.
maison, *n. f.*, house.
me, *me,* to me.
nous, *we,* us, to us.
papier, *n. m.*, paper.
plume, *n. f.*, pen.
pour, in order to, to.
rejoindre, to join.
soir, *n. m.*, evening.
sur, on.
thé, *n. m.*, tea.
toujours, always.
très, very.
trouve, find.
***vais, va,** go, goes.
viennent, come.
***ville,** *n. f.*, city, town.

EXERCISES.

Mon oncle a de grandes[1] et de très jolies[1] chambres dans sa maison. Tous les soirs je vais[2] à sa bibliothèque pour écrire des lettres à quelques[3] amis dans la ville. Je trouve[4] toujours des plumes, du papier, et de l'encre sur la table. Après que j'ai fini[5] mes lettres mes cousins viennent me rejoindre[6] et la domestique nous apporte[7] du thé ou du café.

My uncle has a house with large and pretty rooms. He goes[8] to the library every evening to write[9] letters to friends[10] in the city. He always finds[11] pens, ink, and paper on the table. After he has finished[12] his letters my cousins join him[13] and the servant brings[14] tea and coffee.

[1] Fem. pl. of adj. [2] *I go.* [3] *Some.* [4] *I find.* [5] *I have finished.* [6] *Come and join me.* [7] *Brings us.* [8] **Il va.** [9] **Pour écrire.** [10] Use **quelques**, cf. note 3. [11] **Il trouve toujours.** [12] **Après qu'il a fini.** [13] **Le rejoignent.** [14] **Apporte.**

IV.

IDIOM: ADVERBS OF QUANTITY.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 154 rem.; 262, *a.*

READ: 87 ff.; 88 ff.; 160; 161 ff.; 262 *b.*

PARADIGM.—Practise the present indicative of **avoir**, *to have*, affirmatively, interrogatively, and negatively with the following expressions:

avoir raison, to be right.
—— **tort**, to be wrong.
—— **chaud**, to be warm.
—— **froid**, to be cold.
—— **peur**, to be afraid.
avoir soif, to be thirsty.
—— **faim**, to be hungry.
—— **sommeil**, to be sleepy.
—— **honte**, to be ashamed.

VOCABULARY.

achète, buys.
argent, *n. m.*, money.
aujourd'hui, to-day.
autant, as many.
avoir, to have.
beaucoup, many, much.
chapeau, *n. m.*, hat.
chez, at, with.
chose, *n. f.*, thing.
cousine, *n. f.*, cousin (female).
déjà, already.
dépensé, spent.
dit, says, said.
donne, gives.

fois, *n. f.*, time; **une fois**, once.
gant, *n. m.*, glove.
joli, e, *adj.*, pretty.
marchand, *n. m.*, shopkeeper, merchant.
ne . . . pas, not.
paire, *n. f.*, pair.
par, a, per.
pauvre, *adj.*, poor.
que, that.
retour, *n. m.*, return.
robe, *n. f.*, dress.
semaine, *n. f.*, week.
soie, *n. f*, silk.
tant, so many, so much.
tante, *n. f.*, aunt.
voisinage, *n. m.*, neighborhood.
trop, too much, too many.

EXERCISES.

Ma cousine ne donne pas[1] beaucoup d'argent aux pauvres. Elle va à la ville une fois par semaine[2] où elle achète[3] beaucoup de robes, de chapeaux, de paires de gants, et d'autres choses chez le marchand.[4] A[5] son retour elle dit[6] à ma tante qu'elle[7] a honte d'avoir dépensé[8] tant d'argent quand il y a[9] tant de pauvres dans le pays.

My cousin goes once a[10] week to the city and buys[11] many things at the merchant's.[12] To-day she bought[13] many pairs of gloves, two silk dresses,[14] and as many hats. My aunt said[15] to my cousin on[16] her return that she already[17] has too many dresses, that she spends[18] too much money, and that there are[19] many poor people in the neighborhood.

[1] *Does not give.* [2] *A week.* [3] *Buys.* [4] *At the merchant's.* [5] *On.* [6] *Says.* [7] *That she.* [8] *Of having spent.* [9] *There are.* [10] See note 2. [11] See note 3. [12] See note 4. [13] **A acheté.** [14] Trans., *dresses of silk.* [15] **Dit.** [16] See note 5. [17] Place adv. after verb. [18] **Dépense.** [19] See note 9.

V.

ADJECTIVES.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 89; 90 *a*, *b*, *c* 1, 2, *d*, *e* 1, 2; 91; 162; 165 ff.

READ: 89 *a*, *b*; 90 *a* rem., *b* rem., 1, 2, *e* rem., *f*, *g*; 162 *a* ff., *b*, *c*, *d*; 163 ff.; 164 ff.

PARADIGM.

je donne, I give.
tu donnes, thou givest.
***il (elle)* donne**, he (she) gives.
nous donnons, we give.
vous donnez, you give.
ils (elles) donnent, they give.

VOCABULARY.

amie, *n. f.*, friend (female).
ancien, ne, *adj.*, old, former.
arbre, *n. m.*, tree.
aussi, as.
beau, bel, belle, *adj.*, beautiful.
blanc, blanche, *adj.*, white.
bleu, e, *adj.*, blue.
cheveu, *n. m.*, hair, in *pl.* hair
***cinq**, five.
clair, e, *adj.*, bright.
encore, still.
figure, *n. f.*, face.
grand-père, *n. m.*, grandfather.
***Jean**, John.
jeune, *adj.*, young.
mais, but.
mort, e, *adj.*, dead.
ne . . . plus, no longer, no more.
œil (*pl.* **yeux**), *n. m.*, eye.
portent, wear.
que, as; **aussi . . . que, as . . . as.**
qui, who, which.
rose, *n. f.*, rose.
rouge, *adj.*, red.
vieux, vieil, vieille, *adj.*, old.

EXERCISES.

Mon ami, Jean, donne des fleurs rouges aux petites filles aux yeux bleus,[1] et il donne de jolies petites roses blanches à leurs amies qui portent[2] des robes rouges. Tous les enfants jouent[3] dans le jardin qui[4] est très beau de[5] ses grands arbres, des[6] robes claires et des figures contentes des petits. Leur grand-père, qui est un vieil homme, est aussi heureux qu'[7]un petit garçon de dix ans. Il a les cheveux blancs. Tous ses frères et ses anciens amis sont morts.[8]

Their friend John is no longer young. His hair is white,[9] and all his brothers are dead.[10] But he is in the beautiful garden with the small children, and is as happy as a[11] child five years old.[12] The garden is still more beautiful to-day, with[5] the happy faces of the small boys and the bright dresses of the little girls. They all wear[13] blue or white flowers.

[1] *With blue eyes.* [2] *Who wear.* [3] *Are playing.* [4] *Which.* [5] *With.* [6] Cf. 281. [7] *As.* [8] *Dead.* [9] Use pl. of noun, verb and adj. [10] **Morts.** [11] **Qu'un.** [12] **Trans.**, *as a child of five years.* [13] **Portent tous.**

VI.

COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 93 ff.; 94, *a*, *b*; 166 ff. READ: 91 *a*, *b*, rem.; 92 ff.

VOCABULARY.

artiste, *n. m. f.*, artist.
aussi, also.
car for (*conj.*).
cathédrale, *n. f.*, cathedral.
célèbre, *adj.*, famous, celebrated.
desquels, of which.
église, *n. f.*, church.
Europe, *n. f.*, Europe.
français, e, *adj.*, French.
France, *n. f.*, France.
ici, here.
il y a, there is; there are.
intéressant, e, interesting.
Louvre, *n. m.*, Louvre.
meilleur, e, *adj.*, better, best.
monde, *n. m.*, world.
***monsieur**, *n. m.*, sir.
monument, *n. m.*, monument.
musée, *n. m.*, museum.
n'est-ce pas ? is it not (so)?, etc.
ni . . . ni (w. **ne**), neither . . . nor.
Notre Dame, Notre Dame.
Paris, *n. m.*, Paris.
parmi, among.
plus, more, most.
Sainte Chapelle, Saint Chapelle.
statue, *n. f.*, statue.
tableau, *n. m.*, picture, painting.

EXERCISES.

Paris est la ville la[1] plus intéressante de[2] la France. La ville a beaucoup de monuments, parmi les plus célèbres desquels[3] sont les églises et le musée du Louvre. La plus grande église est Notre Dame, mais la plus jolie est la Sainte Chapelle. Le Louvre est le plus beau et le plus grand musée du[2] monde, et ici sont les meilleurs tableaux des artistes français et beaucoup des statues les[1] plus célèbres.

The most celebrated pictures of the French artists are in the museum of the Louvre at Paris. This is the largest and most beautiful museum in[4] Europe. Here are also many celebrated statues. The most beautiful church in the city is the Sainte Chapelle, but the largest is the cathedral of Notre Dame. There is no other[5] city in Europe where there are[6] more interesting monuments.

COLLOQUY.

Vous avez[7] tort, mon ami, je n'ai pas[8] faim, j'ai soif, et—j'ai honte de[9] le dire—j'ai sommeil aussi. J'ai peur que vous ayez[10] froid. Vous avez raison, je n'ai pas chaud.

You are cold and hungry, are you not,[11] or am I wrong? You are wrong, sir, for I am neither[12] cold nor hungry.

[1] See 156 *b*. [2] *In*. [3] *Of which*. [4] **De l'**. [5] **Il n'y a pas d'autre ville**. [6] **Il y a**. [7] See 154, rem. [8] See 266. [9] See 250. [10] Subj. of **avoir**, see 234 *b* 1; trans. *are*. [11] **N'est-ce pas**, see 126 *b*. [12] See 282 *c*.

VII.

NUMERALS.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: **95 ff.**; **96 ff.**; 168 *b* 2, 3. READ: 167 ff.; 168 ff.

The teacher should practise the class in the use of the cardinal numbers, by giving the English and demanding the French of the student, and *vice versa*, as rapidly as possible. Practice may well be given by reciting the multiplication-table in French: **deux fois un font deux**, etc.

VOCABULARY.

demi, e, *adj.*, half.
empire, *n. m.*, empire
en, in.
guerre, *n. f.*, war.
heure, *n. f.*, hour, o'clock.
jour, *n. m.*, day.
midi, *n. m.*, noon, midday, twelve o'clock.
minuit, *n. m.*, midnight, twelve o'clock.
moins, less, wanting.
mort, *p. p.*, having died.
mourut, died.
Napoléon, Napoleon.
naquit, was born.
né, *p. p.*, born.
nombre, *n. m.*, number.
par, on account of, for.
poète, *n. m.*, poet.
premier, first.
quart, *n. m.*, quarter.
quel, le, *adj.*, what? which?
règne, *n. m.*, reign.
***second**, second.
siècle, *n. m.*, century.
sous, under.
vivait, lived.

EXERCISES.

Le règne de Louis XIV est célèbre par le nombre de ses grands poètes. Les plus grands étaient[6]: Molière, né à Paris

le[1] 15 janvier 1622, et mort le 17 février 1673; Corneille, né à Rouen le 6 juin 1606, et mort le 1er octobre 1684; Racine, né le 21 décembre 1639, mort le 26 avril 1699; La Fontaine, né le 8 juillet 1621, mort le 13 avril 1695; Boileau, né en[2] 1636, mort en 1711.

Victor Hugo, the greatest French poet of the nineteenth century, was born[3] at Besançon on[1] the 26th of February, 1802, and died at Paris on the 22d of May, 1885. He was born during the wars of Napoleon I., and lived during the reigns of[4] Louis XVIII., Charles X., Louis Philippe I., and during the second empire under Napoleon III.

COLLOQUY.

Quel jour de la semaine avons-nous aujourd'hui? Nous avons lundi, le 10 août. Quelle heure est-il? Il est dix heures. Il est dix heures dix. Il est dix heures et demie,[5] dix heures un quart, dix heures moins un quart, dix heures moins cinq. Il est midi; il est minuit.

What day of the month is it? It is Wednesday, the fourth of January. What o'clock is it? It is four; six minutes past four; a quarter past four; a quarter to four; ten minutes to four.

[1] No prep. in dating, 168 *b*. [2] **En** in dating, 276 *b*. [3] Pret. of **naître**, 119, no. 33. [4] Repeat prep. 281. [5] 162 *a* 2. [6] *were*.

VIII.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 97, *a*, *b*, *c*; 169; 171; 173; 174 *a*, *b*; 178, *a*, rem. 1.

READ: 97 *d*, *e*, *f*; 172 ff.; 173 *a* ff., *b* ff.; 174 *c* ff., *d* ff.; 175 ff.; 176 ff.; 177 ff.; 178 *b*, *c*, *d*; 179 ff.; 180 ff.

PARADIGM.

je veux, I wish.	**nous voulons**, we wish.
tu veux, thou wishest.	**vous voulez**, you wish.
il (elle) veut, he (she) wishes.	**ils (elles) veulent**, they wish.
je vais, I go.	**nous allons**, we go.
tu vas, thou goest.	**vous allez**, you go.
il (elle) va, he (she) goes.	**ils (elles) vont**, they go.

donne, give (thou).
donnons, let us give.
donnez, give (ye).

VOCABULARY.

aimer, to love.
bon, ne, *adj.*, kind, good.
chercher, to seek.
décrire, describe, explain.
demain, to-morrow.
divertir, interest, amuse.
franco-prusse, Franco-Prussian.
histoire, *n. f.*, story, tale.
jamais, never.
lit, reads; **lisent**, read.
long, ue, *adj.*, long.
maintenant, now.
montrer, to show.
oublier, to forget.
oui, yes.
partir, to set out, return home.
raconter, to tell, relate.
récit, *n. m.*, account, recital.
remerciments, *n. m. pl.*, thanks.
rendre visite, to pay a call, call.
si, if.
soldat, *n. m.*, soldier.
souvent, often.
venir, to come.
voir, to see.
vouloir, wish, be willing.

EXERCISES.

Le vieux soldat divertit les enfants de ses récits de la guerre. Ils vont le voir[1] tous les jours pour[2] lui apporter des fleurs et des livres. Il leur lit pendant des heures. Quand ils veulent[3] partir il leur dit toujours: "Je vous aime, mes enfants, et je veux[3] vous le montrer. Si vous m'aimez aussi, montrez-le-moi en venant[4] me voir souvent."

The two children go to see him every day to carry him flowers. Their mother gives them books, and they read[5] them to him. He tells them long stories of the Franco-Prussian war, and explains[6] it to them. When they return home[7] he says: "Your mother is very kind; give her my thanks and do not forgot me, for I never forget you."

COLLOQUY.

Voulez-vous[8] venir me voir demain? Oui, si vous le voulez, et je vais[9] venir vous rendre visite aussi ce soir. Est-ce que[10] vous êtes chez vous[11] le soir? Où allez-vous[12] maintenant? Mon oncle veut[13] me voir, et je vais le chercher.

I am going to call on you to-night; are you at home

in[14] the evening? I am at home every evening, but I wish to see you on[15] Thursday.

[1] *Go to see him.* [2] **Pour** w. inf. denotes purpose, see 244 *c* 1, 252 *d*. [3] See pres. ind. of **vouloir**, 119, no. 19. [4] *In coming*, see 255 *c*. [5] **Lisent.** [6] **Décrit.** [7] **Partent.** [8] Cf. note 3. [9] See pres. ind. of **aller**, 119, no. 1. [10] See 126 *c*. [11] *At home*, see 274 *b*. [12] Cf. note 9. [13] Cf. note 3. [14] Time when is expressed without a prep., see 161 *h* 1. [15] No prep., cf. note 14.

IX.

POSSESSIVES.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 98, *a*, *b*; 181, *a*; 183; 184.
READ: 98 rem.; 181 rem., *a* 1, *b*, *c*; 182 ff., 184 *a–d*.

PARADIGM.

je fais	**nous faisons**	**j'ai fait**	**nous avons fait**
tu fais	**vous faites**	**tu as fait**	**vous avez fait**
il fait	**ils font**	**il a fait**	**ils ont fait.**
j'ai donné		**nous avons donné**	
tu as donné		**vous avez donné**	
il a donné		**ils ont donné**	

VOCABULARY.

capitale, *n. f.*, capital.
de, by.
demander, to demand, ask.
devoir, *n. m.*, duty.
entourer, to surround.
faire, to make, do, be (of weather).
galerie, *n. f.*, gallery.
histoire, *n. f.*, history.
***hiver**, *n. m.*, winter.
manuscrit, *n. m*, manuscript.
neige, *n. f.*, snow.
occuper, to occupy.
parent, *n. m.*, parent, relative.
passer, to pass, spend (time).
pendant que, while.
plaisir, *n. m.*, pleasure.
pluie, *n. f.*, rain.
quel, le, *adj.*, what? what kind of?
rien (w. **ne**), nothing.
temps, *n. m.*, time, weather.
vie, *n. f.*, life.

EXERCISES.

Vos lettres sont toujours plus intéressantes que les miennes, car je suis occupé de[1] mon histoire, et je ne vais pas voir souvent mes amis. Ma vie est passée[2] dans ma *bibliothèque* où[3] je suis entouré de[4] mes livres et de[4] mes

manuscrits, pendant que la vôtre est la vie de l'homme du monde entouré de ses amis et de leurs plaisirs.

My[6] paper, ink, and pen are on my table. I am going to write letters to-day[5] to[4] my[6] friends and relatives. Their letters are always more interesting than mine, for I am occupied with my books in my library, while they spend their days in the museums and galleries of the capital and their evenings with their friends.

COLLOQUY.

Quel temps a-t-il fait[7] dans la ville aujourd'hui? L'été il fait toujours beau temps à[8] Paris, mais l'hiver il fait de la neige et de la pluie. Qu'avez-vous fait la semaine passée? Je n'ai rien fait, mais mes frères ont fait ce que vous avez demandé. Faites-vous toujours votre devoir? Nous faisons le nôtre.

The weather has been bad[9] here to-day, but in the summer the weather is fine. What kind of weather has it been in[8] Paris? I never go to see my friends when it is rainy. What are you doing to-day? We have not done anything. We are going to do something to-morrow.

[1] *With.* [2] The p. p. after **être** agrees with the subject in gender and number, see 257 *a.* [3] *In which*, see 193 *b.* [4] **De** and **à** are repeated with each noun, see 281. [5] In French place *to-day* before *letters.* [6] Poss. pron. are repeated with each noun, see 183. [7] See 215 *d.* [8] *In*, see 273. [9] Trans., *it has made bad weather*, cf. note 7.

X.

DEMONSTRATIVES.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 99, *a*, *b* 1, 2; 185 ff.; 186, *a*, *b*, 1; 187; 188, *a*, *b*; 189.
READ: 99 rem.; 186 *b* 2; 189 *a*, *b*.

PARADIGM.

je donnais.	**nous donnions.**
tu donnais.	**vous donniez.**
il (elle) donnait.	**ils (elles) donnaient.**
j'étais.	**nous étions.**
tu étais.	**vous étiez.**
il (elle) était.	**ils (elles) étaient.**

VOCABULARY.

acheter, to buy.
admirer, to admire.
changer, to change.
demeurer, to live, dwell.
depuis que, since.
fauteuil, *m.*, arm-chair, easy-chair.
jeunesse, *f.*, youth.
mobilier, *m.*, furniture.
peinture, *f.*, painting, picture.
portrait, *m.*, portrait.
représenter, to represent.
vieillesse, *f.*, old age.

EXERCISES.

J'admirais toujours ce portrait-ci de mon ami le poète mieux que celui-là. Cette peinture-ci le représente dans sa jeunesse et celle-là dans sa vieillesse. J'étais toujours heureux quand je le trouvais dans cette chambre entouré de ces livres, de ce mobilier et de ces tableaux. Il demeurait dans cette vieille maison où je demeure maintenant. Mais depuis qu'il est mort tout cela est changé.

This old house is the one in which[1] the poet used to live.[2] These books are those of his library and the furniture is that which[3] he bought. I used to find[4] him in that arm-chair when I came to see him during those happy times. But all these things are changed since he is dead. That portrait represents him in his youth, and this one in his old age. He always[5] admired the latter more than the former.

COLLOQUY.

Voulez-vous ceci? Non, je veux cela. Celui-ci est meilleur que celui-là. Ils sont tous deux[6] dans la chambre de mon ami. Qui a trouvé ces plumes? Je les ai trouvées[7] sur cette table. Est-ce qu'elles sont à vous?[8]

Do you wish this picture or the one[9] in my room? I want this one and those which are in the library. Where did you find this? I found it in this room; it is mine.[10]

[1] **Où**, see 193 *b*. [2] **Demeurait**, see 221; for order see 149 *b* 2. [3] **Que**, cf. 37 *a* 1. [4] **Trouvais**, imper. of **trouver**, see 221. [5] For order see 263. [6] *Both*, see 202 *a*. [7] For agreement of part. see 257 *b*. [8] *Yours*, see 184 *a*. [9] **Celle qui est**. [10] **À moi**, cf. note 8.

XI.

THE VERB AVOIR.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 107 ff., 210 ff.
READ: 103 ff.; 104 ff.; 105 ff.; 106 ff.

VOCABULARY.

assez, enough.
boire, to drink.
bonté, *f.*, goodness, kindness.
chaleur, *f.*, heat.
envie, *f.*, desire, wish
espérer, to hope.
herbe, *f.*, grass.
hier, yesterday.
hôtel, *m.*, city-house.
mal, *m.*, pain, ache.
manger, to eat.
mois, *m.*, month.
poussière, *f.*, dust.
quelque chose, something.
ruisseau, *m.*, stream.
tandis que, while.
tant, so much, so many.
tel, le, such.
tête, *f.*, head.

EXERCISES.

J'ai eu hier le grand plaisir de[1] voir mes amis. Ils ont eu la bonté de[1] venir à la campagne me rendre[2] visite. "Vous avez ici le plus joli château du monde," m'a dit Jean, "tandis que nous avons à Paris tant de poussière et de chaleur. J'avais toujours envie d'avoir un tel château mais nous n'y avions pas assez d'argent. Mais j'espère que nous aurons tous les deux[3] dans deux ou trois ans."

My friends have been kind enough[4] to come to see me in the country, and I had the pleasure of seeing[5] them for the first time yesterday.[6] "We always have so much heat and dust in[7] the city," John[8] said to me, "while you have here the grass and streams and trees. We always wanted to buy such a country-house, but we had not enough money. I hope that I shall have it in four or five months, and, having found a pretty region, I shall buy a house, and hope[9] that you will be good enough to come and visit me."

COLLOQUY.

Qu'est-ce qu'il a[10]? Il n'a rien, mais son frère et son ami ont eu mal à[11] la tête hier. Avez-vous quelque chose?

Non, nous n'avons jamais rien. Si vous ne mangez pas vous aurez faim. Avez-vous soif? N'ayez pas honte de boire ici.

We are hungry and thirsty, but I am ashamed to eat and drink here. What is the matter[10] with you to-day? There is nothing the matter with us[12] to-day, but we had a headache yesterday.

[1] *To*, see 250. [2] See 154 *b* 4. [3] *Both*, see 202 *a*. [4] Trans., *have had the kindness*. [5] Trans., *to see*. [6] Place *yesterday* immediately after the principal verb. [7] **à**. [8] 149 *a* 2. [9] **j'espère**, cf. 179 *a*. [10] *What is the matter with him*, see 154 rem. [11] See 273. [12] Trans., *we have nothing*.

XII.

THE VERB ÊTRE.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 108 ff.; 211 ff.
READ: 109 ff.; 110 ff.; 212 ff.

VOCABULARY.

accablé, e, overwhelmed.
âgé, e, old.
aimable, kind, good, amiable.
avoir la bonté, to be so kind as.
camarade, *m.* or *f.*, comrade, companion.
canon, *m.*, gun, cannon.
content, e, content, glad, pleased.
côté, *m.*, side.
curé, *m.*, parish priest.
enchanté, e, delighted.
encore, still, yet.
épouse, *f.*, wife.
épouser, to marry, wed.
époux, *m.*, husband.
fiancé, e, affianced, betrothed.
***gentil**, **le**, pretty, nice (*col.*).
grand, e, tall.
libre, free.
marier, to marry.
officier, *m.*, officer.
présenter, to present, introduce.
prochain, e, next.
que, how.
question, *f.*, question.
quoi, what.
régiment, *m.*, regiment.
revoir, to see again.
seulement, only.
tuer, to kill.

EXERCISES.

L'officier fut présenté aux enfants. Qu'[1]ils étaient contents de le revoir! Ils étaient encore les mêmes enfants,—un très gentil petit garçon, et une jolie petite fille de six ans. Qu'il était aimable d'être venu! "Dans quoi êtes-vous officier? Est-ce vous qui[2] tirez le canon? Est-ce

que vos camarades sont aussi aimables que vous? Quand serez-vous libre de venir nous rendre visite toutes les semaines? Ayez la bonté de nous montrer le canon."

They were just the same children, and their uncle was glad to see them again. They were always at his side, and he was always overwhelmed with[3] questions. "Be so kind as to come and see us when you are[4] here, for we are delighted to see you; you are our best friend." "Are you an officer in[5] our father's regiment?" the little boy asks him.[6] "Is it you who fire the cannon? Are your companions here with you? How glad[7] we are that you have come."[9]

COLLOQUY.

Est-ce qu'elle est son épouse, ou seulement son amie? Elle est sa fiancée. Quand est-ce qu'il va l'épouser, et qui va les marier? Le curé va les marier et ils vont se marier le mois prochain.

She is his wife, and they were married last month by[8] the parish priest. When were they engaged? She is taller than her husband, but he is older than she.

[1] *How*, for order see 263 *b*. [2] *Do you*, cf. 186 *b* 1 *β*. [3] **De**, see 272. See 226 *c*. [5] Tr., *of the*. [6] 149 *a* 2. [7] Trans., *how we are glad;* cf. note 1. [8] **Par**, see 277. [9] **soyez venu.**

XIII.

THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 105; 111 ff. READ: 111 rem. 1, 2, 3; 112 ff.; 209 ff.

VOCABULARY.

accepter, to accept.
adversaire, *m.*, opponent, adversary.
amener, to bring.
avocat, *m.*, lawyer.
cause, *f.*, case, suit.
charger (se), to occupy one's self, concern one's self.
cŏntre, against.
dette, *f.*, debt.
écouter, to listen to.
gagner, to win, gain.
'haut, e, high.
'hauteur, *f.*, height.
intérêt, *m.*, interest.
largeur, *f.*, width.
longtemps, a long time.
longueur, *f.*, length.

main, *f.*, hand.
mètre, *m.*, metre.
parce que, because.
partout, everywhere.
payer, to pay.
personne (ne), no one, nobody.
pied, *m.*, foot.
regarder, to look at, regard.
réponse, *f.*, reply, response.
rester, to remain, stay.
riche, rich.
sans, without.
vieux, vieil, le, old

EXERCISES.

Je passais ma vie chez mes amis à New York, mais personne[1] ne se chargeait de mes intérêts. On me donnait partout la même réponse: "Vous ne gagnerez pas votre cause parce que vos adversaires sont riches. On vous donnera de l'argent pour payer vos dettes, acceptez-le." Un jour j'allais voir un des amis de mon père. Je regarde ce jeune homme; il me regarde, et me donne la main. Nous étions de vieux amis. Il m'écoute et me demande ce qui[2] m'amène.

I looked at the young man and he shook hands with me,[3] for we were old friends. He listened to me and asked me if I had won my suit. I accepted the money which he gave to me to[4] pay my lawyer, for my father always said to me: "Accept all the money which is given you. You will not win without a great deal[5] of money against such[6] rich opponents." My life is now passed with[7] my New York friends, and I shall remain with them a long time.[8]

COLLOQUY.

Notre maison est longue de[9] soixante pieds,—plus longue de[10] dix pieds que la vôtre, mais votre maison a vingt pieds de haut (*or*, de hauteur). Quelle longueur votre jardin a-t-il? Il a cent mètres de longueur sur[11] quatre-vingts de largeur.

What is the length of your house? It is[12] seventy feet long by thirty wide. Our garden is twenty metres longer than yours; it is one hundred and twenty metres long.

[1] *No one*, see 204 *b*. [2] *What*. [3] Trans., *gave me the hand*. [4] **Pour**, to denote purpose. [5] **Beaucoup**. [6] **Si**. [7] **Chez**. [8] Trans., *a long time with them*. [9] See 272. Observe difference of idiom. [10] See 272. [11] *By*. [12] Translate in two ways, with **avoir** and with **être**.

XIV.

THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 113 ff. READ: 113 rem.; 114 ff.

VOCABULARY.

au milieu de, in the midst of.
avancer, to put ahead, go fast.
avant, before.
bâtir, to build.
choisir, to choose.
conduite, *f.*, behavior, conduct.
école, *f.*, school.
élève, *m. f*, pupil.
fin, *f.*, end.
finir, to finish.
maître, *m.*, teacher.
matin, *m.*, morning.
meuble, *m.*, piece of furniture.
minute, *f.*, minute.
montre, *f.*, watch.
ouvrier, *m.*, workman.
préparatif, *m.*, preparation.
punir, to punish.
retarder, to set back, go slow.
saisir, to seize.
sévèrement, severely.
tapis, *m.*, carpet.
thème, *m.*, exercise.
triste, sad.

EXERCISES.

La maison que les ouvriers nous bâtissent sera finie avant la fin du mois. Nous choisissons maintenant les tapis et demain[1] nous choisirons les meubles et les tableaux. Mais au milieu de tous ces préparatifs mon petit frère est très triste. A l'école aujourd'hui le maître l'a puni parce qu'il saisit la plume d'un des élèves. Il lui dit qu'il le punirait plus sévèrement la prochaine fois.

At school to-day the teacher punished my little brother because he seized the pen of one of the other boys while he[2] was finishing his exercise. He punishes him every day for[3] his bad behavior. While he is so sad I am very happy because the workmen are finishing our house. It will be finished in a month and we now[4] go to the city every day to choose furniture[5] and carpets. Next week we shall choose the pictures.

COLLOQUY.

Quelle heure est-il à[6] votre montre? Il est dix heures dix, mais elle avance[7] de[8] cinq minutes. Je l'ai retardée[9] ce matin de sept minutes mais elle avance toujours. Est-ce que la vôtre est à l'heure?

My watch is never right,[10] it always goes too slow. I set it ahead four minutes this evening,[11] but it still[12] goes too slow. What time is it by[13] your friend's watch?

[1] See 263. [2] **Celui-ci.** [3] **De**, see 272. [4] Order, *now we.* [5] **Des meubles.** [6] *By*, see 273. [7] **Avancer** of clocks, etc., is used both transitively and intransitively. [8] See 272. [9] **Retarder** has the same double usage as **avancer**, cf. note 7. [10] **À l'heure.** [11] Order, *this evening four minutes.* [12] **Toujours.** [13] **À**, cf. note 6.

XV.

DISJUNCTIVE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 97 *d, e, f*; 180, *a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h.*
READ: 97 rem. 1, 2, 3; 180 *a* 1, *d* 1, *g* 1, 2, 3, *h* 1.

VOCABULARY.

arriver, to arrive, happen.
avis, *m.*, opinion.
chacun, e, each one, every one.
cuisinière, *f.*, cook.
depuis, since.
domestique, *m.*, servant.
facilement, easily.
habit, *m.*, coat.
loi, *f.*, law.
madame, Mrs.
obliger, to force, oblige.
on, one, people, they.
ordinairement, usually.
parler, to speak, talk.
que, whom.
rare, rare.
toujours, always, continually.

EXERCISES.

Je suis obligée, monsieur, de me présenter moi-même. Je suis madame Gautier. C'est moi qui ai acheté le château. Depuis longtemps ma sœur et moi parlons de vous et de votre domestique, Jean. C'est lui, n'est-ce pas, que vous avez encore? Oui, madame, c'est toujours lui. *On ne* trouve pas facilement de tels domestiques. Ce sont

eux qui sont plus rares que les bonnes cuisinières. Pour ceux-là la loi est ordinairement chacun pour soi.

I introduced myself to him and to her[1] when I arrived, for I am generally obliged to introduce myself. "It is I who have bought your house. I am Mrs. Gautier. My sister speaks continually of you and of your old cook. It is she whom you still have, is it not?" "Yes," he said, "she is still the one.[2] We ourselves[3] are greatly[4] pleased that she is still with us. She is always thinking of[5] us and never of herself."

COLLOQUY.

J'ai changé d'[6]avis et je ne vais pas à la ville. Vous changez d'avis aussi souvent que vous changez d'habit. Demain nous allons changer de maison. Voulez-vous changer votre maison contre la nôtre?

Will you change your book for[7] mine? When are you going to move[8] to another house? We have changed our mind and are not going to the city to-day. He changes his coat every day.

[1] See 281. [2] Trans., *it is still she.* [3] Trans., *we are ourselves.* [4] **Très.** [5] **Penser à.** [6] See 272. [7] **Contre.** [8] **Changer.**

XVI.

THE RELATIVE PRONOUN.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 100 ff.; 190 ff.; 192, *a*; 193, *a*, *b*.
READ: 191 ff.; 192 *b*; 193 *a* 1, 2, *b* 1; 194 ff.; 195 ff.

VOCABULARY.

alors, then.
assister, to be present.
boulanger, *m.*, baker.
comédie, *f.*, comedy.
dernier, **ère**, last.
dois, owe.
époque, *f.*, time, period, epoch.
esprit, *m.*, mind.
franc, *m.*, franc.
gagner, to earn.
malade, sick.
monde, *m.*, people.
pain, *m.*, bread.
passé, **e**, past, last.
***respect**, *m.*, respect.
samedi, *m.*, Saturday.
siège, *m.*, siege.
souvenir, *m.*, remembrance, recollection.
théâtre, *m.*, theatre.
tout le monde, everybody; everyone.

EXERCISES.

Je dépense tout ce que j'ai, ce qui n'est pas beaucoup, parce que nous n'avons jamais été riches. Aujourd'hui je n'ai pas de quoi payer le boulanger à qui je dois cent francs. Il est l'homme de qui[1] la femme a été malade et de qui on parle partout avec tant de respect. C'était lui qui donnait tant de pain aux pauvres à l'époque du siège et dont le souvenir reste dans tous les esprits.

The remembrance of what[2] he gave to the poor is still in the mind of every one. It was he who gave them bread at the time of the siege of Paris. He was then a baker, who was always spoken of[3] with respect. He is the one of whom I was speaking to you, and to whom I owe one hundred francs. We are not rich and spend all we earn, which[4] is not much. I have nothing with which to pay for last week's bread.

COLLOQUY.

Est-ce qu'il y a beaucoup de monde au théâtre cette semaine? Oui, monsieur. Il y en a eu beaucoup hier et aujourd'hui, et j'espère qu'il y en aura autant demain et samedi. Qu'est-ce qu'il y a dans la ville?

What has been going on[5] in the city to-day[6]? There was a comedy at the theatre, at which[7] many people were present, and I hope that there will be as many next week.

[1] Or **dont.** [2] **De ce que.** [3] Trans., *of whom one always spoke.* [4] **Ce qui.** [5] Trans., *what is it that there has been?* [6] Order, *to-day in the city.* [7] **À laquelle.**

XVII.

THE INTERROGATIVES.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 101 ff.; 196, *c*; 197, *a*, *b*, *c*; 248 *a*.
READ: 196 *a*, *b*; 197 *a* 1, 2, *b* 1, 2, *c* 1; 198 ff.

VOCABULARY.

adresser (s'), to address one's self, *apply*, turn.
avant l'heure, before the time.
besoin, *m.*, need.
cas, *m.*, case, situation.
conseil, *m.*, advice, counsel.

décider, to decide.
malheur, *m.*, misfortune.
malheureux, se, unfortunate, unhappy.
prince, *m.* prince.
princesse, *f.*, princess.
titre, *m.*, title.
voici, here is, here are.
voilà, there is, there are.
veut dire, will say, means, signifies.

EXERCISES.

Que faire,[1] que décider dans un pareil cas? Qui me donnera conseil? À qui m'adresser? Et si je me décide à choisir un époux, lequel choisir? Auquel donnerai-je ma main? Au prince Romanelli ou à qui? Si je la donne au prince je serai alors princesse.[2] Et qu'est-ce que cela veut dire? A quoi bon être princesse si je suis toujours malheureuse et si je n'aime pas mon époux? Oh malheur! quoi de[3] plus malheureux que d'[4]être pauvre et belle!

What is more unfortunate than to be loved! What shall I do? Who will counsel me? To whom shall I turn? The prince loves me, but he is poor. And of what use is it to be a[5] princess if I am poor, for I shall always be unhappy? The others are rich, but without a[6] title. Which shall I choose? To which shall I give my hand? I shall give it to the one with whom I shall be happiest. And do you now ask me to whom? It is to your brother.

COLLOQUY.

Voici[7] ce que vous voulez, n'est-ce pas? Non, monsieur, je n'ai pas besoin de cela, voilà ce que je veux. Me voici arrivé avant l'heure. Qu'est-ce que vous cherchez? Votre chapeau? Le voilà.[8]

Are you looking for your hat? There it is. It is not there; here it is. This is what you wish; you do not need that. Here they are before the time.

[1] For absolute use of inf., see 248 *a*. [2] For omission of art., see 157 *b*. [3] See 197 *c* 1. [4] See 241, cf. 240 *a* 1 *α*. [5] Omit art., cf. note 2. [6] Omit art., cf. 154 *b* 3. [7] See 238, rem. 5. [8] See 173 *a* 1.

XVIII.

THE INDEFINITES.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 200; 201; 202; 203; 204, *a*, *b*; 205; 206, *a*; 207.
READ: 199 ff.; 200 *a* ff., *b*, *c*; 202 *a*, *b* ff., *c*; 203 *a–d*; 204 *c* ff.; 205 *a*, *b*; 206 *a* 1, *b*; 207 *a–c*; 208 ff.

VOCABULARY.

à peu près, almost.
à présent, now, at present.
autre chose, something else.
battre, to beat.
caractère, *m.*, character.
cœur, *m.*, heart.
dent, *f.*, tooth.
dentiste, *m.*, dentist.
duc, *m.*, duke.
encore, again.
exiger, to require, exact, demand.
favorable, favorable.
jusque, till.
médecin, *m.*, doctor, physician.
noble, noble.
opposer, to oppose.
plutôt, rather.
préférence, *f.*, preference.
presque, almost, nearly.
prétendant, *m.*, suitor.
qualité, *f.*, quality.
réponse, *f.*, reply, response.
résistance, *f.*, resistance.
richesse, *f.*, riches.
talent, *m.*, talent.
vanter (se), to boast.

EXERCISES.

Nul ne se vante d'une préférence quelconque, et à tous elle oppose la même résistance. On demande sa main pour un jeune duc et pour plusieurs princes, mais aucun, jusqu'à présent, n'a fait battre[1] son cœur. Elle demande autre chose que les titres et la richesse. Elle demande quelqu'un plutôt noble de[2] cœur que noble de[2] titre. Quelques[3] grands que[3] soient[3] les talents de son époux elle exige toujours son amour et quelque chose d'[4]aimable dans ses qualités.

However[5] noble he may be[5] in[6] his title, she requires something amiable in his character. She has had several suitors, but no one has, so far, obtained[7] a favorable reply. She requires something else than wealth[8] and titles.[8] Her hand is asked for by a prince and several dukes, but she *gives the* same reply to all,[9] and no one can boast of any

preference whatever. Such are the qualities of the heart of this young girl.

COLLOQUY.

J'ai mal[10] au pied aujourd'hui et j'ai été malade toute la semaine passée. Si vous avez mal aux yeux et aux dents, allez chez le médecin et chez le dentiste. J'ai déjà été chez le dentiste ce matin, mais j'y vais encore ce soir.

He has sore eyes[11] and toothache,[11] and has been to the[12] doctor's and dentist's this morning. He is almost always sick; last week he had a sore foot.[11]

For causative expression, see 244 *b*. [2] *In*. [3] See 235 *d* 2. [4] See 272 *a* 4 *α*. [5] Cf. note 3. [6] **De**. [7] **Obtenu**. [8] Use the art., see 151 *a*, *b*. [9] Order, *to all the same reply*. [10] Note idiom, see 154, rem. [11] Cf. note 10. [12] Repeat the art. and the prep., see 156, 281.

XIX.

THE REFLEXIVE VERBS.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 115; 216 ff.; 257 *b*. READ: 257 *b* ff.; 258 ff.

VOCABULARY.

admiration, *f.*, admiration.
à la hâte, quickly.
aller (s'en), to go away, depart.
après, after.
arrivée, *f.*, arrival.
attendre, to wait for, expect.
avertir, to inform, warn.
bourse, *f.*, purse.
coucher (se), to go to bed, retire.
courage, *m.*, courage.
de bonne heure, early.
décider (se), to decide.
déshabiller (se), to undress.
emparer (s'), to take possession.
empêcher (s'), to refrain from, help.
famille, *f.*, family.
il faut, it is necessary.
lendemain, *m.*, next day.
lever (se), to get up, rise.
nouvelle, *f.*, news.
nuit, *f.*, night.
perte, *f.*, loss.
police, *f.*, police.
pouvais, could.
rentrer, to return (home).
seul, e, alone.
trouver (se), to find one's self, be
voleur, *m.*, robber, thief.

EXERCISES.

Je me trouvais seul avec le voleur qui s'empara de ma bourse et s'en alla[1] à la hâte. Je ne pouvais m'empêcher de[2] le regarder avec admiration, car j'ai toujours été d'avis que pour être voleur il faut[3] beaucoup de courage. Je me décidai à[4] rentrer dire[5] la nouvelle de ma perte à ma famille. À mon arrivée à la maison ma femme s'était déjà couchée et mes fils se déshabillaient. Je me suis levé de bonne heure le lendemain matin pour avertir la police de mon malheur.

On my return home that night[6] my wife had not yet gone to bed and I decided to tell her the sad news. She could not help admiring[7] the courage of the robber, who was alone against two, and who took possession of our purses and then[8] quickly departed. I arose early the day after[9] our misfortune to warn the police of our loss.

COLLOQUY.

Combien de temps m'avez-vous attendu[10]? Je vous ai attendu jusqu'à quatre heures. Jusqu'où[11] et par où[12] allez-vous? Allez-vous par Paris à Londres? Combien de fois y avez-vous été?

Wait for me till three o'clock. How many times have you been in Paris? I have been there several times and I am now[13] going by way of Dieppe. How far and which way are you going to-day?

[1] See 175 *c*. [2] See 245 *a*. [3] See 215 *e* 3. [4] See 247 *a*. [5] See 244 *a*. [6] **Ce soir-là.** [7] Trans. by inf. w. **de**. Cf. note 2. [8] **Après.** [9] **Le lendemain de.** [10] Note that **attendre** is transitive. [11] *Up to where*, i.e. *how far*. [12] *By where*, i.e. *which way*. [13] **Cette fois.**

XX.

THE IMPERSONAL VERBS.

Grammar Sections.

Learn: 214 ff.; 215 *a*, *b*, *d*, *e* 1, 2, 3. **Read**: 215 *b* 1, *c*; 213 ff.

VOCABULARY.

après-midi, *f.*, afternoon.
ciel, *m.*, heaven, sky.
coup, *m.*, stroke, peal, clap.
désirer, to desire.
envoyer, to send.
éveiller, to awaken, rouse.
il vaut mieux, it is better.
importer, to be of importance, matter.
lyrique, lyric.
mécontent, e, discontented, dissatisfied.
neiger, to snow.
obscurcir (s'), to darken, grow dark.
parapluie, *m.*, umbrella.
***pardessus**, *m.*, overcoat.
pensée, *f.*, thought.
peu, little, but little.
philosophe, *m.*, philosopher.
poétique, poetic.
promener (se), to walk, take a walk.
quinzaine, *f.*, fortnight.
rester, remain.
rêverie, *f.*, musing, revery.
sembler, to seem.
soleil, *m.*, sun.
tonnerre, *f.*, thunder.
vieillard, *m.*, old man.

EXERCISES.

Quand il neigeait le vieillard se promenait toujours sans pardessus, et quand il pleuvait il se promenait sans parapluie. Le temps qu'il faisait[1] lui importait peu. Il fallait[2] plus d'un coup de tonnerre pour l'éveiller de ses rêveries. Quand il faisait beau temps il était poète[3] lyrique, et quand le soleil s'était obscurci, il était philosophe.[3] "Il me semble qu'il vaut mieux être contents de ce que le ciel nous envoie que d'être[4] mécontents parce que nous n'avons pas ce que nous désirons," disait-il à ses amis.

The weather makes little difference to him. When he goes for a walk a thunder-clap would be necessary[5] to awaken him from his reveries. When the weather is fine his thoughts are poetic, and he is a[6] philosopher when the weather is bad. It was raining yesterday and he was with-

XXII.

THE FIRST CONJUGATION: ORTHOGRAPHIC IRREGULARITIES.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 112 ff. READ: 62*b*; 64*b*; 41 *a*, 1, *b*, 1 *γ*, rem. 1; 45 *b*, rem

VOCABULARY.

appeler, to call; **s'—**, to be called, be named.
appuyer, to support, rest.
auberge, *f.*, inn.
bâton, *m.*, stick, staff.
bien, very.
chasser, to drive away, send away.
combien, how much, how many.
cri, *m.*, cry.
désespoir, *m.*, despair
devant, before.
évêque, *m.*, bishop.
forçat, *m.*, convict.
haut, e, loud.
jeter, to throw, utter.
lever, to raise, lift.
mort, *f.*, death.
nom, *m.*, name.
placer, to place.
promener, to cast, turn (the eyes).
régner, to reign.
renvoyer, to send away, send back.
silence, *m.*, silence.
tout de suite, immediately, at once.
voix, *f.*, voice.
vouloir, to be willing, wish.

EXERCISES.

Quand l'évêque lève les yeux, il jette un cri. Le silence de la mort règne dans la maison. Un homme est là. Il appuie ses deux mains sur son bâton, promène[1] ses yeux autour de la chambre et alors il dit d'[2]une voix haute: Je m'appelle Jean Valjean; je suis un forçat; on m'a chassé de l'auberge; j'ai bien faim. L'évêque répondit tout de suite: Nous mangeons à deux heures; j'espère que vous voulez bien manger avec nous. Je resterai, répondit-il, mais je paie[3] toujours ce que je mange.

The man raises his eyes and utters a cry of despair when the bishop calls him by his name. "Yes," he replied, "I am called Jean Valjean, and am a convict, but I have money and always pay for[4] what I eat. I hope you will[5]

not send me away from your house." He casts his eyes around the room and places his two hands upon his stick. The bishop placed his hands on those of the man, and said: "We dine at two o'clock; I hope you[5] will remain[6] and dine[6] with us.

COLLOQUY.

J'ai acheté la maison à[7] votre ami, et je la lui ai payée.[8] Combien l'avez-vous payée? Je l'ai payée dix mille francs. De combien est-il riche? Il est riche de cent mille francs.

How much is that man worth? He is worth twenty thousand francs. I bought a house from[9] him to-day, and I have paid him for it. How much did you pay for it?

[1] Notice difference between **promener** and **se promener** in XX. [2] See 272 *b* 4. [3] Construction of **payer** is **je paie quelque chose à quelqu'un.** [4] See note 3. [5] Subordinating conjunctions not omitted in French. [6] Future ind., see 234 *c* 1. [7] See 273 *a* 3. [8] See note 3. [9] See note 7.

XXIII.

THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 119, nos. 1–6. READ: 117 ff.; 118 ff.; 119, foot-notes 1–6.

VOCABULARY.

afin que, in order that.
année, *f.*, year.
cirque, *m.*, circus.
courir, to run.
cueillir, to gather, pick, collect.
foire, *f.*, fair.
garde-malade, *m.* or *f.*, nurse.
hôpital, *m.*, hospital.
journée, *f.*, day.
monter, to ride, be mounted on.
objet, *m.*, object, thing.
partir, to start.
préparer, to prepare, get ready.
prier, to beg, ask.
ramasser, to pick up.
soin, *m.*, care.
sortir, to start out, go forth.
terre, *f.*, ground, earth.
trouver (se), to be (of health).
vêtir (se), to dress one's self.

EXERCISES.

Nous allons partir demain pour la campagne. Nous y enverrons les domestiques aujourd'hui afin qu'ils préparent[1]

le château. Que les enfants sont heureux! Ils cueilleront des fleurs toute la journée. Quand il fera chaud ils se vêtiront de blanc, et au mois de septembre ils iront à la foire et au cirque avec leurs cousins. L'année passée il y a eu au cirque un homme qui montait très bien, et pendant que son cheval courait il ramassait des objets de la terre. Mais cet été il s'en est allé.

Our cousins are going to start for the country to-morrow, and we are going with them. My father is going to send the servants to-day to[2] get the country-house ready. How happy we shall be! The last time we[3] were there we used to start out[4] in[5] the morning and picked flowers all day. The girls were dressed in blue and we were dressed in white. In[6] September we shall go to the fair and the circus. There are men there[7] who pick up things from the ground while they are mounted on their horses.

COLLOQUY.

Si vous êtes malade j'irai chercher le médecin. Non, mon ami, n'allez pas, je vous prie, je n'ai pas besoin d'un médecin mais d'une garde-malade qui ait[8] soin de moi. Le médecin ne se trouve pas chez lui le lundi,[9] et si vous envoyez le chercher vous ne le trouverez pas.

When he is sick I send for the doctor, but yesterday he said to me: "Do not go for the doctor; I do not need a doctor, but a nurse to take care[10] of me. He is never at home when you go for him. Send to the hospital for a nurse."[11]

[1] Subj. after **afin que** see 235 *b*. [2] Cf. note 1. [3] Use the conjunction **que** before **nous** as logically required. [4] Imp. tense, see 221. [5] Omit prep. 161 *h* 1. [6] **Au mois de.** [7] Omit the second *there*. [8] See 236. [9] Trans. *on Monday*, see 161 *h* 1. [10] Cf. note 8. [11] **Translate:** ***send to seek a nurse from the hospital.***

XXIV.

THE IRREGULAR VERBS.—(*Continued.*)

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 119, nos. 7–11, 13. READ: 119, foot-notes 7–13.

VOCABULARY.

aimer mieux, to like better, prefer.
appartenir, to belong.
avouer, to acknowledge, admit.
bas, se, low, vile, base.
bois, m., wood.
concevoir, to conceive.
confession, *f.*, confession.
contenir, to contain.
devoir, to owe, to be (destined) to.
discourir (sur), to discourse (of).
élevé, e, exalted.
émouvoir, to move, touch.
en même temps, at the same time.
extrême, extreme.
infâme, infamous.
lyrisme, *m.*, lyric, lyricism.
marcher, to walk, go on foot.
nature, *f.*, nature.
ouvrir, to open.
parcourir, to traverse.
passion, *f.*, passion.
pauvreté, *f.*, poverty.
prairie, *f.*, meadow.
préférer, to prefer.
promeneur, *m.*, walker, pedestrian
recevoir, to receive.
renaissance, *f.*, re-birth, revival.
sensation, *f.*, sensation.
supporter, to endure.
tenir, to hold; — **pour**, consider.
voiture, *f.*, carriage.

EXERCISES.

Vous tenez Rousseau pour[1] un homme infâme, pour un homme qui ouvrait son cœur aux passions les plus basses. Mais il faut avouer qu'il était en même temps un homme qui recevait de la nature les sensations les plus élevées. Il parcourait les bois, les prairies, les jardins avec un cœur ouvert à tout ce qu'il y avait de[2] plus beau. Nous lui devons, plus qu'à aucun autre, la renaissance du lyrisme dans la littérature française. Cet homme qui appartient aux plus grands[3] du XVIIIe siècle est mort dans la pauvreté la plus extrême.

Rousseau opened his heart to all that was most beautiful in nature. In his "Confessions" he often discourses of[4] the beauties of nature, by which he was moved during his whole life. French literature owes to him more than to

any other the re-birth of the lyric. There are many who consider him an infamous man, and who do not conceive that the same heart receives[5] exalted sensations and contains[5] base passions. This great man, who was to[6] endure so many misfortunes, died in the most extreme poverty.

COLLOQUY.

Nous allons au bois de Boulogne nous promener à cheval tous les jours et nos amis y vont en voiture, mais mon frère aime mieux marcher que d'aller avec nous, quoiqu'il monte[7] très bien à cheval. Aimez-vous à aller à pied? Oui, il y a toujours beaucoup de promeneurs au bois.

Our friends go for a drive every day in the Bois de Boulogne, but we prefer to ride horseback,[8] and my brother, who rides[9] very well, always walks. Does he not like to ride, that he always walks? Yes,[10] but he wishes to talk with those who are walking in the Bois.

[1] See 161 *f* 2. [2] See 272 *a* 4 *α*. [3] See 164 *a*. [4] **Sur.** [5] Pres. subj., see 234 *c*. [6] **Devait.** [7] Subj., see 235 *d*. [8] **Aller à cheval.** [9] **Monte à cheval.** [10] **Si**, see 264 *b*.

XXV.

THE IRREGULAR VERBS.—(*Continued.*)

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 119, nos. 14–21. READ: 119, foot-notes 14–22.

VOCABULARY.

addition, *f.*, addition.
affaire, *f.*, affair; *pl.*, business.
asseoir, to seat; **s'**—, to sit down.
cabaret, *m.*, saloon.
cependant, however.
compagnie, *f.*, company, band.
compte, *m.*, account.
croire, to believe, think.
dormir, to sleep.
étrange, strange, peculiar.
fort, e, *strong.*
grand'chose, *f.*, much.
'héros, *m.*, hero.
heureusement, fortunately.
heureux, se, fortunate.
magnifique, grand, magnificent.
oisif, ve, idle; *m.*, idler.
peine, *f.*, trouble.
penser, to think.
plupart, *f.*, greater part.
pouvoir, to be able, can.
roman, *m.*, novel.

savoir, to know, be able.
travailler, to work.
valoir, to be worth.
vendre, to sell.
vivre, *m.*, living.
voir, to see.

EXERCISES.

Le héros de ce roman est un étrange homme; dans les affaires il ne vaut rien; il ne sait[1] ni acheter ni vendre, ni faire l'addition d'un compte. Le matin on le voit qui,[2] assis dans un fauteuil, parle à une compagnie d'oisifs.[3] Le soir il s'assied autour de la table avec sa famille et il dort la plupart du temps. Heureusement il est riche, parce qu'il ne saurait gagner son vivre. Cependant il pourrait travailler s'il le voulait,[4] car il est encore jeune et fort.

They are men who could work if they were willing,[5] for they are strong and still young. Fortunately they are rich, for they could not earn their living. The most of the time they are seated in the arm-chairs of the saloon, and they will sit there till their death. In the morning they may be seen[6] surrounded by a band of idlers, and in the evening they sit around the table with their families for half an hour, and then[7] go to bed. In business they are worthless, and can neither buy nor sell. You will see such a man in the hero of this novel

COLLOQUY.

Ce n'est pas la peine[8] d'aller à la foire parce qu'elle ne vaut pas grand'chose cette année. Mais, mon ami, vous ne l'avez pas vue. J'ai demandé à Jean ce qu'il en pensait, et il a dit que c'est magnifique et que c'est la peine[9] d'aller non seulement une mais deux fois.

I was at the fair to-day, but I think it is not worth while going to see it. But when I asked John, who has seen it twice, what he thought of it, he said it was grand and that we ought to go twice, for it is worth while.

[1] *Can*, cf. 213*b* 4. [2] 244*b* 3. [3] See 164*a*. [4] Unreal condition, see 145*g* 1 *γ*. [5] Cf. note 4. [6] Trans., *one may see them*, cf. 206. [7] **Après.** [8] Trans., *it is not worth while.* [9] Cf. note 8.

XXVI.

THE IRREGULAR VERBS.—(*Continued.*)

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 119, nos. 23–29. READ: 119, foot-notes 23–29.

VOCABULARY.

au lieu de, instead of, in place of.
chèque, *m.*, check.
comptant, cash, in cash.
conduire, to conduct; **se —**, to behave.
couleur, *f.*, color.
d'ailleurs, otherwise, in other respects.
de bon cœur, heartily.
décrire, to describe.
écrire, to write.
espagnol, e, Spanish.
essayer, to try, try on.
héroïne, *f.*, heroine.
imprimer, to print.
italien, ne, Italian.
large, large, broad, ample.
lire, to read.
manière, *f.*, way, manner.
ou . . . ou, either . . . or.
propos, *m.*, subject, occasion.
restaurant, *m.*, restaurant.
rire, to laugh.
seoir, to become, suit.
serrer, to press, be snug.
sourire, to smile.
tailleur, *m.*, tailor.

EXERCISES.

L'héroïne ne se conduit pas d'[1]une manière moins étrange: elle rit et sourit à tout propos, elle lit des romans du matin jusqu'au soir, et de temps en temps elle en écrit elle-même, mais sans les faire imprimer.[2] Elle boit au restaurant avec les hommes. À[3] la voir on la dirait[4] ou Espagnole ou Italienne. Mais je ne vais pas vous la décrire parce que vous allez lire le livre vous-même, et quand vous l'aurez lu vous me direz ce que vous en pensez. Vous le[5] voulez n'est-ce pas? Dites.

When you have read[6] the book, please[7] tell me what you think of it. I think the heroine behaves in[8] a peculiar way. I shall not describe her to you since you are going to read it. I shall only say that she reads novels nearly all the time; she has also written two or three, but has *never had*[9] them printed. She goes to the restaurant with

the men, drinks with them, and laughs heartily with the rest.[10] To see her you would say she is[11] either Spanish or Italian.

COLLOQUY.

J'ai été chez le tailleur cette après-midi où j'ai acheté un habit; je l'ai essayé, et il me serre un peu, mais, d'ailleurs, il me va très bien. C'est d'une couleur qui me sied, et qui tient bien. Au lieu de le lui payer comptant, je lui ai donné un chèque.

I went to the tailor's this morning and bought a coat. It is a little too large, but otherwise it fits very well, and the color is very becoming to me. I never pay him in cash, but I always give him a check.

[1] *In*, cf. 272*b* 4. [2] See 244*b* 2. [3] See 248*b* 2. [4] See 244*a* 5; 157*b*. [5] Omit in trans. cf. 174*c*. [6] 227*a*. [7] **Veuillez**, cf. 119, no. 19. [8] **De**, cf. note 1. [9] Cf. note 2. [10] **Les autres**. [11] **Qu'elle est**, or cf. note 4.

XXVII.

THE IRREGULAR VERBS.—(*Continued.*)

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 119, nos. 30–36. READ: 119, foot-notes 30–36.

VOCABULARY.

à cause de, because of, on account of.
accident, *m.*, accident.
admettre, to admit.
avant que, before.
avoir lieu, to take place.
balle, *f.*, ball.
collège, *m.*, college.
classique, classic.
connaître, to know.
cour, *f.*, court.
droit, *m.*, law, right.
entre, between.
étudier, to study.
frapper, hit, strike.
latin, e, Latin.
mégarde, *f.*, mistake, accident.
mettre, to put, place.
naître, to be born.
paraître, to appear.
pardonner, to pardon, excuse.
permettre, to permit, allow.
prendre, to take.
présomptif, ve, presumptive.
province, *f.*, province.
représentation, *f.*, representation.
roi, *m.*, king.
scène, *f.*, scene, stage.
sottise, *f.*, foolishness.
succès, *m.*, success.
tard, e, late.
valet de chambre, *m.*, footman.

EXERCISES.

Jean-Baptiste Poquelin, qui prit plus tard le nom de Molière, naquit à Paris le 15 janvier 1622. Il naissait valet de chambre présomptif du roi de France. Il fut admis au collège de Clermont à Paris, où il étudiait les classiques latins, et plus tard, il étudiait le droit à Orléans. Ce n'était pas par le droit qu'il se faisait connaître,[1] mais par ses comédies. Il mettait sur la scène ses comédies les[2] mieux connues entre 1659 et sa mort en 1673. En 1659 le roi lui permit de[3] donner une représentation devant la cour, et c'était son premier succès à Paris.

Poquelin was born at Paris in 1622. He took the name Molière[4] at a later time. He was admitted to the college of Clermont, and, later, studied law at Orleans. However he never became known[5] as a lawyer. He appeared on the stage of Paris before he was twenty years old, but his first great succes took place[6] after his return from the provinces in 1659, when he was allowed to give a play[7] before the king. On this occasion he put Corneille's "Nicomède" on the stage.

COLLOQUY.

L'élève vient de[8] frapper le garçon d'[9]une balle. C'est arrivé par mégarde, mais la mère du garçon lui en veut.[10] C'est une sottise d'en vouloir à quelqu'un d'un accident. Je lui ai demandé de vouloir bien lui pardonner, mais elle ne le veut pas.

Be good enough[11] to pardon me for it happened by accident. I had just[8] thrown the ball when you came there; I know you will not bear me a grudge for having hit you. It is foolish to bear ill-will against any one because of[12] an accident.

[1] See 244 *b* 2. [2] See 156 *b*. [3] See 245 *g*. [4] Use de, see 272 *a* 3. [5] Cf. note 1. [6] Eut lieu [7] Représentation. [8] See 213 *a* 2, 244 *c* 3. [9] See 272 *b* 4. [10] Note idiom, cf. 175 *c*. [11] Trans., *have the goodness*. [12] À cause de.

XXVIII.

THE IRREGULAR VERBS.—(*Concluded.*)

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 119, nos. 37–42. READ: 119, foot-notes 37–43.

VOCABULARY.

adieu, *m.*, good-by.
ambassadeur, *m.*, ambassador.
art, *m.*, art.
atteindre, to reach, attain.
***but**, *m.*, end, aim, purpose.
chapelle, *f.*, chapel.
comme, as.
expression, *f.*, expression.
grâce, *f.*, favor.
honneur, *m.*, honor.
intention, *f.*, intention.
joindre, to join.
observation, *f.*, observation.
observer, to observe.
pape, *m.*, pope.
peindre, to paint.
peintre, *m.*, painter.
peur, *f.*, fear.
plafond, *m.*, ceiling.
possible, possible, utmost.
profession, *f.*, profession.
propre, own.
renommée, *f.*, fame, renown.
résoudre, to resolve.
***sculpteur**, *m.*, sculptor.
social, e, social.
suivre, to follow.
tombeau, *m.*, tomb.
tradition, *f.*, tradition.
voyage, *m.*, journey, voyage.
voyager, to travel.

EXERCISES.

Michel-Ange vivait à Rome et à Florence. Il peignit la chapelle du Vatican à Rome, mais ce n'est pas comme peintre qu'il atteignit sa grande renommée. Il joignait les deux professions de peintre et de sculpteur. Il vivait longtemps à Rome occupé du tombeau du pape. Il suivait sa profession de sculpteur aussi à Florence. C'était un homme qui résolvait de bonne heure de ne pas se tenir aux traditions de l'art, et tout ce qu'il faisait était l'expression de son propre caractère.

Michael Angelo lived for a long time at Rome, where he was occupied with the tomb of the pope. While he was living there he also painted the ceiling of the Vatican chapel. It is not, however, as a painter that he won his

great fame, but as a sculptor. He followed both of these[1] professions in Rome and in Florence. He had no fear[2] of the other artists, and resolved not to abide by the traditions which they followed in art. What he painted was the expression of his own character.

COLLOQUY.

Je vais faire[3] un voyage dans le monde. J'ai déjà fait mes adieux à mes amis. Pendant que je voyage je ferai mon possible[4] pour faire des observations sur l'état social des autres pays, et, dans[5] ce but, j'espère que vous me ferez[6] l'honneur de me donner des lettres à nos ambassadeurs.

If you will favor[7] me by giving me[8] a letter to our ambassador I shall do all I can[9] to[10] observe the social condition of that country. I have been intending[11] to travel[12] there for a long time,[13] and have already said[14] good-by to my friends.

[1] **Ces deux.** [2] **Il n'avait pas peur**, see 154 *b* 4. [3] Note the various translations of **faire** in different idiomatic uses. [4] Trans., *my utmost, all I can*, and the like. [5] Trans., *with* or *to*. [6] See 234 *c*. [7] **Faire la grâce.** [8] **De me donner**, see 250. [9] **Mon possible.** [10] **Pour.** [11] *Have had the intention.* [12] **Faire un voyage.** [13] Place *for a long time* immediately after the principal verb. [14] **Faire**, cf. above.

XXIX.

THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 233 ff.; 234 *a, b, c*. READ: 218 ff.; 234 *a* ff., *b* ff., *c* ff.; 235 ff.

VOCABULARY.

agréable, pleasant, agreeable.
à moins que, unless.
balcon, *m.*, balcony.
cacher, to hide, conceal.
***condamner**, to condemn.
confesser, to confess.
conséquence, *f.*, consequence.
coucher, *m.*, setting.
coupable, guilty.
couvert, *m.*, cover.

crime, *m.*, crime.
déjeuner, *m.*, breakfast.
dîner, to dine, take dinner.
dommage, *m.*, pity, hurt, harm.
exculper, to exculpate.
expier, to expiate.
explication, *f.*, explanation.
innocent, e, innocent.
inviter, to invite.
juge, *m.*, judge.
jusqu'à ce que, until.
mentir, to lie.
mourir, to die.
***net, te**, clear, plain.
non que, not that.
point, *m.*, point.
présentement, now.
punition, *f.*, punishment.
qui que, whoever.
quoique, although.
quoi que, whatever.

EXERCISES.

Quoique j'aie autre chose à vous dire, je voudrais que vous me donniez une explication bien nette sur ce point. Non qu'il me semble que vous mentiez, mais il paraît que vous cachez quelque chose de ce que vous devez me dire. Qui que soit l'ami que vous voulez exculper, il vaudrait mieux qu'on sût son nom afin qu'il reçût sa punition. À moins qu'il ne confesse son crime, il faudra que le juge condamne un innocent afin qu'il expie le crime de celui qui est coupable. Ce[1] sera dommage que cela arrive.

If you do not confess, the judge will have[2] to condemn an innocent man to expiate[3] the crime of which you are guilty. Whatever may be the consequence, it is better to acknowledge it now in order to[4] receive your punishment than to conceal it till you die. Although I have many other things to say to you I hope you will give me a clear explanation of all you have done. This is all I shall say till I see you to-morrow.

COLLOQUY.

Nous avons le café à huit heures du matin, le déjeuner à une heure et nous dînons ordinairement à sept heures C'est Marie qui met le couvert. Ce soir elle l'a mis pour six, parce que nous attendons quelques amis à notre château. Les jours d'été nous dînons sur le balcon, où c'est très agréable au coucher du soleil.

We usually dine at seven o'clock on the balcony in[5] the

summer evenings. It is very pleasant there[6] when the sun is setting. Mary always sets the table,[7] and to-night she has set it for six because we have invited some friends to dine with us.

[1] 132 *c*. [2] Trans., *it will be necessary that*, etc. [3] Use **afin que** w. subj., cf. 235 *b*. [4] Use **pour que** w. subj., 235 *b*. [5] Omit prep., see 161 *h* 1. [6] Y. [7] For idiom, see above.

XXX.

THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.—(*Concluded.*)

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 235 *a*, *b*, *c*, *d*, 1, 2, *e* 1, 2; 236 ff.
READ: 235 *a* 1, *b* 1, *c* 1, 2, *d* 3; 237 ff.

VOCABULARY.

à condition que, on condition that.
au *dessous de, beneath.
cher, chère, dear.
commencer, to begin.
continuer, to continue.
descendre, to stay, put up, descend.
donc, then, therefore.
emprunter, to borrow.
entendre, to hear.
hôtel, *m.*, hotel.
lac, *m.*, lake.
lever, *m.*, rising.
malgré que, notwithstanding that.
moitié, *f.*, half.
mont, *m.*, mountain-peak.
montagne, *f.*, mountain.
perdre, to lose.
petit-fils, *m.*, grandson.
porter (se), to be (of health).
pourquoi, why.
pourvu que, provided that.
prêter, to lend, loan.
procès, *m.*, lawsuit, suit.
refuser, to refuse.
si, so.
sommet, *m.*, summit.
sûr, e, sure, certain.
vœu, *m.*, wish.
vue, *f.*, view.

EXERCISES.

"Je désire qu'on sache d'où je viens et ce que je suis," dit-elle. "Je vais commencer donc, pourvu que vous vouliez m'entendre. Mon père venait de[1] mourir. Son dernier vœu était que je continuasse le procès, malgré que notre avocat à New-York crût que je le perdrais. Afin que je puisse le continuer, il faut que j'emprunte de l'argent. À condition que vous m'en prêtiez, je vous donnerai la moitié de ce que je gagne. Vous êtes le

premier à qui je me sois adressé, car vous êtes le meilleur ami que mon père ait eu."

Although you are not rich I know you will not refuse what I ask of you. On condition that you lend me what I want to borrow I will give you half[2] of what I win in my suit. It was my father's last wish that I should continue it, and I wish to borrow money in order to do so.[3] You are the best friend I[4] ever had,[5] therefore it is to you that I have first[6] applied. I wish you to know why it is sure that I shall win the suit.

COLLOQUY.

Lundi, le 10 août 1896.

Mon cher grand-père,

Cet été nous sommes en Suisse où les vues des montagnes sont magnifiques. Nous nous levons de bonne heure pour voir le lever du soleil. L'hôtel où nous sommes descendus est sur le sommet d'un mont d'où nous voyons le lac à nos pieds. Adieu.

Ton petit-fils.

Tuesday, Aug. 18th,[7] 1896.

Dear Father:—Here in Switzerland we get up early to see the sunrise. From the hotel the view of[8] the mountains is grand. We can see all the mountain-peaks and several lakes beneath us. I am still[9] well.[10] Good-by.

Your son, Louis.

[1] Note idiom, cf. 213 *a* 2. [2] Trans., *the half*. [3] Le. [4] Note the omission of the relative in English. [5] Perf., 237. [6] D'abord. [7] See 168 *b*. [8] Sur. [9] Toujours. [10] Trans., *to be well*, se porter bien.

XXXI.

THE INFINITIVE MOOD.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 244 *a*, *b*, 1, *c*; 249 *a*, *b*; 250, *a*.

READ: 239 ff.; 240 ff.; 241 ff.; 242 ff.; 243 ff.; 244 *a* 1–6; 245 *a–g*; 246 *a–e*; 247 *a–d*; 248 ff.; 249; 252 *a–f*.

VOCABULARY.

accourir, to hasten, run to.
ajouter, to add.
Amérique, *f.*, America.
avant de, before (w. inf.).
certain, e, certain.
c'est pourquoi, that is why, therefore.
comprendre, to understand.
demeurer, to live, dwell.
empresser (s'), to be eager, hasten.
étage, *m.*, story.
excuser, to excuse.
'hâter (se), to hasten.
installer (s'), to take up one's abode.
interrogatoire, *m.*, interview, questioning.
journal, *m.*, newspaper.
maire, *m.*, mayor.
mendier, to beg.
numéro, *m.*, number, house-number.
obstiner (s'), to persist, be obstinate, bent.
offrir, to offer.
***reporter**, *m.*, reporter.
rue, *f.*, street.
somme, *f.*, sum.
souvenir (se), to remember.
subir, to undergo.

EXERCISES.

Quand nous sommes venus nous installer à Paris nous avons cru devoir donner une certaine somme aux pauvres. Les reporters voulaient écrire sur nous dans les journaux, et ils sont accourus pour nous faire subir un interrogatoire. Ils s'obstinaient à ne pas comprendre ce que nous voulions faire. Je les priais de m'excuser de parler de mon histoire. Cependant l'un d'eux a dit avant de partir: "J'ai une grâce à vous demander. Est-ce que vous vous souvenez d'avoir mendié dans les rues de New-York et d'avoir mis le couvert au cinquième?"

She told the reporters that she did not remember having begged in the streets of New York or[1] having set the table[2] in the sixth story.[3] She hastened to add that she hoped they would excuse her for saying nothing more[4] of her life in America. She did not wish to see the history of that time in the newspapers. When she came to take up her abode[5] in Paris she thought she should give[6] a certain amount to the poor of the city. This is why she goes to see the mayor every day to offer him a check.

COLLOQUY.

Quelle rue demeurez-vous et quel numéro? Nous *demeurons* numéro 54, rue Bonaparte. Depuis quand y

demeurez[7]-vous? Nous y demeurons depuis le mois de février. Il y a six mois que je ne vous ai vu et je croyais que vous n'étiez plus dans la ville.

How long have you been living in the city? We have been here since the month of May. I thought you were no longer here, for it is some months since[8] I have seen you. We are living at number thirty Victor Hugo street, and are[9] on the third story.

[1] **Ni.** [2] **Couvert.** [3] Omit. [4] **De ne plus rien dire.** [5] **S'installer.** [6] **Devoir donner.** [7] For tense, see 219 *b*. [8] Trans., *that I have not seen you*, cf. 270. [9] **Nous sommes**, see 179 *a*.

XXXII.

THE PARTICIPLE.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 253 ff.; 254; 255 *a* 1, *b*, *c* 1; 257 *a*, *b*.
READ: 254 *a*, *b*; 255 *a* 2, 3, *c* 2, 3; 258 ff.; 259; 260.

VOCABULARY.

absence, *f.*, absence.
absent, e, absent.
à côté de, beside, next door to.
actrice, *f.*, actress.
bras, *m.*, arm.
brun, e, brown.
casser, to break.
image, *f.*, image.
interrompre, to interrupt.
Jacques, James.
noir, e, black.
poursuivre, to pursue.
présent, *m.*, present.
promettre, to promise.
ravi, enchanted, delighted.
répondre, to reply.
servir (se), to make use (of).
vrai, e, true.

EXERCISES.

Ayant promis cela à Jacques, elle s'adressa à l'autre fils qui, ne pouvant plus attendre, l'interrompit: "Vous n'êtes pas ravie de me voir après une si longue absence, et après les présents que je vous ai apportés? Avez-vous oublié les années que nous avons demeuré[1] à côté de vous, quand nous étions petits enfants?" "Non, répondit-elle, je ne vous ai pas oublié. Quand je vous ai connu, il est vrai que je n'étais pas encore une grande actrice, connue partout en Europe. J'ai voyagé dans tous les pays, et j'ai été pour-

suivie de votre image. Quand je me suis levée le matin, ma première pensée était à vous."

"I have travelled in all the countries of Europe, but I have not forgotten you," she said. "Your image has pursued me everywhere. When I was absent my first thought was of you every morning when I arose. I am delighted to see you again after so long an[2] absence. Do you think I have forgotten[3] the years[4] when we lived beside you? Do you think I can[5] forget the presents which you have sent me. Having promised to love, I promised it, not[6] for a week, or a month, but for my whole life."

COLLOQUY.

Qui est ce garçon aux cheveux bruns et à l'habit noir? Je le connais de vue,[7] mais je ne le connais pas de nom. Il m'a dit que sa sœur s'est cassé le bras à l'école ce matin. C'est dommage, parce qu'elle a une belle main, et elle ne pourra se servir de sa plume pendant six semaines.

It is a pity that that man does not write[8] a better hand. It is because he broke his arm some years ago, and for six weeks he could not make use of his pen. That is his brother with[9] the white coat.

[1] See 258 *a* 1. [2] Cf. French order above. [3] See 234 *c*. [4] **Année.** [5] See 234 *c*. [6] **Non.** [7] *By sight.* [8] **N'ait pas**, see 219 *a*, 234 *a* 1. [9] **Qui porte.**

XXXIII.

THE TENSES.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 219, *a*, *b*, *c*, *d*; 221; 222; 223 *a*, *b*; 224; 225; 226, *c*; 227, *a*.
READ: 219 *a* 1, *b* 1, *c* 1, *d* 1; 220 ff.; 221 *a*–*c*; 222 *a*, *b*; 223 *a* 1, 2, 3, *b* 1; 226 *a*, *b*; 228; 229 ff.; 230 ff.; 231.

VOCABULARY.

autrefois, formerly.
boulevard, *m.*, boulevard.
calme, calm.
chanter, to sing.
connaissance, *f.*, acquaintance.
couvent, *m.*, convent.
espèce, *f.*, kind, sort.
hymne, *m.*, hymn.
il y a, ago.
introduire, to introduce
là, there.
loger, to lodge, to take lodgings.

messe, *f.*, mass.
pieux, se, pious.
près de, near.
reporter, to carry back.
ruine, *f.*, ruin.
Seine, *f.*, Seine.
St.-Michel, St. Michael.
travail, *m.*, work.
université, *f.*, university.

EXERCISES.

Quand il fut parti, je restais seul à Rome, sans aucune autre connaissance que les monuments et les ruines à qui[1] il m'avait introduit. J'étais logé chez un vieux peintre qui allait à la messe avec sa femme tous les dimanches. Leur maison était une espèce de couvent où j'étais comme chez moi. J'y suis resté deux ans. J'aimais la scène calme et pieuse du soir, où finissait une journée de travail par un hymne que nous chantions. Cela me reportait au temps où j'habitais encore la maison de mon père.

After she had gone I remained in the house with the old painter and his wife, who used to go to mass every Sunday. I had taken lodgings with them[2] and remained with them some years. A few months ago I went to see them. During the day I used to work, and in the evening we sang hymns, which carried me back to the days when I was in my father's house. I had in the city no other acquaintance than the monuments of Rome to which my friend had introduced me.

COLLOQUY.

Il y a deux ans que nous sommes[3] dans cette maison. Nous avons aussi demeuré de[4] l'autre côté de la Seine, et autrefois nous demeurions dans la rue des Écoles près de la Sorbonne. Où est ce que vous demeurez à présent? Depuis deux mois je suis[5] dans le boulevard St.-Michel.

We have been living on the boulevard St. Michel for the last[6] six months. We used to live on University street, and have also lived on[7] the other side of the Seine. Where are you living now? I have been living for some months with my brother.

[1] See 190 *a* 2. [2] **Y.** [3] See 219 *b*. [4] *On.* [5] See 219 *b*. [6] **For idiom cf. the first or the last sentence above.** [7] **De.**

XXXIV.

THE ADVERB.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 120, *a*, *b*; 261; 262. READ: 120 *c*, *d*; 261 *a* ff., *b* ff.; 263–270.

VOCABULARY.

Angleterre, *f.*, England.
auparavant, before.
banquier, *m.*, banker.
bout, *m.*, end.
bureau, *m.*, desk.
cabinet, *m.*, office.
chance, *f.*, chance.
contraindre, to force, constrain.
douteux, **se**, doubtful.
éducation, *f.*, education.
ensemble, together.
impossible, impossible.
incertain, **e**, uncertain.
Julie, Julia.
misère, *f.*, poverty.
mot, *m.*, word.
oreille, *f.*, ear.
redoutable, formidable.
secours, *m.*, help.
tendre, to extend, stretch out.

GENERAL EXERCISES.

Je passais ma vie chez les avocats de New-York, mais personne ne voulait se charger de mes intérêts. C'était partout la même réponse: "Votre cause est très douteuse; vous avez des adversaires riches et redoutables; il faut de l'argent, beaucoup d'argent pour aller au bout de votre procès, et vous n'avez plus rien. On vous offre dix mille francs, acceptez, vendez votre procès." Mais, moi, j'avais toujours dans l'oreille les derniers mots de mon père, et je ne voulais pas. La misère, cependant, allait bien m'y contraindre, quand, un jour, j'allai voir un des amis de mon père, un banquier de New-York. Il n'était pas seul; un jeune homme était assis dans son cabinet, près de son bureau. "Vous pouvez parler, me dit-il, c'est mon fils." Le fils me tend la main. Il avait vingt-trois ans, et moi dix-huit. Bien souvent autrefois nous avions joué ensemble. Nous étions alors grands amis."

Seven or eight years before, he had gone to finish his education in France and England. His father asks me to

sit down, and I relate my story to him. He listens to me and replies: "You will need twenty or thirty thousand francs. No one will lend you such a sum on the uncertain chances of a lawsuit. If you are unfortunate, if you need help..." "It is not that, father, it is not that that Miss Vervier asks." "I know it, but what she asks is impossible." An hour later the son came to my house. "Julia, said he to me, promise me to accept what I am going to offer you." I promised him.[1] Then he said: "I will lend you the sum which you need provided you say nothing about it to my father." "But you must know something of my suit." "I do not know anything about it, and I do not wish to know anything."

[1] *It to him.*

XXXV.

THE PREPOSITIONS.

Grammar Sections.

LEARN: 272 ff.; 273 ff. READ: 274–281.

VOCABULARY.

agir, to act.
argent, *m.*, silver.
consulter, to consult.
convenir, to agree.
créance, *f.*, credit.
danger, *m.*, danger.
découvrir, to discover.
devenir, to become.
double, double.
faux, sse, false, untrue.
forcer, to force.
fortune, *f.*, fortune.
horreur, *f.*, horror.
inventer, to invent.
mariage, *m.*, marriage.
million, *m.*, million.
mine, *f.*, mine.
moyen, *m.*, means.
oh, oh.
pareil, le, like, such, equal.
peut-être, perhaps.
presser, to hurry.
proposer, to propose.
propriété, *f.*, property.
publier, to publish.
rendre, to give back.
revenu, *m.*, income, revenue.
simplicité, *f.*, simplicity.
terrain, *m.*, land.
vérité, *f.*, truth.

GENERAL EXERCISES.

Cela m'était offert avec une telle simplicité, que j'acceptai. Trois mois après, le procès était gagné; ces ter-

rains, devenus notre propriété, on voulait nous les acheter cinq millions. J'allai consulter Jacques. "Refusez, me dit-il, si l'on vous propose une pareille somme, c'est que les terrains valent le double." Cependant, il faut bien que je vous rende votre argent, je vous dois beaucoup d'argent. — Oh, pour cela, plus tard, rien ne presse; je suis bien tranquille maintenant! Ma créance ne court plus aucun danger. — Mais je voudrais vous payer tout de suite; j'ai les dettes en horreur! Il y aurait un moyen peut-être, sans rendre les terrains. Jacques, voulez-vous être mon mari?" Oui, monsieur, c'est moi qui me suis jetée à la tête de mon mari. C'est moi qui lui ai demandé sa main. Vous pouvez dire cela à tout le monde, et vous ne direz que la vérité.

I was forced to act in that way.[1] I am sure he never would have spoken. I had become too rich. This is the history of our marriage. As to the history of our fortune, it can be told[2] in a few[3] words. There were millions in these lands in[4] America. Silver mines were discovered there and we receive large revenues[5] every year from them. But we have agreed[6] to give a large part of our income[7] every year to the poor. That is because we have been poor ourselves. I used to set the table in our flat on the sixth story[8] in[9] New York, but I never begged in the streets, as the reporters have said since we arrived in Paris. Nearly all that they have published about[10] us is untrue. They came to see us when we arrived, but I told them nothing, and they invented the story which they published.

[1] De la sorte. [2] Elle peut se dire. [3] Dans quelques. [4] De. [5] Revenus. [6] Sommes convenus. [7] Pl. [8] Notre cinquième étage. [9] À. [10] Sur.

VOCABULARIES AND INDEX.

PRINCIPAL ABBREVIATIONS USED IN THE VOCABULARIES AND INDEX.

a.	active.	*interj.*	interjection.
acc.	accent, accusative.	*m.* or *masc.*	masculine.
adj.	adjective.	*n.*	noun.
adv.	adverb.	*nom.*	nominative.
agree.	agreement.	*num.*	numeral.
art.	article.	*obj.*	object.
auxil.	auxiliary.	*pass.*	passive.
comp.	comparison, comparative.	*pl.*	plural.
conj.	conjugation, conjunction.	*poss.*	possessive.
cop.	copula.	*p. p.*	past participle.
demon.	demonstrative.	*pr.*	pronunciation.
f. or *fem.*	feminine.	*pred.*	predicate.
form.	formation.	*prep.*	preposition.
fut.	future.	*pron.*	pronoun.
gen	gender.	*ps. p.*	present participle.
hist.	history.	*r.* or *refl.*	reflexive.
i.	intransitive.	*rel.*	relative.
imp.	imperfect.	*subj.*	subject, subjunctive.
impers.	impersonal.	*synt.*	syntax.
imv.	imperative.	*v.*	verb.
inf.	infinitive.	*w.*	with.

A ' before initial h shows it to be aspirate.

FRENCH-ENGLISH VOCABULARY.

a (**à**, **â**), elision, 37 *b*; pr. 39; silent, 58 *a*.

à (synt. 273, cf. 246; repetition, 281), *prep.*, to, at, etc.; — *cause que* (144 *c*), because; — *ce que* (144 *c*), according to what; — *condition de* (*w. inf.* 251), *que* (*w. subj.*, 235 *c*), on condition that; — *mesure* or *condition que* (144 *c*), in proportion as, according as; — *force de* (*w. inf.* 251), by dint of; — *la charge que* (144 *c*, *w. subj.* 235 *c*), on condition that; — *moins que* (232 *b*, *w. subj.* 235 *c*), *de* or *que de* (*w. inf.* 251), unless, without; *au cas que* (144 *c* 2, *w. subj.* 235 *c*), in case; *au point que* (144 *c* 2); *au-dessous de* (279 *b* 1), under; *au-dessus de* (279 *a* 1), above.

abaisser, *v. a.*, to lower; **s'** — (*w. inf.* 246), to stoop, fall.

abandon, *n. m.*, abandonment.

abandonner, *v. a.*, to abandon.

abattre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *b*), *v. a.*, to throw down, fell; **s'** —, to fall down, abate.

abbé, *n. m.*, abbe, abbot.

abdiquer, *v. i.*, to abdicate.

abhorrer (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1), *v. a.*, to abhor.

abîme, *n. m.*, abyss.

abject (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *β*), **e**, *adj.*, abject.

abord, *n. m.*, approach; **d'** —, at first.

aborder, *v. a.*, to approach, accost.
aboutir (*w. inf.* 246), *v. i.*, to come out, end in.
aboyer, *v. i.*, to bark.
Abraham (*pr.* 54 *a* 1), *p. n. m.*
abrupt (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *γ*), **e**, *adj.*, rugged.
absence, *n. f.*, absence.
absent, e, *adj.*, absent.
absenter (s') (*w. inf.* 245), *v. r.*, to absent one's self.
absoudre (*conj.* 119, no. 40 *b*), *v. a.*, to absolve; **s'** — (*w. inf.* 245), to absolve one's self.
absous (*fem.* 90), **te**, *p. p. of absoudre.*
abstenir (s') (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *a*; *w. inf.* 245), *v. r.*, to refrain.
abstraire (*conj.* 119, no. 28 *a*), *v. a.*, to abstract.
abuser, *v. a.*, to delude.
accabler, *v. a.*, to overwhelm.
accent, *n. m.*, accent.
accepter, *v. a.*, to accept.
accès, *n. m.*, access, attack.
accident, *n. m.*, accident.
acclamation, *n. m.*, acclamation.
accommoder, *v. a.*, to suit; **s'** — (*w. inf.* 245), to comply with.
accomplir, *v. a.*, to accomplish, complete.
accord, *n. m.*, agreement.
accorder (*w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to accord, reconcile.
accourir (*conj.* 119, no. 7; *w.* **à**, 174 *d*), *v. i.*, to run, run up.
accoutumer (*w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to accustom.
accroc (*pr.* 76 *a* 2), *n. m.*, rent, tear.
accroire (*conj.* 119, no. 30), *v. a.*, to believe.
accroître (*conj.* 119, no. 31 *a*), *v. i.*, to grow.
accueil, *n. m.*, reception, welcome.
accueillir (*conj.* 119, no. 5 *a*), *v. a.*, to receive.
accuser (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to accuse.
Achab (*pr.* 63 *a* 3, 75 *a*), *p. n. m.*
acharner (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to excite.
ache, *n. f.*, smallage.
Achéron, *p. n. m.*, a river of the infernal regions.
acheter (*conj.* 112 *c* 2), *v. a.*, to buy.
achever (*conj.* 112 *c* 2; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to finish.
Achille (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 *α*), *p. n. m.*, Achilles.
aconit (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), *n. m.*, aconite.
acquérir (*conj.* 119, no. 11), *v. a.*, to acquire.
acquerrai (*pr.* 61 *c*), *fut. of acquérir.*
acte, *n. m.*, act, deed.
acteur, *n. m.*, actor.
actif, ve, *adj.*, active.
action, *n. f.*, action.
actrice, *n. f.*, actress.
addition, *n. f.*, addition.
adieu, *adv.* or *n. m.*, good-by.
adjoindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *c*), *v. a.*, to adjoin.
admettre (*conj.* 119, no. 34; *w. subj.* 234 *b* 1, *c* 1; *w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to admit.
administration, *n. f.*, administration.
admirable, *adj.*, admirable.
admiration, *n. f.*, admiration.
admirer (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to admire, be astonished.
adopter, *v. a.*, to adopt.
adorer, *v. a.*, to worship, adore.
adosser (*pr.* 43 *b* 2 *δ*), *v. a.*, to lean.
adresser, *v. a.*, to address; **s'**—, to address one's self, apply, turn.
adroit (*w. inf.* 249 *b*), **e**, *adj.*, adroit, skilful.
advenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *b*), *v. i.*, to happen.
adversaire, *n. m.*, opponent, adversary.
æ, *pr.* 47, rem.
affaire, *n. f.*, affair; *pl.*, business.
affecter (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to affect.
affection, *n. f.*, affection.

afin de (*w. inf.* 251), *prep.*, in order to.
que (*hist.* 144 *c*, 232 *b*; *w. subj.* 235 *a*), *conj.*, in order that.
affirmer (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to affirm, assert.
affliger (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to afflict, distress; **s'**—, to afflict one's self.
affreux, se, *adj.*, frightful, horrible.
affronter, *v. a.*, to face, affront.
âge, *n. m.*, age.
-age, *masc. ending*, 83 *b* 1.
âgé, e, *adj.*, old.
agenda (*pr.* 54 *b* 2 *γ*), *n. m.*, memorandum-book.
agglutiner, *v. a.*, to agglutinate.
agir (*formation* 113, rem. 2), *v. i.*, to act; *il s'agit* (impers. 215 *a*, 216 *c*; *w. inf.* 245 *d*), *v. r.*, it concerns, the question is.
agiter, *v. a.*, to shake.
agnat (*pr.* 65 *a* 2), *n. m.*, agnate.
agneau, *n. m.*, lamb.
Agnès, *p. n. f.*; (*by metaphor*) meekness.
Agram (*pr.* 54 *a* 1), *p. n. m.*
agrandir, *v. a.*, to enlarge; **s'**—, to exalt one's self.
agréable, *adj.*, pleasant, agreeable.
agréer (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1), *v. a.*, to accept.
aguerrir (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to inure (to war).
ah, *interj.*, ah.
ai (**aî**), *pr.* 47.
aide (*gen.* 84 *a*), *n. f.*, help; *m.*, helper, assistant.
aider (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to help.
aieul (*pl.* 86 *d* 3), *n. m.*, grandfather, ancestor.
aigle (*gen.* 84 *a*), *n. m.*, eagle; *f.*, eagle (heraldry).
aigu, ë, *adj.*, acute, sharp.
aiguille (*pr.* 64 *a* 2), *n. f.*, needle.
aiguiser (*pr.* 64 *a* 2), *v. a.*, to sharpen.
ail (*pl.* 86 *c* 3), *n. m.*, garlic.
aile, *n. f.*, wing.
ailleurs, *adv.*, elsewhere; **d'**—, moreover, besides, in other respects.
aim, *pr. as nas. vow.*, 53, 55.
aimable, *adj.*, amiable, lovely.
aimer (*1st conj.* 111; *pass. conj.* 116; *w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 244 *a* 3, 246, 247; — *mieux, autant, w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to love.
ain, *pr. as nas. vow.*, 53, 55.
aîné, e, *adj.*, elder.
ainsi, *adv.*, thus, so.
air, *n. m.*, air, look; *avoir l'*— (*agree.* 162 *b*), to have the look, appear.
-aire, *masc. ending* 83 *b* 1.
aise (*w. inf.* 249 *a*), *n. f.*, joy, pleasure; *adj.*, glad.
aisé (*w. inf.* 249 *b*), **e,** *adj.*, easy.
aisément, *adv.* easily.
-aison, *fem. ending*, 83 *b* 2.
Aix en Provence (*pr.* 75 *a* 1), *p. n.*
Aix-la-Chapelle (*pr.* 75 *a*), *p. n.*
Ajax (*pr.* 75 *a*), *p. n. m.*
ajourner, *v. a.*, to adjourn, defer.
ajouter, *v. a.*, to add.
Albe, *p. n. f.*, Alba.
album, *n. m.*, album.
Alcide, *p. n. m.*, Alcides.
Alep (*pr.* 75 *a*), *p. n. m.*, Aleppo.
Alexandre, *p. n. m.*, Alexander.
Alfred (*pr.* 75 *a*), *p. n. m.*
allemand, e, *adj.*, German.
Allemagne, *p. n. f.*, Germany.
aller (*conj.* 119, no. 1; *as auxil.* 213; *w. inf.* 244; *w. pr. p.* 255 *a* 1 *α*), *v. i.*, to go; *s'en* — (119, no. 1 *b*, 175 *c*, 216 *c*), *v. r.*, to go away, depart; *y* —, 176 *b*.
allons (**aller**), *as interj.* 238, rem. 5.
allopathe, *n. m.*, allopath.
allumer, *v. a.*, to light, illuminate.
almanach (*pr.* 76 *a* 4), *n. m.*, almanac,
aloès (*pr.* 75 *c* 2), *n. m.*, aloes.
alors, *adv*, then.
alouette, *n. f.*, lark.
Alpes, *p. n. f.*, Alps.
Alsace (*pr.* 69 *b* 2), *p. n. f.*, Alsatia.

alternative, *n. f.*, alternative.
am, *pr. as nas. vow.*, 53, 54.
amant, *n. m.*, lover.
amasser, *v. a.*, to heap, hoard.
ambassade, *n. f.*, embassy.
ambassadeur, *n. m.*, ambassador.
ambitieux, se, *adj.*, ambitious.
ambition, *n. f.*, ambition.
ambitionner (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to be ambitious of, desire earnestly.
ambulance, *n. f.*, ambulance.
âme, *n. f.*, soul; — *qui vive*, *vivante* = *personne*, 268 *e*.
amen (*pr.* 54 *b* 3), *adv.*, amen.
amener (*conj.* 112 *c* 2; *w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to bring.
amer (*pr.* 76 *d* 2), **ère**, *adj.*, bitter.
Amérique, *p. n. f.*, America.
ami, *n m.*, friend.
amical (*pl.* 92 *c* 1), **e**, *adj.*, friendly.
amie, *n. f.*, friend (female).
amitié, *n. f.*, friendship.
amour (*gen.* 84 *c* 1), *n. m.*, love.
amoureux, se, *adj.*, in love, amorous.
amphigouri, *n. m.*, nonsense.
amphithéâtre, *n. m.*, amphitheatre.
ample, *adj.*, roomy, ample.
amusant, e, *adj.*, amusing.
amuser, *v. a.*, to amuse; **s'**— (*w. inf.* 247), to amuse one's self.
an, *pr. as nas. vow.*, 53, 54.
an, *n. m.*, year.
analogue, *adj.*, analogous.
ancêtre (*case* 85 *b*), *n. m.*, ancestor.
ancien (*fem.* 90 *c* 1), **ne**, *adj.*, ancient, old.
âne, *n. m.*, ass.
ânesse (*form.* 82 *a* 2 *β*), *n. f.*, she-ass.
anglais, e, *adj.*, English.
angle, *n. m.*, angle.
Angle-Saxon (*pl.* 88 *b*), *p. n. m.*, Anglo-Saxon.
Angleterre, *p. n. f.*, England.
angoisse, *n. f.*, anguish.
anguille, *n. f.*, serpent,
animal, *n. m.*, animal.
animer, *v. a.*, to animate; **s'**— (*w. inf.* 246), to become animated.
annales, *n. f. pl.*, annals.
année, *n. f.*, year.
annoncer, *v. a.*, to announce.
anse, *n. f.*, handle.
Anselme, *p. n. m.*, Anselm.
Antiochus (*pr.* 63 *a* 3), *p. n. m.*
antique, *adj.* antique.
anxiété, *n. f.*, anxiety.
aoriste (*pr.* 58 *a*), *n. m.*, aorist.
août (*pr.* 58 *a*), *n. m.*, August.
aoûteron (*pr.* 58 *a*), *n. m.*, harvester.
apaiser, *v. a.*, to appease, pacify.
apercevoir (*conj.* 119, no. 13 *a*; *w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to perceive; **s'**— (*w. inf.* 245 *d*), to perceive.
Apollon, *p. n. m.*, Apollo.
apparaître (*conj.* 119, no. 32), *v. i.*, to appear.
appareil, *n. m.*, preparation, apparel.
apparoir (*conj.* 119, no. 32 *a*), *v. i.*, to appear.
appartenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *a*), *v. i.*, to belong.
appauvrir, *v. a.*, to impoverish.
appeler (*conj.* 112 *c* 1), *v. a.*, to call; **s'**— (*w. pred. nom.* 134 *b* 2; *w. inf.* 246), *v. r.*, to be called, named.
appétit, *n. m.*, appetite.
applaudir (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to applaud.
application, *n. f.*, application, diligence.
appliquer, *v. a.*, to apply; **s'**—, *w. inf.* 246.
apporter, *v. a.*, to bring.
appréhender (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to apprehend.
apprendre (*conj.* 119, no. 36 *a*; *w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to teach, learn.
apprêt, *n. m.*, preparation.
apprêter, *v. a.*, to prepare, dress; **s'**—, *w. inf.* 246.
approche, *n. f.*, approach.
approcher (*w. de* 209 *c* 1 *β*), *v. i.*, to approach.

approuver (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1), *v. a.*, to approve.
appuyer (*conj.* 112 *e* 1), *v. a.*, to support, prop.
âpre, *adj.*, harsh, rough.
après (275 *a* 1; *w. inf.* 252 *a*), *prep.*, after.
que (*hist.* 144 *c* 1), *conj.*, after; after that.
après-midi, *n. f.*, afternoon.
aquarelle (*pr.* 68 *b*), *n. f.*, water-color painting.
Arabe, *p. n. m.*, Arab.
arbitre, *n. m.*, arbiter, ruler.
arbre (*gen.* 82 *b* 3), *n. m.*, free.
arc-en-ciel, *n. m.*, rainbow.
archange (*pr.* 63 *a* 2), *n. m.*, archangel.
archétype (*pr.* 63 *a* 2), *n. m.*, archetype.
architecture, *n. f.*, architecture.
ardent, e, *adj.*, ardent, burning.
ardeur, *n. f.*, heat, ardor.
argent, *n. m.*, silver, money.
Argos (*pr.* 75 *c* 2), *p. n. m.*
arguer (*pr.* 64 *a* 2), *v. i.*, to argue, infer.
aristocratie (*pr.* 71 *a* 1), *n. f.*, aristocracy.
arme (*gen.* 82 *b* 2), *n. f.*, arm, weapon.
armée, *n. f.*, army.
armer, *v. a.*, to arm.
arpenteur, *n. m.*, surveyor.
arras (*pr.* 75 *c* 3), *n. m.*, arras.
arrêter (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1, *cf.* 2), *v. a.*, to stop, decide; **s'—**, *w. inf.* 247.
arriver (*comp. w. être* 111 *a*; *impers.* 214 *b*; *w. ind.* 234 *a* 2; *w. inf.* 246), *v. i.*, to arrive; *impers.* to happen.
arrivée, *n. f.*, arrival.
art (*gen.* 82 *b* 3), *n. m.*, art.
article, *n. m.*, article.
artiste, *n. m. f.*, artist.
-as, *pr.* 75 *c* 2.
as (*pr.* 75 *c* 2), *n. m.*, ace.
Asie, *p. n. f.*, Asia.
-asme, *masc. ending*, 83 *b* 1.
aspect (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *β*), *n. m.*, aspect, sight.
aspirer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to inhale, aspire.
assaillant, *n. m.*, assaillant.
assaillir (*conj.* 119, no. 5 *b*), *v. a.*, to assail.
assassin, *n. m.*, assassin.
assemblée, *n. f.*, assembly.
assembler, *v. a.*, to assemble.
asseoir (*conj.* 119, no. 21), *v. a.*, to seat; **s'—**, to sit down.
asservir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *b*), *v. a.*, to enslave.
assez (*pr.* 78 *a* 1), *adv.*, enough.
assidûment (*accent* 120 *c* 2), *adv.*, assiduously.
assigner (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to assign, allot.
assimiler, *v. a.*, to assimilate.
assister, *v. i.*, to be present.
assommer, *v. a.*, to kill, beat to death.
assortir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *a*), *v. a.*, to suit, match.
assujetir (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to subject, subdue.
assurément, *adv.*, assuredly.
assurer (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to secure, assert.
Astarté, *p. n. f.*, Astarte.
asthme (*pr.* 73 *d*), *n. m.*, asthma.
astreindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *b*; *w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to bind, constrain.
athlète, *n. m.*, athlete.
atlas (*pr.* 75 *c* 2), *n. m.*, atlas.
attacher, *v. a.*, to fasten; **s'—** (*w. inf.* 246), to undertake.
attaquer, *v. a.*, to attack.
atteindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *b*), *v. a.*, to reach, attain.
atteinte, *n. f.*, stroke, injury.
attendre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *a*), *v. a.*, to await, expect; **s'—** (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 247) to expect.
attendu que (*hist.* 144 *c*), *conj.*, whereas, because.
attention, *n. f.*, attention.
attester, *v. a.*, to attest, call to witness.
attraire (*conj.* 119, no. 28 *a*), *v. a.*, to attract, draw.
attraper, *v. a.*, to catch.

attribuer, *v. a.*, to assign, attribute.
attrister, *v. a.*, to sadden; **s'—** (*w. inf.* 245 *b*), to become sad.
attrouper, *v. a.*, to assemble; **s'—**, to come together.
au, *pr.* 50.
au (contraction of *à le*, 81, rem. 1), to the.
aube (*pr.* 50 *b* 2), *n. f.*, dawn.
auberge, *n. f.*, inn.
Auch (*pr.* 50 *b* 2), *p. n. m.*
aucun (199 *b*, 204; *neg. comp.* 266, 268), **e**, *indef. adj.*, no, no one, not any, any.
aucunement (*neg. comp.* 268), *adv.*, by no means, in no wise.
augmenter, *v. a.*, to increase; **s'—**, *w. inf.* 246.
auguste (*pr.* 50 *b* 3), *adj.*, august.
aujourd'hui (*pr.* 50 *b* 3), *adv.*, today.
-auld, *pr.* 76 *a*.
-ault, *pr.* 76 *a*.
aulx, *pr.* 76 *c*; *pl. of ail*, 86 *c* 3.
aumône, *n. f.*, alms.
aune, *n. f.*, ell.
aune, *n. m.*, alder.
auparavant, *adv.*, before.
auprès, *adv.*, near.
aurore (*pr.* 50 *b* 1), *n. f.*, dawn.
aussi, *adv.*, also, too, so.
aussitôt, *adv.*, immediately.
que (*hist.* 144 *c*), *conj.*, as soon as.
autant, *adv.*, as much, as many.
autel (*pr.* 50 *b* 2), *n. m.*, altar.
auteur, *n. m.*, author.
automnal (*pr.* 73 *a*), **e**, *adj.*, autumnal.
automne (*pr.* 73 *a*; *gen.* 84 *c* 2), *n. m. f.*, autumn, fall.
autoriser (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to authorize.
autorité (*pr.* 50 *b* 3), *n. f.*, authority.
autour de, *prep.*, around.
autre (*synt.* 199 *a*, 200; *nous autres*, 200 *b*; *w. un*, 200 *a*), *adj.*, other.
autrefois, *adv.*, formerly.
autrui (case of *autre*, 200 *c*), *pron.*, another, others.
aux (contraction of *à les*, 81, rem. 1), to the.
auxerre, **-ois**, **-onne** (*pr.* 72 *b*), *p. n.*
aval (*pl.* 86 *c* 1), *n. m.*, guaranty.
avancer, *v. a.*, to advance, set ahead; *v. i.*, to go fast (of clocks).
avant (275 *a*), *prep.*, before (of time).
de, que de, *w. inf.*, 251.
que (*hist.* 144 *c* 1; *w. subj.* 235 *a*), *conj.*, before.
avantage, *n. m.*, advantage.
avec (274 *a*), *prep.*, with.
avenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *b*), *v. i.*, to happen.
avenir, *n. m.*, future.
avertir (*w. inj.* 245 *d*), *v. a.*, to advise of, inform, warn.
aveugle, *adj.*, blind.
aveuglément (*accent*, 120 *c* 1), *adv.*, blindly.
avidement, *adv.*, eagerly.
avilir, *v. a.*, to debase, vilify; **s'—**, *w. inf.* 246.
avis, *n. m.*, opinion.
aviser, *v. a.*, to advise, perceive; **s'—** (*w. inf.* 245 *d*), to bethink one's self.
avocat, *n. m.*, lawyer, barrister.
avoir (*conj.* 107; as *auxil.* 109 *a*, 210; *w. inf.* 246 *c*), *v. a.*, to have; *il y a* (*impers.* 176 *b*, 215 *b*), there is, there are; *il y a . . . que*, tense after, 219 *b*, *neg.* 269 *c* 3; — *crainte*, *honte*, *peur*, *regret*, etc., 154 *b* 4, *w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; — *faim*, etc., 154 *b*, rem.; — *peine*, etc., *w. inf.* 246 *b*; — *beau*, *w. inf.* 244; — *besoin*, etc., *w. inf.* 245 *d*; *n'— que*, *w. inf.* 248 *a* 2.
avouer (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to acknowledge, confess.
avril (*pr.* 67 *b* 1), *n. m.*, April.
axe, *n. m.*, axis, axle.
azur, *n. m.*, azure, blue.

b, *pr.*, 60, 75 *a*.
babil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1), *n. m.*, prattle.
Bacchus (*pr.* 63 *a* 3), *p. n. m.*

bagatelle, *n. f.*, trifle.
Bagdad (*pr.* 75 *a*), *p. n.*
bague, *n. f.*, ring.
baie, *n. f.*, bay.
bail (*pl.* 86 *c* 2), *n. m.*, **lease.**
bain-marie (*pl.* 88 *b*), *n. m.*, wet-bath.
baïonnette (*pr.* 45 *b* 1), *n. f.*, bayonet.
baisemain (*gen.* 84 *c* 2), *n. m.*; in pl. respects.
baiser (*pr.* 47 *a* 2), *v. a.*, to kiss.
baisser, *v. a.*, to lower.
bal (*pl.* 86 *c* 1), *n. m.*, ball.
balancer, *v. a.*, to balance; **se** —, to swing, rock.
balbutier (*pr.* 71 *a* 3), *v. i.*, to stammer.
balcon, *n. m.*, balcony.
baleine, *n. f.*, whale.
balle, *n. f.*, ball.
balsamine (*pr.* 64 *b* 2), *n. f.*, balsam.
Baltique, *p. n. f.*, Baltic.
balustrade, *n. f.*, balustrade.
banc, *n. m.*, bench.
bandeau, *n. m.*, head-band, bandage.
bandit, *n. m.*, bandit.
banquier, *n. m.*, banker.
baptême (*pr.* 73 *c*), *n. m.*, baptism.
baptiser (*pr.* 73 *c*), *v. a.*, to baptize.
barbe (84 *b*), *n. f.*, beard.
barbe (84 *b*), *n. m.*, barb (horse).
barbier, *n. m.*, barber.
baril (*pr.* 67 *b* 1 *β*), *n. m.*, barrel.
barque, *n. f.*, bark (boat).
barrière, *n. f.*, barrier.
bas (*fem.* 90 *c* 2), **se**, *adj.*, low, mean.
basané, **e**, *adj.*, sun-burned, tanned.
base, *n. f.*, base, basis.
bassesse, *n. f.*, lowness, meanness.
bataille, *n. f.*, battle.
bataillon, *n. m.*, battalion.
bateau, *n. m.*, boat.
baton, *n. m.*, stick, staff.
bâtir, *v. a.*, to build.
battre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *b*), *v. a.*, to beat; **se** —, to fight.
Bayeux (*pr.* 45 *b* 1), *p. n.*
Bayonne (*pr.* 45 *b* 1), *p. n.*
bayonnette (*pr.* 45 *b* 1), cf. baïonnette.
Béatrix (*pr.* 75 *a* 1), *p. n. f.*, Beatrice.
beau (*fem.* 90 *d*), **bel**, **belle**, *adj.*, beautiful.
beaucoup (*pr.* 75 *a* 3; *comp.* 94; *synt.* 262), *adv.*, much, many.
beau-frère (*pl.* 88 *a*), *n. m.*, brother-in-law, step-brother.
beauté, *n. f.*, beauty,
beaux-arts, *n. m. pl.*, fine arts.
bec, *n. m.*, beak.
bégayer, *v. a.*, to stammer, stammer out.
bel, cf. *beau.*
bellement, *adv.*, beautifully.
bellet (*fem.* 90 *c* 2), **te**, *adj.*, pretty.
Belt (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *γ*), *p. n.*
Bengale (*pr.* 54 *b* 2 *γ*; *gen.* 83 *a* 2), *p. n. m.*, Bengal.
bénin (*fem.* 90 *f*), **bénigne**, *adj.*, benignant, kindly.
bénir (*conj.* 114 *a*), *v. a.*, to bless.
Benjamin (*pr.* 54 *b* 2 *γ*), *p. n. m.*
Béotien (*pr.* 71 *a* 2), *p. n. m.*, Bœotian.
berceau, *n. m.*, cradle.
berger, *n. m.*, shepherd.
bergère, *n. f.*, shepherdess.
Berlioz (*pr.* 75 *a*), *p. n. m.*
Bernard, *p. n. m.*
Bernhardt (*art.* 152 *b* 5), *p. n. f.*
besoin, *n. m*, need.
bestiaux, cf. *bétail*, 86 *c* 3.
bétail (*pl.* 86 *c* 3), *n. m*, cattle.
bête, *n. f.*, beast, animal; *adj.*, stupid.
bêvue, *n. f.*, blunder.
bibliothèque, *n. f.*, library.
bien (*comp.* 94; as *n.* 164 *b*; *adv. of quantity*, 262 *a*), *adv.*, well, very; *n. m.*, goods, wealth;
que (*hist.* 144 *c*; *w. subj.* 235 *d*), *conj.*, although, though.
bien-aimé, **e**, *adj.*, well-beloved, loved.
bien-faiteur, *n. m.*, benefactor.
bientôt, *adv.*, soon.
bienveillance, *n. f.*, benevolence, kindness.

bière, *n. f.*, beer.
bijou (*pl.* 86 *b* 1), *n. m.*, jewel.
billard, *n. m.*, billiards.
billion (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 *α*), *n. m.*, billion.
bis (*pr.* 75 *c* 2), *adv.*, twice.
bivouac, *n. m.*, bivouac.
bizarre, *adj.*, strange, odd.
blâme, *n. m.*, blame, censure.
blâmer (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1 ; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to blame, censure.
blanc (*fem.* 90 *c* 2, rem.), **blanche**, *adj.*, white.
Blanche, *p. n. f.*
blanchir, *v. a.*, to whiten.
blanchisseur, *n. m.*, washerman; **-euse**, *n. f.*, washerwoman.
blesser, *v. a.*, to wound, hurt.
blessure, *n. f.*, wound.
bleu (*pl.* 92 *b* 1), **e**, *adj.*, blue.
bleuâtre, *adj.*, bluish.
bleu-clair (*agree.* 162 *d*), *adj.*, light blue.
bleu-foncé (*agree.* 162 *d*), *adj.*, dark blue.
blond, **e**, *adj.*, fair, light.
blond cendré (*agree.* 162 *d*), *adj.*, light, flaxen.
bœuf (*pr.* 76 *b*, 51 *b* 1), *n. m.*, ox.
Boileau, *p. n. m.*
boire (*conj.* 119, no. 29), *v. a.*, to drink.
boire, *n. m.*, drink.
bois (*pr.* 49 *b* 2), *n. m.*, wood, forest ; familiarly for *Bois de Boulogne*.
boîte, *n. f.*, box.
boiteux, **se**, *adj.*, lame.
bon (*fem.* 90 *c* 1 ; *comp.* 94 ; *w. inf.* 249 *b*), **ne**, *adj.*, good, kind.
Bonaparte, *p. n. m.*
bonheur, *n. m.*, happiness.
bonjour, *n. m.*, good day, good morning.
bonté, *n. f.*, goodness, kindness.
bord, *n. m.*, border, edge.
borner (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to set bounds, limit, restrain.
botaniste, *n. m.*, botanist.
bouche, *n. f.*, mouth.
bouclier, *n. m.*, buckler, shield.
bouger (*neg.* 269 *a*), *v. i.*, to move, budge.
bouillir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *c*), *v. i.*, to boil.
boulanger, *n. m.*, baker.
Boulanger, *p. n. m.*
boulevard. *n. m.*, boulevard.
bourg, *n. m.*, market-town, town.
bourgeois, **e**, *adj.*, citizenlike, homely.
bourreau, *n. m.*, executioner, headsman.
bourreler (*conj.* 112 *c* 2), *v. a.*, to goad, sting.
bourse, *n. f.*, purse.
bout, *n. m.*, end.
boutonner, *v. i.*, to bud, button.
boxer, *v. i.*, to box.
braie (*hist.* 2), *n. f.*, clout, breeches.
braire (*conj.* 119, no. 28 *b*), *v. i.*, to bray.
bras, *n. m.*, arm.
brave (*posit.* 165), *adj.*, brave, honest, worthy.
brebis, *n. f.*, sheep, ewe.
bref, **brève**, *adj.*, short, brief.
Brest (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *α*), *p. n.*
breuvage, *n. m.*, drink, beverage.
brigue, *n. m.*, intrigue, cabal.
briguer (*w. inf.* 245 *e*), *v. a.*, to intrigue for, desire earnestly.
brillant, **e**, *adj.*, brilliant, bright.
brin (as *neg. comp.* 266 *a*), *n. m.*, blade (of grass), bit, mote.
briser, *v. a.*, to break.
broc (*pr.* 76 *a* 2), *n. m.*, jug.
brouiller, *v. a.*, to disarrange, confuse.
bruiner, *v. i.*, to drizzle.
bruire (*conj.* 119, no. 28 *c*), *v. i.* to rustle, roar.
bruit, *n. m.*, noise.
brûlant, **e**, *adj.*, burning.
brûler (*w. inf.* 245 *e*), *v. a.*, to burn, desire.
brun, **e**, *adj.*, brown.
brut (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), **e**, *adj.*, raw, rough.
bruyant, **e**, *adj.*, noisy.
Bruxelles (*pr.* 72 *b*), *p. n.*, Brussels.
bûcher, *n. m.*, pile, stake.

Buloz (*pr.* 75 *a*), *p. n. m.*
bureau, *n. m.*, office, desk.
but, *n. m.*, end, aim, purpose.
butin, *n. m.*, booty.
Byzance, *p. n. m.*, Byzantium.

ça, contraction for *cela*, 99 *b*, 187 *a*.
ça, *adv.*, there.
cabaler, *v. i.*, to cabal.
cabane, *n. f.*, cottage, hut.
cabaret, *n. m.*, saloon.
cabinet, *n. m.*, office.
cacher, *v. a.*, to hide.
cadavre (*pr.* 39 *b* 3), *n. m.*, corpse.
cadeau, *n. m.*, gift, present.
Cadix (*pr.* 75 *a* 1), *p. n.*
caduc, que, *adj.*, frail, decaying.
Caen (*pr.* 58 *a*), *p. n.*
Cæsar, *p. n. m.*
café, *n. m.*, coffee.
cage, *n. f.*, cage.
caillou (*pl.* 86 *b* 1), *n. m.*, pebble.
cal (*pl.* 86 *c* 1), *n. m.*, callus.
calèche, *n. f.*, calash, open carriage.
calme, *adj.*, calm.
calomnie, *n. f.*, calumny.
calomnier, *v. a.*, to slander.
camarade, *n. m.*, comrade, companion.
camaraderie, *n. f.*, companionship.
Camille (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 *α*), *p. n. f.*, Camilla.
camisole, *n. f.*, night-dress.
Camoëns (*pr.* 75 *c* 3), *p. n.*
camp, *n. m.*, camp.
campagne, *n. f.*, country.
canard, *n. m.*, drake, duck.
cancer (*pr.* 76 *d* 2), *n. m.*, cancer.
cane, *n. f.*, duck.
canon, *n. m.*, cannon.
cantal (*pl.* 86 *c* 1), *n. m.*, cantal.
cantique, *n. m.*, canticle, song.
caoutchouc (*pr.* 76 *a* 2), *n. m.*, caoutchouc, India-rubber.
cap (*pr.* 75 *a*). *n. m.*, cape.
capable (*w. inf.* 249 *a*), *adj.*, capable, able.
capitaine, *n. m.*, captain
capitale, *n. f.*, capital.
capricieux, se, *adj.*, capricious, whimsical.
car, *conj.*, for, because.
caracal (*pl.* 86 *c* 1), *n. m.*, kind of cat.
caractère, *n. m.*, character.
caractériser, *v. a.*, to characterize.
carnage, *n. m.*, carnage.
carnaval (*pl.* 86 *c* 1), *n. m.*, carnival.
carte, *n. f.*, card.
cas, *n. m.*, case, event, situation.
case, *n. m.*, hut.
casse-tête (*pl.* 88 *c*), *n. m.*, tomahawk.
casser, *v. a.*, to break.
caste, *n. f.*, caste.
cathédrale, *n. f.*, cathedral.
cause, *n. f.*, cause, case, suit, *à . . . que*, *conj.*, because; *à . . . de*, *prep.*, because of, on account of.
causer *v. a.*, to cause; *v. i.*, to chat.
cavalerie, *n. f.*, cavalry
cavalier, *n. m.*, rider.
caverne, *n. f.*, cavern.
ce, *pr.* 62 *b* 2.
ce (*adj. forms* 99 *a*; *synt.* 185), **cette**, *adj.*, this, that.
ce (*form.* 99 *b*; *synt.* 186; *impers. subj. of être*, 132 *c*, 186 *b*), *pron.*, it, he, she, they, that.
ceci (*form.* 99 *b*, *synt.* 187), *pron.*, this.
céder (*conj.* 112 *d* 1), *v. a.*, to yield.
cédille, *n. f.*, cedilla.
ceindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *b*), *v. a.*, to gird on; to encircle.
cela (*form.* 99 *b*, *synt.* 187), *pron.*, that.
célèbre, *adj.*, famous, celebrated.
célébrer, *v. a.*, to celebrate.
celle, see *celui*.
celui (*form.* 99 *b* 2, *synt.* 188), **celle**, *pron.*, the one, he, she, that.
cendre, *n. f.*, ashes.
cendré, e, *adj.*, ash-color.
cens (*pr.* 75 *c* 1), *n. m.*, census.
censurer (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to censure.

cent (*pl.* **s**, 167 *b*), *adj.* & *n. m.*, one hundred
cependant, *adv.*, however.
cercueil, *n. m.*, coffin.
cérémonie, *n. f.*, ceremony.
cerf (*pr.* 76 *b*), *n. m.*, stag, deer.
cerf-volant (*pr.* 88 *a*), *n. m.*, kite.
certain (position 165), **e**, *adj.*, certain.
certainement, *adv.*, certainly.
certes, *adv.*, certainly.
certifier, *v. a.*, to certify.
cervoise, *n. f.*, a sort of beer.
ces (*pr.* 40 *d*, rem. 1), *adj.*, *pl.* of *ce*, *cette*, these, those.
César, see *Cæsar*.
cesse, *n. f.*, ceasing, cessation.
cesser (*w. inf.* 245; *w. neg.* 269 *a*), *v. i.*, to cease; = *faire cesser*, 209, rem. 2),
cet, see *ce*.
cette, see *ce*.
ceux, see *celui*.
ch, *pr.* 63.
chacal (*pl.* 86 *c* 1), *n. m.*, jackal.
chacun (199 *c*, 201), **e**, *pron.*, each, every one.
chagrin, *n. m.*, sorrow, grief; *adj.*, sad, gloomy.
chagriner, *v. a.*, to grieve, to make gloomy; **se —**, *w. inf.* 245.
chaîne, *n. f.*, chain.
chaleur, *n. f.*, warmth, heat.
chaloir (*conj.* 119, no. 18 *b*), *v. i.*, to care for.
chambre, *n. f.*, room.
chameau, *n. m.*, camel.
champ, *n. m.*, field; *sur-le-champ*, *adv.*, at once.
Chanaan (*pr.* 63 *a* 3), *p. n.*, Canaan.
chance, *n. f.*, chance.
chancelant, **e**, *adj.*, wavering, unsteady.
changer, *v. a.*, to change.
chant, *n. m.*, strain, song
chanter, *v. a.*, to sing.
chanteur, *n. m.*, singer.
chanteuse, *n. f.*, singer (female).
chantre (*form.* 85 *b*), *n. m.*, chanter.
chaos (*pr.* 63 *a* 2), *n. m.*, chaos.
chapeau, *n. m.*, hat.
chapelain, *n. m.*, chaplain.
chapelle, *n. f.*, chapel.
chapitre, *n m.*, chapter.
chaque (199 *a*, 201), *adj.*, each, every.
charge, *n. f.*, load, expense.
charger, *v. a.*, to load, charge; **se —** (*w. inf.*, 245), to occupy one's self, concern one's self.
chariot, *n. m.*, chariot.
Charles, *p. n. m.*
charmant, **e**, *adj.*, charming.
charme, *n. m.*, charm.
charmer, *v. a.*, to charm; *charmé*, *w. inf.* 249 *a*.
chasse, *n. f.*, chase.
chasser, *v. a.*, to drive away, send away.
chaste, *adj.*, chaste.
chat, *n. m.*, cat.
châtain-clair, *adj.*, light auburn.
château, *n. m.*, castle, country-seat.
châtier, *v. a.*, to chastise, correct.
chatte, *n. f.*, cat (female).
chat-tigre (*pl.* 88 *a*), *n. m.*, mountain-cat.
chaud, **e**, *adj.*, warm; *avoir —*, 154 *b* 4, rem.
chaux, *n. f.*, lime.
chavirer, *v. i.*, to upset.
chef, *n. m.*, chief, head, cook.
chef-d'œuvre (*pr.* 76 *b*; *pl.* 88 *b*), *n. m.*, masterpiece.
chemin, *n. m.* road.
cheminée, *n. f.*, chimney.
chêne, *n. m.*, oak.
chenil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1 *β*), *n. m.*, dog-kennel.
Chéops (*pr.* 63 *a* 3), *p. n.*, Cheops.
chèque, *n. m.*, check.
cher (*pr.* 76 *d* 1; position 165 *c*), **chère**, *adj.*, dear.
chercher (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to seek.
chérir, *v. a.*, to clerish.
chétif, **ve**, *adj.*, puny, thin.
cheval, *n. m.*, horse.
cheveu, *n. m.*, hair.
chèvre, *n. f.*, she-goat.
chez (274 *b*), *prep.*, at, with, at the home of.

chien, *n. m*, dog.
chien-loup (*pl.* 88 *a*), *n. m.*
chienne, *n. f.*, dog (female), bitch.
chloride, *n. m.*, chloride.
chœur (*pr.* 63 *a* 2), *n. m.*, choir.
choir (*conj.* 119, no. 20 *e*), *v. i.*, to fall.
choisir (*w. inf.* 245; *pass. w. pred. nom.* 134 *b* 2), *v. a.*, to choose.
choix, *n. m.*, choice.
chol-, **chor-**, *pr.* 63 *a* 2.
choral (*pl.* 86 *c* 1), **e**, *adj.*, choral.
chorus (*pr.* 75 *e* 2), *n. m.*, chorus.
chose, *n. f.*, thing.
chou (*pl.* 86 *b* 1), *n. m.*, cabbage.
chou-fleur (*pl.* 88 *a*), *n. m.*, cauliflower.
chrétien (*pr.* 71 *a* 2), *n. m.*, Christian.
Christ (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *α*), *p. n. m.*
chut (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), *interj.*, hush.
chute, *n. f.*, fall.
ci (*after demon.* 99, 185 *a*, 187, 189), *adv.*, here.
cicérone, *n. m.*, cicerone.
ci-contre, *adv.*, opposite.
Cid (*pr.* 75 *a*), *p. n. m.*
ciel (*pl.* 86 *d* 1), *n. m.*, sky, heaven.
cigale, *n. f.*, grasshopper.
cigogne, *n. f.*, stork.
ci-inclus (*agree.* 162 *a* 5), *adj.*, herein inclosed.
ci-joint (*agree.* 162 *a* 5), *adj.*, added.
cil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1), *n. m.*, eyelash.
cime, *n. f.*, top, summit.
Cinna, *p. n. m.*
cinq (*pr.* 77 *a*), *adj.*, five.
cinquante, *adj.*, fifty.
cinquième (*form.* 96 *a*), *adj.*, fifth.
circoncire (*conj.* 119, no. 26 *a*), *v. a.*, to encircle.
circonscrire (*conj.* 119, no. 25), *v. a.*, to circumscribe.
circonspect (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *β*), **e**, *adj.*, cautious, circumspect.
circonstance, *n. f.*, circumstance.
circonvenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *b*), *v. a.*, to circumvent.
circuler, *v. i.*, to circulate.
cire, *n. f.*, wax.
cirque, *n. m.*, circus.
citer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to cite, to quote.
citoyen, *n. m.*, citizen.
civil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1), **e**, *adj.*, civil.
civiliser, *v. a.*, to civilize.
clair, **e**, *adj.*, clear, bright.
clairement, *adv.*, clearly.
clarté, *n. f.*, brightness.
classe, *n. f.*, class.
classique, *adj.*, classic
Claude, *p. n. m.*
clause, *n. f.*, clause.
clef (*pr.* 76 *b*), *n. f.*, key.
clerc (*pr.* 74, 76 *a* 2), *n. m.*, clerk.
clergé, *n. m.*, clergy.
climat, *n. m.*, climate.
cloître, *n. m.*, cloister.
clore (*conj.* 119, no. 43 *a*), *v. i.*, to close.
clou, *n. m.*, nail.
Clovis, *p. n. m.*
club (*pr.* 75 *a*), *n. m.*, club.
Clugny (*pr.* 73 *b*), *p. n.*
cobalt (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *γ*), *n. m.*, cobalt.
codicille (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 *α*), *n. m.*, codicil.
cœur, *n. m.*, heart; *de bon* —, heartily.
cognat (*pr.* 65 *a* 2), *n. m.*, kinsman (on the mother's side).
cognation (65 *a* 2), *n. f.* relationship.
cognition (*pr.* 65 *a* 2), *n. f.*, cognition.
coi (*fem.* 90 *f.*), **te**, *adj.*, quiet.
colère, *n. f.*, anger.
collège, *m.*, college.
Colomba, *p. n. f.*
colonel, *n. m.*, colonel.
colonial, **e**, *adj.*, colonial.
combat, *n. m.*, combat, fight.
combattre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *b*), *v. a.*, to combat, fight.
combe, *n. f.*, valley.
combien, *adv.*, how much, how many.
combler, *v. a.*, to heap up, fill up.
comédie, *n. f.*, comedy.
commandement, *n. m.*, command, order.
commander (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. i.*, to command, order.

comme, *adv.*, as; —*que*, *w. subj.* 235 *d* 1; —*si*, 145 *c* 1.
commencer (*w. inf.* 247, 252 *c*), *v. a.*, to begin.
comment, *adv.*, how.
commerce, *n. m.*, commerce trade.
commettre (*conj.* 119, no. 34), *v. a.*, to commit.
commode, *adj.*, convenient, comfortable.
commodément (*acc.* 120 *c* 1), *adv.*, conveniently, comfortably.
commun, e, *adj.*, common.
communément (*acc.* 120 *c* 1), *adv.*, commonly.
compagne, *n. f.*, companion.
compagnie, *n. f.*, company, band.
compagnon, *n. m.*, companion.
comparaison, *n. f.*, comparison.
comparaître (*conj.* 119, no. 32 *a*), *v. i.*, to appear.
comparoir (*conj.* 119, no. 32 *a*), *v. i.*, to appear (in a court of justice).
Compiégne (*pr.* 73 *b*), *p. n.*
complaire (*conj.* 119, no. 24 *b*, *w. inf.*, 246), *v. i.*, to please, humor; **se** —, to delight in.
complaisance, *n. f.*, kindness, complacency.
complet (*fem.* 90 *c* 1 *α*), **ète**, *adj.*, complete.
composer, *v. a.*, to compose.
comprendre (*conj.* 119, no. 36 *a*; *w. subj.* 234 *c* 1), *v. a.*, to comprehend, understand.
compromettre (*conj.* 119, no. 34), *v. a.*, to compromise; **se** —, to compromise one's self.
comptant, *n. m.*, ready money, cash; *adv.*, in cash.
compte, *n. m.*, account; *rendre* —, 154 *b* 4.
compter (*pr.* 73 *c*, *w. inf.* 244, *a* 4), *v. a.*, to count.
comte, *n. m.*, count, earl.
concert, *n. m.*, concert.
concevoir (*conj.* 119, no. 13 *a*, *w. subj.* 234 *c* 1), *v. a.*, to apprehend, imagine.
concierge, *n. m.* or *f.*, porter, doorkeeper.
concilier, *v. a.*, to reconcile, conciliate.
conclure (*conj.* 119, no. 23 *b*; *w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. i.*, to conclude, infer.
concorde, *n. f.*, concord, agreement.
concourir (*conj.* 119, no. 7; *w. inf.* 246), *v. i.*, to concur.
concret (*fem.* 90 *c* 1 *α*), **ète**, *adj.*, concrete.
condamner (*pr.* 73 *a*; *w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to condemn.
condescendre (*conj.* 119, no. 35; *w. inf.* 246), *v. i.*, to condescend.
condition, *n. f.*, condition; *à* —*que*, cf. **à**.
conduire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *a*), *v. a.*, to conduct, lead; **se** —, to behave.
conduite, *n. f.*, conduct, guidance.
confesser (*w. inf.* 244, *v. a.*, to confess.
confession, *n. f.*, confession.
confier, *v. a.*, to confide, entrust; **se** —, to trust in.
confire (*conj.* 119, no. 26 *b*), *v. a.*, to preserve, pickle.
confisquer, *v. a.*, to confiscate.
confondre (*conj.* 119, no. 35), *v. a.*, to confound, confuse.
conforme, *adj.*, conformable.
conformément, (*acc.* 120 *c* 1), *adv.*, conformably.
confus, e, *adj.*, mixed, confused.
confusément (*acc.* 120 *c* 1), *adv.*, confusedly.
congé, *n. m.*, leave, discharge.
conjoindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *c*), *v. a.*, to join.
conjuguer, *v. a.*, to conjugate.
conjurer (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to implore, conjure.
connaissance, *n. f.*, knowledge, acquaintance.
connaître (*conj.* 119, no. 32 *b*; *w. subj.* 234 *c* 1), *v. a.*, to know, be acquainted with.

conquérant, *n. m.*, conqueror; *adj.*, conquering.
conquérir (*conj.* 119, no. 11 *b*), *v. a.*, to conquer.
conquête, *n. f.*, conquest.
conscience, *n. f.*, conscience, consciousness.
conseil, *n. m.*, counsel, advice, council.
conseiller (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to advise.
consentir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *a*; *w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 247), *v. i.*, to consent.
conséquence, *n. f.*, consequence.
conservateur, *n. m.*, preserver, conservative.
conserver, *v. a.*, to preserve, keep.
considération, *n. f.*, consideration, esteem.
considérer (*w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to consider, to view.
consister (*w. inf.* 246), *v. i.*, to be composed of, to consist in.
consoler (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to console.
conspirer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.* & *i.*, to conspire, to concur.
constamment, *adv.*, constantly, perseveringly.
constant, e, *adj.*, constant.
consternation, *n. f.*, consternation.
constitution, *n. f.*, constitution.
construire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *b*), *v. a.*, to construct, build.
consulter, *v. a.*, to consult.
consumer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to consume.
contact (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *β*), *n. m.*, contact.
ecute, *n. m.*, tale, story.
contempler, *v. a.*, to contemplate, view.
contenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *a*), *v. a.*, to contain, hold.
content (*w. inf.* 249 *a*), **e**, *adj.*, contented, satisfied, pleased.
contenter, *v. a.*, to content, satisfy; **se** — (*w. inf.* 245), to be contented.
conter, *v. a.*, to tell, relate.
contester, *v. a.*, to contest, dispute.
continuel, le, *adj.*, continual.
continuer (*w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to continue.
continûment (*acc.* 120 *c* 2), *adv.*, continuously.
contracter, *v. a.*, to contract, to bargain.
contraindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *a*; *w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to constrain, force.
contre, *prep.*, against.
contredire (*conj.* 119, no. 26 *a*), *v. a.*, to contradict.
contrée, *n. f.*, country, region.
contrefaire (*conj.* 119, no. 27 *a*), *v. a.*, to counterfeit, mimic.
contrevenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *b*), *v. i.*, to infringe, violate.
contribuer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. i.*, to contribute.
convaincre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *d*; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to convince, convict.
convenable, *adj.*, suitable, proper.
convenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *b*; *w. inf.* 245), *v. i.*, to agree, suit, be suitable.
convier (*w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to invite, urge.
convulsion, *n. f.*, convulsion
copie, *n. f.*, copy.
coq (*pr.* 75 *b*), *n. m.*, cock.
Coquelin, *p. n. m.*
coquet (*fem.* 90 *c* 1), **te**, *n. m.* or *f.*, flirt, coquette; *adj.*, coquettish.
coquin, *n. m.*, knave, scoundrel; *adj.*, idle, debauched.
cor, *n. m.*, horn.
corail (*pl.* 86 *c* 2), *n. m.*, coral.
corbeau, *n. m.*, crow, raven
corde, *n. f.*, cord, rope.
corne, *n. f.*, horn.
Corneille (*pl.* 87 *a*), *p. n. m.*; *n. f.*, rook.
corps, *n. m.*, body, company.
correct, e, *adj.*, correct.
correspondre (*conj.* 119, no. 35), *v. i.*, to correspond.

corriger (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to correct.
corrompre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *c*), *v. a.*, to corrupt, spoil.
corsaire, *n. m.*, privateer, corsair.
Corse, *n. m.* or *f.*; *adj.*, Corsican.
Cortez (*pr.* 75 *a* 1), *p. n. m.*
côte, *n. f.*, rib, hill, shore.
côté, *n. m.*, side; *du — de*, 272 *b* 1 *β*; *à — de*, beside, next door to.
coucher (*conj.* 115), *v. a.*, to put to bed; **se —**, to go to bed.
coucher, *n. m.*, setting.
coudre (*conj.* 119, no. 39), *v. a.*, to sew.
couleur, *n. f.*, color.
couleuvre, *n. f.*, adder.
couler, *v. a.*, to cast; *i.*, to flow, run.
coup, *n. m.*, blow, stroke, peal; *tout à —*, *tout d'un —*, at once.
coupable, *adj.*, guilty, culpable.
couper, *v. a.*, to cut.
couple, *n. m.* or *f.*, couple, pair.
cour, *n. f.*, court.
courage, *n. m.*, courage.
couramment, *adv.*, readily, fluently.
courant, *n. m.*, current; *adj.*, current, present.
courir (*conj.* 119, no. 7; *w. inf.* 244), *v. i.*, to run.
couronne, *n. f.*, crown.
couronner, *v. a.*, to crown.
courrai (*pr.* 61 *c*), *fut.* of *courir*.
courre, see *courir*.
coursier, *n. m.*, steed, charger.
court, e, *adj.*, short.
courtisan, *n. m.*, courtier.
cousin, *n. m.*, cousin.
cousine, *n. f.*, cousin (female).
couteau, *n. m.*, knife.
coûter, *v. i.*, to cost.
coutil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1 *β*), *n. m.*, ticking.
couvent, *n. m.*, convent.
couvert, *n. m.*, cover.
couvrir (*conj.* 119, no. 8 *b*), *v. a.*, to cover.
craindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *a*; *w. subj* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to fear.
craquer, *v. i.*, to creak, crack.
créance, *n. f.*, credit.
créer (*pass. w. pred. nom.* 134 *b* 2), *v. a.*, to create.
creuser, *v. a.*, to dig, hollow.
creux, se, *adj.*, hollow; *n. m.*, hole, cavity.
cri, *n. m.*, cry.
cric (*pr.* 76 *a* 2), *n. m.*, hand-screw.
crier (*w. inf.* 245), *v. i.*, to cry, cry out.
crime, *n. m.*, crime, sin.
criminel (*fem.* 90 *c* 1), **le**, *adj.*, criminal, guilty.
critique, *n. m.*, critic; *n. f.*, criticism; *adj.*, critical.
croassement, *n. m.*, croak, croaking.
croire (*conj.* 119, no. 30; *w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to believe.
croisé, *n. m.*, crusader; *adj.*, crossed, cross.
croiser, *v. a.*, to cross.
croître (*conj.* 119, no. 31), *v. i.*, to grow, increase.
croix, *n. f.*, cross.
crouler, *v. i.*, to crumble, sink.
cruauté, *n. f.*, cruelty.
cruel (*fem.* 90 *c* 1; *position* 165), **le**, *adj.*, cruel, pitiless.
crûment (*acc.* 120 *c* 2), *adv.*, bluntly, crudely.
cueillir (*conj.* 119, no. 5), *v. a.*, to gather, cull.
cuiller (*pr.* 76 *d* 2), *n. f.*, spoon.
cuillerée, *n. f.*, spoonful.
cuire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *c*), *v. a.*, to cook.
cuisine, *n. f.*, cookery, kitchen.
cuisinière, *n. f.*, cook.
cul (*pr.* 76 *c*), *n. m.*, breech, bottom; **— -de-sac**, blind alley.
culbute, *n. f.*, tumble, somerset.
cultiver, *v. a.*, to cultivate; to improve.
curaçao (*pr.* 58 *a*), *n. m.*, curaçao.
curé, *n. m.*, curate, rector, parish priest.

cure-dent, *n. m.*, toothpick.
curieux (*w. inf.* 249 *a*, *b*), **se**, *adj.*, curious, inquisitive.
cygne, *n. m.*, swan.
czar (*pr.* 62 *c*), *n. m.*, czar.

d, *pr.* 60, 75 *a*.
daigner (*w. inf.* 244), *v. i.*, to deign, condescend.
dame, *n. f.*, lady.
damner (*pr.* 39 *b* 5, 54 *a* 2, 75 *a*), *v. a.*, to damn.
danger, *n. m.*, danger.
dangereux, **se**, *adj.*, dangerous.
dans (276 *a*), *prep.*, in, into, within.
danser, *v. i.*, to dance.
Dante (*art.* 152 *b* 5), *p. n. m.*
davantage, *adv.*, more.
David (*pr.* 75 *a*), *p. n. m.*
de (272; of agency, 217 *b*; repeated, 281), *prep.*, of, from, with, etc.; — *crainte*, *façon*, *manière*, *peur*, *sorte*, etc., *que*, 144 *c*, 234 *b* 1, 235 *b*; — *façon*, *manière à*, *w. inf.* 251.
débarquer, *v. a.*, to disembark.
débattre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *b*), *v. a.*, to debate, discuss; **se** —, to struggle.
débauche, *n. f.*, debauchery, debauch.
débuter, *v. i.*, to begin.
décéder, *v. i.*, to die, expire.
déceler (*conj.* 112 *c* 2), *v. a.*, to disclose, reveal,
décembre, *n. m.*, December.
décemvir (*pr.* 54 *b* 3), *n. m.*, decemvir.
décence, *n. f.*, decency, propriety.
décevoir (*conj.* 119, no. 13 *a*), *v. a.*, to deceive.
décharger, *v. a.*, to unload, discharge.
déchéant (**déchoir**), **e**, *adj.*, decaying.
déchirer, *v. a.*, to tear, rend.
déchoir (*conj.* 119, no. 20 *d*), *v. i.*, to decay, decline.
décider (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1, cf. 2; *w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to cause to decide; *v. i.*, to decide.
déclarer (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 244; *pass. w. pred. nom.* 154 *b* 2), *v. a.*, to declare, proclaim, make known.
déclore (*conj.* 119, no. 43 *a*), *v. a.*, to unclose, to throw open.
déconfire (*conj.* 119, no. 26 *b*), *v. a.*, to discomfit, rout.
déconstruire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *b*), *v. a.*, to take to pieces, demolish.
découdre (*conj.* 119, no. 39 *a*), *v. a.*, to unsew, rip up.
décourager (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to discourage.
découvrir (*conj.* 119, no. 8 *b*), *v. a.*, to discover, uncover.
décréter (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1, cf. 2), *v. a.*, to decree.
décrire (*conj.* 119, no. 25), *v. a.*, to describe.
décroire (*conj.* 119, no. 30), *v. a.*, to disbelieve, discredit.
décroître (*conj.* 119, no. 31), *v. i.*, to decrease.
dédaigner (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to disdain, scorn.
dédicace, *n. f.*, dedication, inscription.
dédire (*conj.* 119, no. 26 *a*), *v. a.*, to gainsay, to retract.
déduire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *a*), *v. a.*, to deduct, subtract.
défaillir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *a*), *v. i.*, to fail, swoon, grow weak.
défaire (*conj.* 119, no. 27 *a*), *v. a.*, to undo, defeat; **se** — (*w. inf.* 245), to get rid of.
défendre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *a*; *w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to defend, to forbid; **se** —, to defend one's self.
défi, *n. m.*, defiance, challenge.
défiance, *n. f.*, mistrust.
déficit (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), *n. m.*, deficit.
défier (*w. inf.* 247 *d* 1), *v. a.*, to defy, challenge; **se** —, to defy.
déganter, *v. a.*, to pull off gloves; **se** —, to pull off one's gloves.
dégeler, *v. a.* or *i.*, to thaw.

dégoûter (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to disgust; **se** —, to take a dislike.
déguiser, *v. a.*, to disguise, hide.
déjà, *adv.*, already.
déjeuner, *v. i.*, to breakfast.
déjeuner, *n. m.*, breakfast.
déjoindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *c*), *v. a.*, to disjoin; **se** —, to become disjoined.
délaissé, *part.*, abandoned.
Delauney, *p. n.*
délibérer (*w. inf.* 245 *d*), *v. i.*, to deliberate, resolve.
délicat, e, *adj.*, delicate, nice.
délice (*gen.* 84 *c* 1), *n. m.* (*sg.*), or *f.* (*pl.*) delight.
délicieux, se, *adj.*, delightful.
délié, e, *adj.*, loose, slender.
Délille (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 *α*), *p. n.*
délivrer, *v. a.*, to deliver, rid of.
demain, *adv.*, to-morrow; *n. m.*, to-morrow.
demander (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 247 *d* 2), *v. a.*, to ask, beg.
demanderesse, *n. f.*, plaintiff, *f.* of *demandeur*.
demandeur, *n. m.*, plaintiff, demandor.
démentir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *a*), *v. a.*, to give the lie to, deny; **se** —, to contradict one's self.
démettre (*conj.* 119, no. 34), *v. a.*, to put out of joint, dislocate; **se** —, to resign, be put out of joint.
demeure, *n. f.*, dwelling.
demeurer (*w. inf.* 246; *w. pred. nom.* 134 *b* 2), *v. i.*, to dwell, live.
demi (*agree.* 162 *a* 2), **e**, *adj.*, half.
demi-dieu, *n. m.*, demi-god.
demi heure, *n. f.*, half-hour.
démouvoir (*conj.* 119, no. 15 *a*), *v. a.*, to move, deter.
dent, *n. f.*, tooth; *être sur les* —, to be tired out.
dentiste, *n. m.*, dentist.
départir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *a*), *v. a.*, to distribute, divide.
dépayser, *v. a.*, to send from home, to remove; **se** —, to go abroad.
dépêcher, *v. a.*, to despatch; **se** — (*w. inf.* 245 *d*), to make haste.
dépeindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *b*), *v. a.*, to depict, describe.
dépendre (*conj.* 119, no. 35), *v. i.*, to depend.
dépenser, *v. a.*, to expend, spend.
dépit, *n. m.*, spite, vexation.
déplaire (*conj.* 119, no. 24 *b*), *v. i.*, to displease; **se** —, to dislike.
déplorer (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1), *v. a.*, to deplore.
déposer (*w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to depose, lay down.
dépourvoir (*conj.* 119, no. 20 *c*), *v. a.*, to leave unprovided or destitute.
dépourvu, e, *adj.*, destitute.
déprendre (*conj.* 119, no. 36 *a*), *v. a.*, to loosen, part.
depuis, *adv.*, since.
que (*hist.* 144 *c* 1; *w. ne*, 269 *c* 3), *conj.*, since.
député, *n. m.*, deputy.
déraciner, *v. a.*, to root up.
dernier, ère, *adj.*, last.
dérober, *v. a.*, to rob; **se** —, to steal away, escape.
derrière (275 *b* 1), *prep.*, behind.
des (contraction of *de les*, 81 *a* 2; *pr.* 40 *d*, rem. 1), of the, from the.
dès, *prep.*, from, since.
que (*hist.* 144 *c*), *conj.*, since.
désaccoutumer (*w. inf.* 245 *d*), *v. a.*, to disaccustom, disinure.
désapprendre (*conj.* 119, no. 36 *a*; *w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to unlearn.
descendre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *a*; *w. inf.* 244), *v. i.*, descend, stay; = **faire** —, 209, rem. 2.
désespérer (*w. inf.* 245), *v. i.*, to despair; *v. a.*, to drive to despair.
désespoir, *n. m.*, despair.
déshabiller (**se**), *v. r.*, to undress.
déshabituer (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to disaccustom; **se** —, to leave off.

déshonneur (*gen.* 82 *b* 1), *n. m.*, dishonor.
désir, *n. m.*, desire, longing.
désirer (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1 ; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to wish, long for.
désireux (*w. inf.* 249 *a*), **se**, *adj.*, anxious, desirous.
désobéissance, *n. f.*, disobedience.
désoler, *v. a.*, to desolate, lay waste; **se** — (*w. inf.* 245), to grieve.
dessein, *n. m.*, design, intention.
dessert, *n. m.*, dessert.
desservir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *a*), *v. a.*, to take away, to clear the table.
dessiller, *v. a.*, to open.
dessous (*pr.* 40 *c* 3), *n. m.*, lower part; **au-** — **de** (279 *b* 1), *prep.*, below.
dessus (*pr.* 40 *c* 3), *n. m.*, the upper part; **au-** — **de** (279 *a* 1), *prep.*, above.
destin, *n. m.*, destiny, fate.
destiné, *part.*, destined.
destinée, *n. f.*, destiny.
destiner (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to destine.
détail, *n. m.*, detail.
détenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *a*), *v. a.*, to detain; to withhold.
déterminer (*w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to determine, decide.
détester (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to detest.
détourner (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to turn away, divert.
détresse, *n. f.*, distress, grief.
détruire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *b*), *v. a.*, to destroy.
dette, *n. f.*, debt.
deuil, *n. m.*, grief, mourning.
deux, *adj.*, two.
deuxième (*pr.* 77 *b*, *synt.* 167), *adj.*, second.
devant (275 *b*), *prep.*, before, in front of.
développement, *n. m.*, development.
développer, *v. a.*, to open, develop, expand.
dévenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *b*; *w. pred. nom.* 134 *b* 2), *v. i.*, to become.
dévêtir (*conj.* 119, no. 6), *v. a.*, to undress, divest; **se** —, to undress, strip.
deviner (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1), *v. a.*, to guess, divine, foretell.
devise, *n. f.*, emblem, motto.
dévoiler, *v. a.*, to unveil, discover.
devoir (*conj.* 119, no. 13 *b*; as *quasi-auxil.* 203 *b* 3; *cond. of* 229 *a* 2; *w. inf.* 244 *d* 1), *v. a.*, to owe.
devoir, *n. m.*, duty, task.
dévorer, *v. a.*, to devour.
dévouer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to devote, dedicate.
diable, *n. m.*, devil.
diamant, *n. m.*, diamond.
dictée, *n. f.*, dictation.
dictionnaire, *n. m.*, dictionary.
Dieu, *n. m.*, God.
différence, *n. f.*, difference.
différent, **e**, *adj.*, different.
différentier (*pr.* 71 *a* 3), *v. a.*, to differentiate.
différer, *v. i.*, to differ.
différer (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to defer, delay.
difficile (*w. inf.* 249 *b*), *adj.*, difficult, particular.
difficilement, *adv.*, with difficulty.
difforme, *adj.*, deformed, ugly.
diffus, **e**, *adj.*, diffuse, verbose.
diffusément (*acc.* 120 *c* 1), *adv.*, diffusely.
digne (*w. inf.* 249 *a*), *adj.*, worthy.
dignement, *adv.*, worthily.
dignité, *n. f.*, dignity.
digue, *n. f.*, dike, dam.
diligemment, *adv.*, diligently.
diligent, **e**, *adj.*, diligent.
dimanche, *n. m.*, Sunday.
dinde, *n. f.*, turkey-hen.
dindon, *n. m.*, turkey-cock.
dîner, *v. i.*, to dine.
dîner, *n m.*, dinner.
dire (*conj.* 119, no. 26; *w. subj.* 234 *b* 1, *c* 1; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to say, tell.

direct, e, *adj.*, direct, straight.
diriger, *v. a.*, to direct, guide.
discontinuer (*w. inf.* 245), *v. i.*, to cease, discontinue.
disconvenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10*b*; with infin. 245), *v. i.*, to deny, disown.
discourir (*conj.* 119, no. 7), *v. i.*, to discourse.
discours, *n. m.*, discourse, speech.
discret (*fem.* 90*c* 1 α), **-ète,** *adj.*, discreet, prudent.
disculper (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to exculpate, clear.
discussion, *n. f.*, discussion, debate.
disgrâce, *n. f.*, disgrace, disfavor, affliction.
disjoindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37*c*), *v. a.*, to disjoin.
disparaître (*conj.* 119, no. 32*a*) *v. i.*, to vanish, disappear.
dispenser (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to dispense with, exempt.
disposé (*w. inf.* 249 *b*), *part.*, disposed.
disposer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to dispose, prepare; **se —,** to be disposed.
disposition, *n. f.*, disposition, arrangement.
dissoudre (*conj.* 119, no. 40*b*), *v. a.*, to dissolve, break; **se —,** to dissolve.
dissous (*fem.* 90*f*), **-te,** p. p. of *dissoudre*.
dissuader (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to dissuade.
distance, *n. f.*, distance.
distiller (*pr.* 67*a* 1 α), *v. i.*, to drop, distil.
distinguer, *v. a.*, to discern, distinguish.
distraire (*conj.* 119, no. 28*a*), *v. a.*, to separate, divert.
district (*pr.* 75*d* 2 β), *n. m.*, district.
dit, see *dire*.
divertir, *v. a.*, to divert, amuse; **se —** (*w. inf.* 246), to take pleasure.
divin, e, *adj.*, divine.
dix (*pr.* 59*a* 3, 77*a*), *adj.*, ten.
dixaine (*pr.* 77*b*), *n. f.*, ten.
dix-huit (*pr.* 77 *a*, *b*), *adj.*, eighteen.
dix-huitième, *adj.*, eighteenth.
dixième (*pr.* 77*b*), *adj.*, tenth.
dix-neuf (*pr.* 77 *a*, *b*), *adj.*, nineteen.
dix-sept (*pr.* 77 *a*), *adj.*, seventeen.
dix-septième, *adj.*, seventeenth.
docteur, *n. m.*, doctor.
doigt, *n. m.*, finger.
domestique, *n. m.* or *f.*, servant.
dominer, *v. i.* or *a.*, to rule, govern, dominate.
dommage, *n. m.*, damage, pity; hurt, harm.
dompter (*pr.* 73*c*), *v. a.*, to tame.
don, *n. m.*, gift, present.
don, *n. m.*, don.
donc (*pr.* 76*a* 1), *conj.*, therefore, then.
donner (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to give.
dont (100*c*, 146, 193 *a*), *pron.*, whose, of which, of whom.
dormir (*conj.* 119, no. 3*a*), *v. i.*, to sleep.
dos, *n. m.*, back.
Dosia, *p. n. f.*
dot, *n. f.*, marriage-portion, dowry.
d'où (145 *b*, 146, 193 *b*), *adv.*, whence, from which.
douaire, *n. m.*, dower, marriage-settlement.
douane, *n. f.*, custom-house, custom-duty.
double, *adj.* double.
doucement, *adv.*, softly, gently.
douceur, *n. f.* sweetness, softness, kindness.
douer, *v. a.*, to endow.
douleur, *n. f.*, pain, grief.
doute, *n. m.*, doubt.
douter (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to doubt.
douteux, se, *adj.*, doubtful, ambiguous.
doux (*fem.* 90*b* 1), **-ce,** *adj.*, sweet, soft, gentle.
douze, *adj.*, twelve.

drachme (*pr.* 63 *a* 4), *n. f.*, dram, drachma.
dresser, *v. a.*, to draw up, to erect, raise; **se** —, to stand erect.
droit, *n. m.*, right, law; **e**, *adj.*, straight, direct.
du (contraction for *de le*, 81 *a*), of the, from the.
duc, *n. m.*, duke.
duchesse, *n. f.*, duchess.
duel, *n. m.*, duel.
dupe (*gen.* 82, rem.), *n. f.*, dupe, gull.
dur, **e**, *adj.*, hard, tough, unfeeling; *adv.*, firmly.
durée, *n. f.*, duration.
durer, *v. i.*, to last, remain.

e (ê, è, é), elision 37 *a*; *pr.* 40, 41; silent 58 *b*.
-eau, *pr.* 50 *a* 1.
eau, *n. f.*, water.
ebattre (**s'**) (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *b*), *v. r.*, to sport.
ébouillir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *c*), *v. i.*, to boil down.
ébranler, *v. a.*, to shake, move.
échafauder, *v. i.*, to scaffold; *v. a.*, to pillory.
échapper, *v. i.*, to escape; *v. a.*, to escape; **s'**— (*w. inf.* 246), to get away.
échecs (*pr.* 76 *a* 2), *n. m. pl.*, chess, chessmen.
écho (*pr.* 63 *a* 2), *n. m.*, echo.
échoir (*conj.* 119, no. 20 *e*), *v. i.*, to expire, to fall out,
éclairer, *v. a.*, to light; **s'**—, to become enlightened.
éclat, *n. m.*, lustre, pomp, brightness, shiver.
éclater (*w. inf.* 245 *d*), *v. i.*, to break to pieces, shiver, burst forth.
éclore (*conj.* 119, no. 43 *a*), *v. i.*, to hatch, open.
école, *n. f.*, school.
éconduire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *a*), *v. a.*, to refuse, show out.
écouler, *v. a.*, to pour away; **s'**—, to flow away.
écouter (*transitive* 209 *c* 1 *β*; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to listen to; **s'**—, to like to hear one's self.
écraser, *v. a.*, to crush.
écrevisse, *n. f.*, crawfish.
écrier (**s'**) (216 *c*), *v. r.*, to cry out, exclaim.
écrire (*conj.* 119, no. 25; *w. inf.* 244 *a* 4), *v. a.*, to write.
écriture, *n. f.*, writing.
écrouelles, *n. f. pl.*, king's evil, scrofula.
écrouler (**s'**) (216 *c*), *v. r.*, to fall in, fall to pieces.
écuyer, *n. m.*, squire, equerry, rider.
édifice, *n. m.*, edifice, building.
édifier, *v. a.*, to build, edify; **s'**—, *w. inf.*, 245 *d*.
Édouard, *p. n. m.*, Edward.
éducation, *n. f.*, education.
effacer, *v. a.*, to efface, blot out; **s'**—, to become effaced.
effet, *n. m.*, effect; *en effet*, indeed, in reality.
efforcer (**s'**) (*w. inf.* 247), *v. r.*, to strive, to exert one's self.
effort, *n. m.*, effort, endeavor.
effrayer, *v. a.*, to frighten; **s'**— (*w. inf.* 245), to be frightened.
effroi, *n. m.*, fright, terror.
égal, **e**, *adj.*, equal, same.
égard, *n. m.*, regard, respect.
-ège, *masc. ending*, 83 *b* 1.
église, *n. f.*, church.
égorger, *v. a.*, to cut the throat, kill.
égrener, *v. a.*, to shell, to pick from the bunch.
Égyptien (*pr.* 71 *a* 2), *n. m.*, Egyptian; *adj.*, **ne**, Egyptian.
ei (**eî**), *pr.*, 48.
eim, *pr.*, 53, 55.
ein, *pr.*, 53, 55.
électeur, *n. m.*, elector.
éléphant, *n. m.*, elephant.
élévation, *n. f.*, elevation, raising.
élève, *n. m.* or *f.*, pupil, scholar.
élevé, **e**, *adj.*, exalted.
élever, *v. a.*, to raise, bring up, educate.
élire (*conj.* 119, no. 24; *pass. w. pred. nom.* 134 *b* 2), *v. a.*, to elect, choose.

elle (**il**), *pron. f.*, she, it (*tonic form.* **elle**, 180).
elle-même (*form.* 180*g*), *pron.*, herself, itself.
éloigner, *v. a.*, to remove, put away; **s'**—, to go away.
éloquence, *n. f.*, eloquence.
em, *pr.*, 53, 54.
émail (*pl.* 86 *c* 2), *n. m.*, enamel.
embarquer, *v. a.*, to embark, ship, take on board; **s'**—, to embark.
embarrasser, *v. a.*, to embarrass; **s'**—, to be embarrassed.
emboire (*conj.* 119, no. 29 *a*), *v. a.*, to imbibe.
embrasser, *v. a.*, to embrace, kiss.
émerveiller, *v. a.*, to astonish; **s'**— (*w. inf.* 245), to be astonished.
émettre (*conj.* 119, no. 34), *v. a.*, to issue, give out, put in circulation.
émeute, *n. f.*, riot, disturbance.
émigrer, *v. i.*, to emigrate.
emmener (*pr.* 54 *b* 1), *v. a.*, to carry away, lead away.
emotion, *n. f.*, emotion.
émotionner, *v. a.*, to cause emotion.
émoudre (*conj.* 119, no. 38 *a*), *v. a.*, to whet, grind.
émouvoir (*conj.* 119, no. 15 *a*), *v. a.*, to move, stir up; **s'**— (*w. inf.* 246), to be moved.
emparer (**s'**) (216 *c*), *v. r.*, to seize, take possession.
empêchement, *n. m.*, hindrance, obstacle.
empêcher (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to oppose, prevent; **s'**—, to refrain from.
empire, *n. m.*, empire, sway.
emplir (*form.* 113, rem. 2), *v. a.*, to fill.
emploi, *n. m.*, employ, post.
employer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to employ, use; **s'**—, to exert one's self.
empoisonner, *v. a.*, to poison, corrupt.
emporter, *v. a.*, to carry away; **s'**—, to fly into a passion, to inveigh.
empreindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *b*), *v. a.*, to imprint, stamp.
empresser (**s'**) (*w. inf.* 247), *v. r.*, to be eager.
emprunter, *v. a.*, to borrow.
en, *pr.* 53, 54.
en (276 *b*, repeated 281), *prep.*, in, into, within; — *cas que*, — *attendant que*, 144 *c* 2, 235 *a*, *c*.
en (97 *b*, 175, 178 *b*), *pron.*, of it, of them, some, any, of him, of it, of her; *adv.*, from there.
enchanter (*p. p. w. inf.* 249 *a*), *v. a.*, to enchant, bewitch.
enclin (*w. inf.* 249 *b*), **e**, *adj.*, inclined, addicted.
enclore (*conj.* 119, no. 43 *a*), *v. a.*, to enclose.
encombrer, *v. a.*, to obstruct, incumber.
encore (or **encor**, *poet.*), *adv.*, yet, still, again, once more.
que (*hist.* 144 *e*; *w. subj.* 235 *d*), *conj.*, though, although.
encourager (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to encourage.
encourir (*conj.* 119, no. 7), *v. a.*, to incur.
encre, *n. f.*, ink.
endenter, *v. a.*, to indent, cog.
endormir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *a*), *v. a.*, to lull asleep; **s'**—, to fall asleep.
endosser (*pr.* 43 *b* 2 *δ*), *v. a.*, to put on, put on the back.
endroit, *n. m.*, place, part.
enduire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *a*), *v. a.*, to do over, lay over, coat.
endureir, *v. a.*, to harden, inure; **s'**— (*w. inf.* 246), to grow hard.
enfant, *n. m.* or *f.*, child, infant.
enfer (*pr.* 76 *d* 2), *n. m.*, hell.
enfermer, *v. a.*, to shut, shut in.
enfin, *adv.*, in fine, finally, in short, at last.
enflammer, *v. a.*, to set on fire, to fire; **s'**—, to take fire.
enfler, *v. a.*, to swell, puff up; **s'**—, to swell.

enfreindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *b*), *v. a.*, to infringe, violate.
enfuir (s') (*conj.* 119, no. 4), *v. r.*, to run away, take flight.
engager, *v. a.*, to pawn, pledge, engage; **s'—** (*w. inf.* 247), to promise.
enhardir (*w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to embolden; **s'—**, to grow bold.
enivrer (*pr.* 54 *b* 1), *v. a.*, to inebriate, intoxicate; **s'—**, to be elated.
enjoindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *c*; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to enjoin, charge.
enjoûment, *n. m.*, playfulness, sprightliness.
enlever, *v. a.*, to lift, carry off; **s'—**, to rise.
ennoblir (*pr.* 54 *b* 1), *v. a.*, to ennoble.
ennui (*pr.* 54 *b* 1), *n. m.*, weariness, tediousness.
ennuyer, *v. a.*, to tire; **s'—** (*w. inf.* 247), to be wearied.
enorgueillir (*pr.* 54 *b* 1), *v. a.*, to make proud; **s'—** (*w. inf.* 245), to grow proud.
énormément (*acc.* 120 *c* 1), *adv.*, enormously.
enquérir (s') (*conj.* 119, no. 11 *b*), *v. r.*, to inquire,
enrager (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. i.*, to be mad, to be enraged.
enrhumer (s'), *v. r.*, to take cold.
enrichir, *v. a.*, to enrich; **s'—**, to become rich.
enseigner (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to teach.
ensemble, *adv.*, together; *n. m.*, whole.
ensevelir, *v. a.*, to bury, shroud, swallow up.
ensuite, *adv.*, after, afterwards.
ensuivre (s') (*conj.* 119, no. 41), *v. r.*, to follow, result; *impers.*, *il s'ensuit*, 234 *a* 2.
entendre (*conj.* 119, no. 35; *w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 244, 246), *v. a.*, to hear, understand.
enterrer, *v. a.*, to bury.
entêter, *v. a.*, to infatuate; **s'—** (*w. inf.* 246), to become stubborn.
enthousiasme, *n. m.*, enthusiasm.
entourer, *v. a.*, to surround, enclose.
entr'aider (s'), *v. r.*, to help one another.
entrailles, *n. f. pl.*, entrails, (fig.) mercy.
entrainer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to carry away, draw.
entre (*w. inf.* 252 *b*), *prep.*, between, among.
entrée, *n. f.*, entrance.
entrelacer, *v. a.*, to interlace, weave.
entremettre (s') (*conj.* 119, no. 34), *v. r.*, to interpose, interfere.
entreprendre (*conj.* 119, no. 36 *a*; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to undertake.
entreprise, *n. f.*, enterprise, undertaking.
entrer, *v. i.*, to enter, go in.
entretenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *a*), *v. a.*, to keep, hold, entertain, talk with; **s'—**, to converse with.
entrevoir (*conj.* 119, no. 20 *a*; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to have a glimpse of.
entr'ouvrir (*conj.* 119, no. 8 *a*), *v. a.*, to open a little, to half-open.
envelopper, *v. a.*, to envelop, cover, wrap up.
envers (280 *b*), *prep.*, towards, to; *n. m.*, wrong side.
envie, *n. f.*, desire, wish.
environ, *adv.*, about.
environner, *v. a.*, to surround, to beset.
envisager, *v. a.*, to look, look at.
envoyer (*conj.* 119, no. 2; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to send.
épais (*fem.* 90 *c* 2), **se**, *adj.*, thick, heavy, dull; *adv.*, thickly.
épandre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *a*), *v. a.*, to scatter; **s'—**, to spread out.
épargner, *v. a.*, to save, spare; **s'—**, to spare one's self.
épeautre, *n. m.*, spelt.

épée, *n. f.*, sword.
éperon, *n. m.*, spur.
épervier, *n. m.*, hawk, sparrow-hawk.
Éphod (*pr.* 75 *a*), *p. n. m.*
Éphraim (*pr.* 55 *a* 2), *p. n. m.*, Ephraim.
épine, *n. f.*, thorn, prickle, difficulty.
épingle, *n. f.*, pin.
Épire, *p. n.*, Epirus.
épître, *n. m.*, epistle, letter.
époque, *n. f.*, time, period, epoch.
épouse, *n. f.*, wife, spouse.
épouser, *v. a.*, to marry.
épouvanter, *v. a.*, to terrify; **s'—** (*w. inf.* 245), to be frightened.
époux, *n. m.*, husband.
épreindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *b*), *v. a.*, to press.
éprendre (s') (*conj.* 119, no. 36 *a*), *v. r.*, to become enamored.
éprouver, *v. a.*, to try, prove.
épuiser (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to exhaust.
équateur (*pr.* 68 *b*), *n. m.*, equator.
équation (*pr.* 68 *b*), *n. f.*, equation.
équivaloir (*conj.* 119, no. 18 *a*), *v. i.*, to be equivalent.
équivoque, *adj.*, equivocal, ambiguous; *n. f.*, ambiguity, equivocation.
Ernest (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 α), *p. n. m.*
errant, e, *adj.*, wandering, errant.
erratum (87 *c*), *n. m.*, erratum.
erreur, *n. f.*, error, mistake.
-es, *pr.* 75 *c* 2.
ès (*pr.* 75 *c*; = *en les*, 276, rem.), in, of.
esclave, *n. m.* or *f.*, slave.
escorte, *n. f.*, escort.
escroc (*pr.* 76 *a* 2), *n. m.*, sharper, swindler.
espace, *n. f.*, space.
espagnol, e, *adj.*, Spanish; *n.*, Spaniard.
Espagne, *p. n. f.*, Spain.
espèce, *n. f.*, kind, sort.
espérance, *n. f.*, hope.
espérer (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1, cf. *b* 1; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to hope, expect.
espoir, *n. m.*, hope.
esprit, *n. m.*, spirit, soul, mind, wit.
essayer (*w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to try, try on.
-esse, *fem. end.* 82 *a* 2 β.
essentiel (*pr.* 71 *a* 1), **le**, *adj.*, essential.
essuyer, *v. a.*, to wipe, endure.
est (*pr.* 40 *b* 2 α, 75 *b* 2 α), *n. m.*, east.
est-ce que, 126 *c*, 186 *b* 1 γ.
estime, *n. f.*, esteem, regard.
estimer, *v. a.*, to esteem, estimate.
estomac (*pr.* 76 *a* 2), *n. m.*, stomach.
et (*pr.* 40 *a* 2 γ, 78 *a* 1; *in num.* 95 *a*; *synt.* 142 *a*, 282 *a*), *conj.*, and.
étable (*pr.* 39 *b* 3), *n. f.*, stable.
établir, *v. a.*, to establish, fix.
etage, *n. m.*, story (of a house).
étalon, *n. m.*, stallion, standard.
état, *n. m.*, state, position.
et cætéra (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), and so forth.
été, *p. p.* of *être*.
été, *n. m.*, summer.
éteindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *b*), *v. a.*, to put out; **s'—**, to be extinguished.
éteint, *p. p.* of *éteindre*, as *adj.*, inaudible (of the voice).
étendard, *n. m.*, standard, banner.
étendre (*conj.* 119, no. 35), *v. a.*, to spread, stretch; **s'—**, to grow out.
éternel, le, *adj.*, eternal.
éternité, *n. f.*, eternity.
Éthel, *p. n. f.*, Ethel.
étoffe, *n. f.*, stuff, cloth.
étonné (*w. inf.* 249 *a*), p. p. of *étonner*.
étonner, *v. a.*, to astonish; **s'—** (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), to be astonished.
étouffer, *v. a.*, to suffocate.
étourderie, *n. f.*, blunder, giddiness.

étrange, *adj.*, strange, odd.
étranger, *n. m.*, foreigner, stranger.
être (*conj.* 108; as *auxil.* 109 *b*, 211; as *cop.* 134 *b* 2; *impers.* 132 *b*, *c*, 215 *c*; in phrases *w. subj.* 234 *a* 1, *b* 1; *w. inf.* 240, 242, 244, *c* 4; **être à**, 184 *a*), *v. i.*, to be, belong.
être, *n. m.*, being.
étreindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *b*), *v. a.*, to bind, press.
étroit, **e**, *adj.*, narrow, tight, close.
étudier, *v. a.*, to study; **s'—** (*w. inf.* 246), to make it one's study.
eu (**eû**), *pr.*, 51, 58 *b* 3.
eu (*pr.* 58 *b*), p. p. of *avoir*.
-eur, *fem. end.*, 82 *b* 1.
Europe, *p. n. f.*
européen (*pr.* 54 *b* 2 *β*), **ne**, *n.* & *adj.*, European.
eux (*tonic form* 180), *pers. pron.*, they, them.
eux-mêmes (180 *g*), *pron.*, themselves.
évanouir (**s'**), *v. r.*, to faint, swoon.
éveiller, *v. a.*, to awaken, rouse; **s'—**, to wake up.
événement, *n. m.*, event, occurrence.
évêque, *n. m.*, bishop.
évertuer (**s'**) (*w. inf.* 246), *v. r.*, to strive, struggle.
éviter (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to shun, avoid.
ex-, *pr.* 40 *a* 2 *β*, 72.
exact (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *β*), **e**, *adj.*, exact.
exactement, *adv.*, exactly.
examen (*pr.* 54 *b* 2 *γ*), *n. m.*, examination.
examiner, *v. a.*, to examine.
example, *n. m.*, example, pattern.
excellent, **e**, *adj.*, excellent.
exceller (*w. inf.* 246), *v. i.*, to excel.
excepté (*agree.* 162 *a* 5), *prep.*, except.
excessif, **ve**, *adj.*, excessive.
exciter (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to excite, inspire.
exclure (*conj.* 119, no. 23 *b*), *v. a.*, to exclude.
exculper, *v. a.*, to exculpate.
excuse, *n. f.*, excuse, apology.
excuser (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to excuse, pardon; **s'—**, to excuse one's self.
exécuter, *v. a.*, to execute, perform.
exempter (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to exempt, free.
exercer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to exercise, practise; *v. i.*, to practise.
exercise, *n. m.*, exercise, practice.
exhorter (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to exhort.
exiger (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to exact, require.
exil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1 *γ*), *n. m.*, exile, banishment.
exilé, *p. p.* of *exiler;* exiled; *n. m.*, exile.
exister, *v. i.*, to exist.
expérience, *n. f.*, experience, experiment.
expier, *v. a.*, to expiate.
expirer, *v. i.*, to expire, die away; *v. a.*, to breathe out.
explication, *n. f.*, explanation.
expliquer, *v. a.*, to explain.
exporter, *v. a.*, to export.
exposer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to expose, show.
exprès (*fem.* 90 *c* 2), **se**, *adj.*, express, positive.
expressément (acc. 120 *c* 1), *adv.*, expressly.
expresser, *v. a.*, to express.
expression, *n. f.*, expression.
expugnable (*pr.* 65 *a* 2), *adj.*, expugnable.
exquis, **e**, *adj.*, exquisite.
extraire (*conj.* 119, no. 28 *a*), *v. a.*, to extract, draw.
extravagant, **e**, *adj.*, extravagant, wild.
extrême, *n. m.*, extreme, excessive; *adj.*, extreme.

extrémité, *n. f.*, extremity, extreme.
ey, *pr.* 48 *b*.

f, *pr.* 60, 74, 76 *b*.
face, *n. f.*, front, face.
fâché (*w. inf.* 249 *a*), **e**, *adj.*, angry, sorry.
fâcher, *v. a.*, to anger, offend; **se** — (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), to be angry.
fâcheux, se, *adj.*, grievous, sad; *n.*, bore.
facile (*w. inf.* 249 *b*), *adj.*, easy, facile.
facilement, *adv.*, easily.
façon, *n. f.*, make, fashion, shape.
facteur, *n. m.*, maker, factor, postman.
factice, *n. f.*, female agent, factor.
fagot, *n. m.*, fagot, bundle.
faible, *adj.*, weak, faint.
faiblesse, *n. m.*, weakness, faintness.
faïence (see *fay-*); *n. f.*, crockery, faience.
faillir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *c*; *w. inf.* 244, 247), *v. i.*, to err, miss, fail.
faim, *n. f.*, hunger; *avoir faim* (154 *b*, rem.), to be hungry.
faire (*conj.* 119, no. 27; *w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 244 *b*; — *bien*, *w. inf.* 245; as *impers.* 214 *d*), *v. a.*, to do, make.
faisant (*pr.* 47 *b*), *pr. p.* of *faire*.
faisceau, *n. m.*, bundle, pile.
fait (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), *n. m.*, fact, deed.
falloir (*conj.* 119, no. 18 *a*); *synt.* 215 *e*; *w. subj.* 234 *a* 1, *c* 1), *v. impers.*, must, should, to be necessary.
fameux, se, *adj.*, famous.
famille, *n. f.*, family.
fanatisme, *n. m.*, fanaticism, bigotry.
fantaisie, *n. f.*, imagination, fancy, whim.
fantôme, *n. m.*, phantom, shadow, spectre.
faon (*pr.* 58 *d*), *n. m.*, fawn.
fat (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), *n. m.*, fop, coxcomb.
fatal (*pl.* 92 *c* 1), **e**, *adj.*, fatal.
fatigant, e, *adj.*, wearisome.
fatiguant, *pr. p.* of *fatiguer*.
fatiguer, *v. a.*, to weary; **se** — (*w. inf.* 246), to become weary.
faute, *n. f.*, fault, mistake.
de (*w. inf.* 251), for want of.
fauteuil, *n. m.*, arm-chair, easy-chair.
faux (*fem.* 90 *b* 1), **fausse**, *adj.*, false, wrong; *n. m.*, forgery, falsehood.
faux (84 *b*), *n. f.*, scythe.
faveur, *n. f.*, favor.
favorable, *adj.*, favorable.
favorit (*fem.* 90 *f*), **te**, *adj.*, favorite.
fayence (*pr.* 45 *b* 1), see *faïence*.
fédéré, e, *adj.*, federate.
feindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *b*; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to feign, sham.
féliciter (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to felicitate.
femelle (82 *a* 3), *n. f.* & *adj.*, female.
femme (*pr.* 40 *e*), *n. f.*, woman, wife.
fendre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *a*), *v. a.*, to split, crack, break.
fer (*pr.* 76 *d* 1), *n. m.*, iron, sword.
férir (*conj.* 119, no. 12 *a*), *v. a.*, to strike.
ferme, *n. f.*, farm, farming.
ferme, *adj.*, firm, steady.
fermenter, *v. a.*, to ferment, rise.
fermer, *v. a.*, to shut, enclose.
festin, *n. m.*, feast, banquet.
fête, *n. f.*, holiday, festival, saint's day.
feu, *n. m.*, fire.
feu (*pl.* 92 *b* 1; *agree.* 162 *a* 4), **e**, *adj.*, late, deceased.
feutre, *n. m.*, felt-hat.
feuille (*gen.* 82 *b* 2), *n. f.*, leaf, sheet of paper.
février, *n. m.*, February.
fiancé, e, *adj.* & *n.*, betrothed, affianced.

fief, *n. m.*, fief, fee.
fier, *v. a.*, to trust; **se —**, *v. r.*, to trust to, rely on.
fier (*pr.* 76 *d* 1 ; *w. inf.* 249 *a*), **-ère**, *adj.*, proud, bold.
fierté, *n. f.*, pride, arrogance, boldness.
fièvre, *n. f.*, fever, restlessness.
figure, *n. f.*, face, form, shape.
figurer, *v. a.*, to figure, represent ; **se —** (*w. inf.* 244), to imagine.
fil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1), *n. m.*, thread, string, edge.
filer, *v. a.*, to spin, file.
fille, *n. f.*, girl, daughter.
fils (*pr.* 75 *c* 1, 76 *c* ; *form.* 85 *b*), *n. m.*, son, boy.
fin, *n. f.*, end, issue.
fin, e, *adj.*, fine, refined, sly.
final (*pl.* 92 *c* 1), *adj.*, final.
finir (*conj.* 113; *w. inf.* 245, 252 *c*), *v. a.*, to finish, end, complete.
fisc, *n. m.*, public treasury.
fixer, *v. a.*, to fix, settle.
flairer, *v. a.*, to scent, smell.
flambeau, *n. m.*, torch, light, candlestick.
flamme (*pr.* 39 *b* 5), *n. f.*, flame, blaze.
flatter, *v. a.*, to flatter, caress ; **se —** (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 245), to flatter one's self.
flatteur, *n. m.*, flatterer ; **euse**, *adj.*, flattering.
flèche, *n. f.*, arrow, spire.
fleur, *n. f.*, flower.
fleurir (*conj.* 114 *b*, *form.* 113, rem. 2), *v. i.*, to flower, bloom, flourish.
flot, *n. m.*, wave, billow, flood.
flotter, *v. i.*, to float, waft.
Flourens (*pr.* 75 *c* 3), *p. n.*
foi, *n. f.*, faith, belief, trust.
foire, *n. f.*, fair.
fois, *n. f.*, time; *deux fois*, twice, etc.
folie, *n. f.*, madness, folly, frenzy.
foncé, e, *adj.*, dark.
fond, *n. m.*, bottom, ground, heart.
fondement, *n. m.*, foundation, groundwork.
fondre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *a*), *v. a.*, to melt, cast; **se —**, to dissolve.
forçat, *n. m.*, convict.
force, *n. f.*, strength, force.
force (262 *b*), *adv.*, much, many.
forcer (*w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to force, break open.
forclore (*conj.* 119, no. 43 *a*), *v. a.*, to foreclose.
forêt, *n. f.*, forest, woodland.
forfaire (*conj.* 119, no. 27 *a*), *v. a.*, to forfeit.
former (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to form, fashion, make.
formidable, *adj.*, formidable, frightful.
formuler, *v. a.*, to state, to draw up in due form.
fort, e, *adj.*, strong, stout, violent; *adv.*, very, very much, highly.
forteresse, *n. f.*, fortress.
fortune, *n. f.*, fortune, chance, risk.
fosse (*pr.* 43 *b* 2 *δ*), *n. f.*, hole, pit, grave.
fossoyer (*pr.* 43 *b* 2 *δ*), *n. m.*, ditcher, grave-digger.
fou (*fem.* 90 *d*), **folle**, *adj.*, mad, foolish, insane; *n. m. & f.*, madman.
foudre, *n. f.*, thunder, thunderbolt, *n. m.*, thunderbolt.
fouet, *n. m.*, whip, lash.
foule, *n. f.*, crowd, throng.
fournir, *n. f.*, ant.
fournil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1 *β*), *n. m.*, bakehouse.
fracas, *n. m.*, crash, noise, bustle.
frais (*fem.* 90 *f*), **fraiche**, *adj.*, fresh, cool.
frais-cueilli (*inflection* 162 *c*), newly gathered.
franc, *n. m.*, franc.
franc, -que, *adj.*, Frank, Frankish.
franc (*fem.* 90 *a* 2, rem.), **-che**, *adj.*, free, frank.
franc de port (*agree.* 162 *a* 5), prepaid.

français, **e**, *adj.*, French.
France, *p. n. f.*
Françoise, *p. n. f.*, Frances.
franco-prusse, *adj.*, Franco-Prussian.
frapper, *v. a.*, to strike, smite.
fraternel, **le**, *adj.*, brotherly, fraternal.
frein, *n. m.*, bit, bridle, curb, check.
Fréjus (*pr.* 75 *c* 3), *p. n.*
frémir (*form.* 113, rem. 2; *w. inf.* 245), *v. i.*, to shudder, tremble.
frére, *n. m.*, brother.
fripon, *n. m.*; **ne**, *n. f.*, knave, rogue, cheat, rascal.
frire (*conj.* 119, no. 26 *c*), *v. a.* or *i.*, to fry.
frivole, *adj.*, frivolous, trifling.
froid, *n. m.*, cold, coldness, unconcern; **e**, *adj.*, cold, cool.
froideur, *n. f.*, coldness, coolness, indifference.
Froissart, *p. n.*
fromage, *n. m.*, cheese.
front, *n. m.*, forehead, front, brow, face.
frotter, *v. a.*, to rub; **se** —, to rub one's self, provoke.
frugal (*pl.* 92 *c* 1) **e**, *adj.*, frugal.
fruit, *n. m.*, fruit, result.
fuir (*conj.* 119, no. 4), *v. i.*, to flee, fly; *v. a.*, to avoid, shun.
fuite, *n. f.*, flight, evasion.
fumée, *n. f.*, smoke, fume, renown.
fumer, *v. a.*, to smoke.
funeste, *adj.*, fatal, baneful.
fureur, *n. f.*, fury, rage, wildness.
fusil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1 *β*), *n. m.*, gun, musket, steel, tinder-box.
fusiller, *v. a.*, to shoot.
futur, **e**, *adj.*, future.

g, *pr.* 60, 64, 73 *b*, 75 *a*.
gager (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to hire, bet, wager.
gagner (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to gain, earn, to reach.
gaí (*pr.* 47 *a* 2), **e**, *adj.*, gay, merry, lively.
gaiement or **gaîment** (*acc.* 120 *c* 3), *adv.*, gayly, merrily.
gaieté or **gaîté**, *n. f.*, gayety, merriment, mirth.
gaine, *n. f.*, scabbard, sheath.
Galata, *p. n.*
galerie, *n. f.*, gallery.
gant, *n. m.*, glove.
Gap (*pr.* 75 *a*), *p. n.*
garçon, *n. m.*, boy, lad, bachelor, waiter.
garde, *n. f.*, guard, defence.
garde (84 *b*), *n. m.*, keeper, warden.
garde-malade, *n. m.* or *f.*, nurse.
garder, *v. a.*, to keep, save; **se** — (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), to beware; to keep.
gardien, **ne**, *adj.*, guardian, tutelary; *n. m.* & *n. f.*, guardian, keeper.
garnison, *n. f.*, garrison.
gâteau, *n. m.*, cake.
gâter, *v. a.*, to spoil, hurt.
gaulois, **e**, *adj.*, Gaulish, Gallic; *n. m.* or *f.*, Gaul.
gaz (*pr.* 75 *a*), *n. m.*, gas.
geai (*pr.* 47 *a* 2), *n. m.*, jay.
geindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *b*), *v. i.*, to whine, moan.
geler (*conj.* 112 *c* 2), *v. i.*, to freeze.
gémir (*w. inf.* 245), *v. i.*, to groan, sigh, moan.
gendre, *n. m.*, son-in-law.
gêner, *v. a.*, to impede, obstruct, trouble; **se** —, to put one's self out.
général, *n. m.*, general.
général, **e**, *adj.*, general.
générosité, *n. f.*, generosity.
génie, *n. m.*, genius, spirit.
genou (*pl.* 86 *b* 1), *n. m.*, knee.
gens, *n. m.*, people, persons.
gent, *n. f.* (sing. of *gens*), nation, race; **e**, *adj.*, fair, comely.
gentil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1 *β*; *fem.* 90 *c* 2), **le**, *adj.*, pretty, fine.
gentil-homme, *n. m.*, nobleman.
gentiment (*form.* 120 *d*), *adv.*, prettily.

George Sand (*pr.* 75 *a*), *p. n.*
Gérard, *p. n.*, Gerard.
Germain, *p. n.*
gésir (*pr.* 69*a* 3; *conj.* 119, no. 12 *b*), *v. i.*, to lie.
gg, *pr.* 62.
Gil Blas (*pr.* 75 *c* 3), *p. n.*
Gille (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 *α*), *p. n.*
gingembre, *n. m.*, ginger.
girafe, *n. f.*, giraffe.
gîte, *n. m.*, home, lodging, resting-place.
glace, *n. f.*, ice, glass.
glacé, e, *p. p.*, frozen, iced.
glacial (*pl.* 92 *c* 1), **e**, *adj.*, frozen, icy.
gladiateur, *n. m.*, gladiator.
gloire, *n. f.*, glory, halo.
glorieux, se, *adj.*, glorious, blessed.
glorifier, *v. a.*, to glorify; **se** — (*w. inf.* 245), to glory in.
gn, *pr.* 65, 73 *b*.
gnome (*pr.* 65 *a* 1), *n. m.*, gnome.
gnostique (*pr.* 65 *a* 1), *adj.*, gnostic.
goujon, *n. m.*, gudgeon.
goulûment (*acc.* 120 *c* 2), *adv.*, greedily, gluttonously.
gourde, *n. f.*, gourd, flask.
goût, *n. m.*, taste, smell, savor.
goutte, *n. f.*, drop, gout; *adv.* (as negative complement 266 *a*), at all.
gouvernante, *n. f.*, governess, governor's wife.
gouvernement, *n. m.*, government, management.
gouverner, *v. a.*, to govern, manage.
gouverneur, *n. m.*, governor.
grâce, *n. f.*, grace, favor, mercy, pardon.
gracieux, se, *adj.*, graceful, courteous, kind.
grand (*posit.* 163 *c*), **e**, *adj.*, great, large, high, tall.
grand chose (*form.* 89 *b*), much.
grandeur, *n. f.*, size, height, tallness.
grandir, *v. i.*, to grow, grow tall, increase.
grand'-mère (*form.* 89 *b*), *n. f.*, grandmother.
grand-père, *n. m.*, grandfather.
grand'-route (*form.* 89 *b*), *n. f.*, highway.
grand'-tante (*form.* 89 *b*), *n. f.*, great-aunt.
grange *n. f.*, barn.
granit (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), *n. m.*, granite.
gras (*fem.* 90 *c* 2), **se**, *adj.*, fat.
grasseyer (*conj.* 112 *e* 3), *v. i.*, to speak thick.
gratis (*pr.* 75 *c* 2), *adv.*, gratis.
grave, *adj.*, heavy, grave, serious.
gré, *n. m.*, will, wish, mind.
grec (*fem.* 90 *c* 2, *e* 2), **grecque**, *adj.*, Greek, Grecian.
greffe, *n. f.*, graft, registry, registry-office.
grêler, *v. i.*, to hail.
grenouille, *n. f.*, frog.
grésil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1 *α*), *n. m.*, sleet.
griller, *v. a.*, to broil, roast.
grimper, *v. i.*, to climb, creep up.
grog (*pr.* 75 *a*), *n. m.*, grog.
grogner, *v. i.*, to grunt, grumble.
gronder (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to growl, grumble, scold.
gros (*pr.* 43 *b* 2 *δ*; *fem.* 90 *c* 2), **se**, *adj.*, large, big, pregnant.
grotesque, *adj.*, grotesque.
gu, *pr.* 64 *a*.
guère (*w.* **ne**, 266, 268), but little, not much, not very.
guérir, *v. a.*, to heal, cure: *v. i.*, to recover.
guerre, *n. f.*, war.
guide, *n. m.* or *f.*, guide, guide-book, rein.
Guide (*pr.* 64 *a* 2), *p. n.*
Guillaume *p. n. m.*, William.
guinder, *v. a.*, to hoist, strain.
Guise (*pr.* 64 *a* 2; *pl.* 87 *a*), *p. n.*
Gunther (*pr.* 57 *a*), *p. n.*
gymnastique, *n. f.*, gymnastics; *adj.*, gymnastic.

h, *pr.*, 66.
habile (*w. inf.* 248 *b*), *adj.*, able, clever, skilful.
habiller, *v. a.*, to dress, clothe.

habit, *n. m.*, coat, garment, garb.
habitant, *n. m.*, inhabitant, resident.
habiter, *v. a.*, to live in, inhabit.
habitude, *n. f.*, custom, habit.
habituer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to use, accustom.
'**hache**, *n. f.*, axe, hatchet.
'**haie**, *n. f.*, hedge, row, line.
'**haine**, *n. f.*, hate, hatred.
'**haïr** (*conj.* 114 *c*; *w. inf.* 247 *d* 3), *v. a.*, to hate, detest.
haleine, *n. f.*, breath, wind.
'**halle**, *n. f.*, market.
'**hanap** (*pr.* 75 *a*), *n. m.*, goblet.
'**Hanovre** (*gen.* 83 *a* 3), *p. n.*, Hanover.
'**hanter**, *v. a.*, to haunt, frequent.
'**harangue**, *n. f.*, harangue, speech, address.
'**haranguer**, *v. a.*, to harangue.
'**harasser**, *v. a.*, to harass, weary.
'**harceler** (*conj.* 112 *c* 2), *v. a.*, to harass, torment.
'**hardi**, **e**, *adj.*, bold, daring.
'**haricot**, *n. m.*, bean.
'**harpe**, *n. f.*, harpe.
'**hasard**, *n. m.*, chance, risk.
'**hasarder** (*w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to risk, hazard.
'**hâte**, *n. f.*, hurry, haste; *à la* —, quickly, hastily.
'**hâter**, *v. a.*, to hasten; **se** — (*w. inf.* 245), to hasten.
'**haut**, **e**, *adj.*, high, tall, lofty.
'**hauteur**, *n. f.*, height, depth.
Havas (*pr.* 75 *c* 3), *p. n.*
'**Havre** (*art.* 152 *a*), *p. n.*
'**Haye** (*art.* 152 *a*), *p. n.*
'**hé**, *interj.*, ho! ah! I say!
'**heaume**, *n. m.*, helmet, helm.
Hébreu (*pl.* 72 *b* 1), **e**, *n.* or *adj.*, Hebrew.
'**Hector**, *p. n. m.*
'**hélas** (*pr.* 75 *c* 1), *interj.*, alas!
hennir (*pr.* 40 *e*), *v. i.*, to neigh.
'**Henri**, *p. n. m.*, Henry.
herbe, *m. f.*, herb, grass.
Hercule, *p. n. m.*, Hercules.
hérétique, *n. m.* or *f.*, *adj.*, heretic, heretical.
héroïne, *n. f.*, heroine.
héroïque, *adj.*, heroic.
héroïsme, *n. m.*, heroism.
'**héros**, *n. m.*, hero.
hésiter (*w. inf.* 247), *v. i.*, to hesitate, stop.
heur, *n. m.*, luck, good fortune.
heure, *n. f.*, hour, o'clock, time; *toute à l'*—, at once; *de bonne* —, early.
heureusement, *adv.*, happily, fortunately.
heureux (*w. inf.* 249 *a*), **se**, *adj.*, happy, blissful.
'**heurter**, *v. a.*, to hit, strike against; **se** —, to strike, hit.
'**hibou** (*pl.* 86 *b* 1), *n. m.*, owl.
'**hideux**, **se**, *adj.*, hideous, dreadful.
hier (*pr.* 76 *d* 1), *adv.*, yesterday.
'**hiérarchie**, *n. f.*, hierarchy.
hirondelle, *n. f.*, swallow.
histoire, *n. f.*, story, history.
historien, *n. m.*, historian.
hiver (*pr.* 76 *d* 2), *n. m.*, winter.
'**Hollande** (*pr.* 66 *a* 1), *p. n. f.*, Holland.
Holopherne, *p. n. m.*, Holophernes.
hommage, *n. m.*, homage, service.
homme, *n. m.*, man; (in phrases of negation, 268 *e*).
honnête, *adj.*, honest, virtuous.
honneur (*gen.* 82 *b* 1), *n. m.*, honor, credit.
honorer, *v. a.*, to honor.
'**honte**, *n. f.*, shame, scandal.
'**honteux** (*w. inf.* 249 *a*), **se**, *adj.*, ashamed, bashful, shy.
hôpital (*pr.* 43 *b* 1 *α*), *n. m.*, hospital, poorhouse.
horreur, *n. f.*, horror, awe, fright.
horrible, *adj.*, horrible, awful.
'**hors**, *prep.*, out, beyond.
que (*w. subj.* 235 *c*), except.
de (*w. inf.*, 251), except.
hospitalier, **ère**, *adj.*, hospitable.

hôte, *n. m.*, host, landlord, guest.
hôtel (*pr.* 43 *b* 1 α), *n. m.*, hotel, mansion, city-house.
Hôtel-Dieu (*pl.* 88 *b*), *p. n.*, the principal hospital of a place.
hôtesse, *n. f.*, hostess, guest, landlady.
'houille, *n. f.*, coal-pit, coal.
'Hudson, *p. n.*
Hugo, Victor, *p. n. m.*
'Hugenot, *p. n. m.*
huissier, *n. m.*, usher, door-keeper, bailiff.
'huit (*pr.* 66 *a* 1, 75 *d* 1, 77 *a*), *adj.*, eight.
'huitante (95 *c*), *adj.*, eighty (obsolete).
humain, e, *adj.*, human, humane; *n. m.*, human being.
humanité, *n. f.*, humanity, mankind.
humble, *adj.*, humble, meek.
'hurler, *v. a.*, to howl, yell, roar.
hydre, *n. f.*, hydra.
hymen (*pr.* 54 *b* 3), *n. m.*, hymen.
hymne (*gen.* 84 *c* 2), *n. m.*, hymn.
hypocrite, *n. m.* or *f.*, hypocrite; *adj.*, hypocritical.
hypothèque, *n. f.*, mortgage.

i, *pr.* 42, 58 *c*; *i* & *y*, 45 rem., 112 *c*.
-ice, *masc. end.* 83 *b* 1.
ici, *adv.*, here, hither.
idée, *n. f.*, idea, fancy.
idiome, *n. m.*, language, dialect, idiom.
-ième, *suffix* 96 *b*.
igné (*pr.* 65 *a* 2), **e**, *adj.*, igneous.
ignorant, e, *adj.*, ignorant.
ignoré, *p. p.* of *ignorer*, unknown.
ignorer (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1), *v. a.*, to be ignorant of, not to know.
il (*pr.* 67 *b* 1; *forms* 97; *impers. subj.* 172 *c*, 132 *b*, 133; *w. verb in pl.* 139; *synt.* 171 ff.), *pron.*, he, it.
-il, -ill-, *pr.* 67 *a*, *b*.
île, *n. f.*, island.
illégal, e, *adj.*, illegal.
illuminer, *v. a.*, to illuminate.
illusion, *n. f.*, illusion, delusion.
illustre, *adj.*, illustrious, eminent.
im, *as nas. vow.*, *pr.* 53, 55.
image, *n. f.*, image, picture, resemblance.
imagination, *n. f.*, imagination.
imaginer, *v. a.*, to imagine; **s'—** (*w. inf.* 244), to imagine.
imbécilité (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 α), *n. f.*, idiocy, imbecility.
imboire (*conj.* 119, no. 29 *a*), *v. a.*, to imbue.
immensément (*acc.* 120 *c* 1), *adv.*, immensely.
immobile, *adj.*, motionless.
immoler, *v. a.*, to sacrifice.
immortel, le, *adj.*, immortal.
impatiemment, *adv.*, impatiently.
impatience, *n. f.*, impatience.
impétueux, se, *adj.*, violent, impetuous.
impiété, *n. f.*, impiety.
impitoyable, *adj.*, pitiless.
importer (214 *b*; *w. subj.* 234 *a* 1), *v. impers.*, to concern, be of consequence; *v. a.*, to import.
importunément (*acc.* 120 *c* 1), *adv.*, importunately.
imposer, *v. a.*, to lay on, impose; *v. i.*, to overawe.
impossible (*w. inf.* 249 *b*), *adj.*, impossible.
imprimer, *v. a.*, to print, impress, stamp.
imprudence, *n. f.*, imprudence.
impunément (*form.* 130 *d*), *adv.*, with impunity.
impuni, e, *adj.*, unpunished.
imputer (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to impute, ascribe to.
in, *as nas. vow. pr.* 53, 55.
incapable (*w. inf.* 249 *a*), *adj.*, incapable.
incendie, *n. m.*, fire, conflagration.
incendier, *v. a.*, to burn, set fire to.
incertain, e., *adj.*, uncertain.
incessamment, *adv.*, incessantly.
inciter (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to incite, excite.
incliner (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*,

to incline, slope; **s'—**, to bow.
incommodément (*acc.* 120 *c* 1), *adv.*, inconveniently.
incommoder, *v. a.*, to inconvenience, trouble.
incomplet (*fem.* 90 *c* 1 *α*), **ète**, *adj.*, incomplete.
incompris, **e**, *adj.*, not understood.
inconsolable (*w. inf.* 249 *a*), *adj.*, inconsolable.
incorrect, **e**, *adj.*, wrong, incorrect.
incrédulité, *n. f.*, incredulity.
incruster, *v. a.*, to incrust, inlay.
incurable, *adj.*, incurable.
indemnité (*pr.* 40 *e*), *n. f.*, indemnity.
indépendant, **e**, *adj.*, independent.
index (*pr.* 75 *a*), *n. m.*, index, forefinger.
Indien, **ne**, *n. m.* or *f.* and *adj.*, Indian.
indifféremment, *adv.*, indifferently.
indignation, *n. f.*, indignation.
indigner, *v. a.*, to make indignant; **s'—** (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), to be indignant.
indirect, **e**, *adj.*, indirect.
indiscret (*fem.* 90 *c* 1 *α*), **ète**, *adj.*, indiscreet.
individu, *n. m.*, individual.
induire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *a*; *w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to induce, lead.
indulgence, *n. f.*, leniency, indulgence.
indult (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *γ*), *n. m.*, indult.
industrieux, **se**, *adj.*, skilful, ingenious.
ineptie (*pr.* 71 *a* 3), *n. f.*, ineptitude.
inertie (*pr.* 71 *a* 1), *n. f.*, inertia, inactivity.
inévitable, *adj.*, inevitable.
infâme, *adj.*, infamous.
infect, **e**, *adj.*, infectious.
infiniment, *adv.*, infinitely.
infinité, *n. f.*, infinity.
inflexible, *adj.*, inflexible.
infortuné, **e**, *adj.*, unfortunate.
ingérer (**s'**) (*w. inf.* 245), *v. r.*, to meddle with.
ingrat, **e**, *n.* & *adj.*, ungrateful, ingrate.
initial (*pr.* 71 *a* 1), **e**, *adj.*, initial.
initier (*pr.* 71 *a* 3), *v. a.* to initiate, admit.
injure, *n. f.*, insult, injury, wrong.
injuste, *adj.*, unjust, wrong.
innocence, *n. f.*, innocence.
innocent, **e**, *adj.*, innocent.
inquiet (*fem.* 90 *c* 1 *α*), **-ète**, *adj.*, restless, anxious.
inquiéter, *v. a.*, to make uneasy; **s'—** (*w. inf.* 245), to be uneasy.
inquiétude, *n. f.*, uneasiness, anxiety.
inquisition, *n. f.*, inquisition.
inscrire (*conj.* 119, no. 25), *v. a.*, to inscribe, register.
insipide, *adj.*, insipid, tasteless.
inspirer (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to inspire.
instant, *n. m.*, instant, moment.
installer, *v. a.*, to instal, induct; **s'—**, to instal one's self, take up one's abode.
instiller (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 *α*), *v. a.*, to instil.
instruire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *b*; *w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to instruct, teach, inform.
instrument, *n. m.*, instrument.
insulter, *v. a.*, to insult.
intact, **e**, *adj.*, entire, whole, intact.
intelligence, *n. f.*, intelligence, intellect.
intelligent, **e**, intelligent.
intention, *n. f.*, intention.
interdire (*conj.* 119, no. 26 *a*; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to forbid, interdict.
interdit, **e**, *p. p.* of *interdire*, confused; *n. m.*, interdict.
intéressant, **e**, *adj.*, interesting.

intéresser (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to interest; **s'**—, to be interested.
intérêt, *n. m.*, interest, concern, share.
interrogatoire, *n. m.*, interview, questioning.
interrompre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *c*), *v. a.*, to interrupt.
intervenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *b*), *v. i.*, to intervene, interfere.
intestin, e, *adj.*, intestine.
intimider, *v. a.*, to intimidate.
intrépidité, *n. f.*, boldness, fearlessness.
introduire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *a*), *v. a.*, to introduce; **s'**— to introduce one's self.
inventer, *v. a.*, to invent.
inviter (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to invite.
-ion, *fem. end.* 83 *b* 2.
irriter, *v. a.*, to irritate, anger.
-is, *pr.*, 75 *c* 2.
-isme, *masc. end.* 83 *b* 1.
issir (*conj.* 119, no 12 *c*), *v. i.*, to issue.
issue, *n. f.*, issue, outlet, end.
-iste, *masc. end.* 83 *b* 1.
isthme (*pr.* 73 *d*), *n. m.*, isthmus.
Italie *p. n. f.*, Italy.
italien, ne, *adj.*, Italian.
ivresse, *n. f.*, drunkenness, intoxication.

j, *pr.*, 61.
jà, *adv.*, already.
Jacques, *p. n. m.*, James.
jadis (*pr.* 75 *c* 1), *adv.*, formerly.
jais, *n. m.*, jet.
jalap (*pr.* 75 *a*), *n. m.*, jalap.
jalousie, *n. f.*, jealousy.
jaloux (*w. inf.* 249 *a*), **se**, *adj.*, jealous, anxious.
jamais (*w.* **ne**, 266, 268; place of, 267 *a*, *b*; cf. 159 *d*), *adv.*, never.
jambe, *n. f.*, leg.
janvier, *n. m.*, January.
Japhet (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), *p. n. m.*
Japan (*gen.* 83 *a* 2), *p. n. m.*, Japan.
jardin, *n. m.*, garden.
jaser, *v. i.*, to prate, chatter.
jaune, *adj.*, yellow.
je (*pr.* 40 *d*, rem. 2; *elision* 37 *a*; *forms* 97; *synt.* 171), *pron.*, I.
Jean (*pr.* 58 *b* 3), *p. n. m.*, John.
Jeanne (*pr.* 58 *b* 3), *p. n. f.*, Jean, Jeanne, Jane.
Jéréboam (*pr.* 54 *a* 1), *p. n. m.*
Jérusalem (*pr.* 54 *b* 3), *p. n.*, Jerusalem.
Jésus Christ (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *α*), *p. n. m.*, Jesus Christ.
jeter (*conj.* 112 *c* 1), *v. a.*, to throw, hurl, utter.
jeu, *n. m.*, play, sport, game, gaming.
jeudi, *n. m.*, Thursday.
jeun, à, (*pr.* 58 *b* 3,) *adv.*, fasting.
jeune, *adj.*, young.
jeûne (*pr.* 51 *b* 2), *n. m.*, fast, fasting.
jeunesse, *n. f.*, youth.
Joab (*pr.* 75 *a*), *p. n. m.*
Job (*pr.* 75 *a*), *p. n. m.*
jocky, *n. m.*, jockey.
joie (*gen.* 82 *b* 2), *n. f.*, joy.
joindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *c*), *v. a.*, to join, add.
Joinville, *p. n.*
joli, e, *adj.*, pretty, good, nice, genteel.
jouer, *v. a.*, to play, stake; *v. i.*, to play, trifle.
joug (*pr.* 75 *a*), *n. m.*, yoke.
jouir, *v. i.*, to enjoy, possess.
joujou (*pl.* 86 *b* 1), *n. m.*, plaything, toy.
jour, *n. m.*, day, daytime, light; **donner** —, to give birth.
journal, *n. m.*, newspaper.
journée, *n. f.*, day, day's work.
Juana (art. 152 *b* 5), *p. n. f.*
judas (*pr.* 75 *c* 1), *p. n. m.*, (*fig.*) peep-hole.
Judith (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), *p. n. f.*
juge, *n. m.*, judge.
juger (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; in phrases *w. inf.* 245); *v. a.*, to judge, think.

juillet, *n. m.*, July.
juin, *n. m.*, June.
Julie, *p. n. f.*, Julia.
jumeau, *n. m.*, twin.
jumelle, *n. f.*, twin.
jument, *n. f.*, mare.
Jupiter (*pr.* 76 *d* 2), *p. n. m.*
jurer (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 244, *a* 4), *v. a.*, to swear, vow; *v. i.*, to swear, blaspheme.
jusque, *prep.*, even, to, as for as, until, till.
jusqu'à (*w. inf.* 251), to, till, until.
jusqu'à ce que (*hist.* 144 *c* 2, 186 *a* 2; *w. subj.* 235 *a*, cf. *a* 1), till, until.
juste, *adj.*, just, exact.
justice, *n. f.*, justice.
justifier (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to justify, indicate.

l, *pr.* 67, 74; "liquid," 67 *a*, *b*; silent, 74 *c*; doubled in decl., 90 *c* 1, in conj., 112 *c*.
la, *fem. of def. art.*, see *le*.
la, *acc.* of **elle**, see *il*.
là (appended to demon. 185 *a*), *adv.*, there, thither, then.
labeur (*gen.* 82 *b*), *n. m.*, labor, work, toil.
laboureur, *n. m.*, tiller, husbandman.
labyrinthe, *n. m.*, maze, labyrinth.
lac (*pr.* 76 *a* 2), *n. m.*, lake.
lâche, *n. m.*, coward; *adj.*, loose, lax.
La Flèche, *p. n.*
La Fontaine, *p. n.*
laid, e, *adj.*, ugly, plain.
laisser (*w. inf.* 244, 246, 247 *d* 4), *v. a.*, to leave, desert, let, allow.
lait, *n. m.*, milk.
lampe, *n. f.*, lamp.
lance, *n. f.*, lance, spear.
lancer, *v. a.*, to dart, fling; **se —**, to rush.
landau (*pl.* 86 *b*), *n. m.*, landau.
langage, *n. m.*, speech, language.
langue, *n. f.*, tongue, language.
Laon (*pr.* 58 *d*). *p. n.*
laps (*pr.* 75 *c* 1), *n. m.*, lapse.
laquelle, see *lequel*.
large, *adj.*, wide, great, ample.
largeur, *n. f.*, breadth, width.
larme, *n. f.*, tear.
larron, *n. m.*, thief.
larynx (*pr.* 75 *a*), *n. m.*, larynx.
las (*fem.* 90 *c* 2; *w. inf.* 249 *a*), **se**, *adj.*, weary, tired.
lasser (*w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to tire, weary.
latin, e, *adj.*, Latin; *n. m.*, the Latin language.
Laure (*pr.* 50 *b* 1), *p. n. f.*, Laura.
le, la, l' (*forms* 81 *a*; *synt.*, 151, 154), *def. art.*, the.
le, *acc.* of **il** (cf. 174 *c* 2), him, it.
leçon, *n. f.*, lesson, lecture.
léger, ère, *adj.*, light, easy, fickle.
législation, *n. f.*, legislation.
légitime, *adj.*, just, lawful, legitimate.
lendemain, *n. m.*, morrow, next day.
lent (*w. inf.* 249 *b*), **e**, *adj.*, slow, tardy.
lentement (*form.* 120 *a* 2 *β*), *adv.*, slowly.
lenteur, *n. f.*, slowness.
Léopold *p. n. m.*
lequel (*forms* 100 *b*; *synt.* 192), *rel. pron.*, which, who, whom, that.
lequel (*forms* 101 *b* 2; *synt.* 196 *c*), *inter. pron.*, which.
les (*pr* 40 *d*, rem. 1), see *def. art.* **le** and *pers. pron.* **il**.
lesquels, lesquelles, see *lequel*.
Lesseps (*pr.* 75 *c* 3), *p. n.*
lest (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *α*), *m. n.*, ballast.
lettre, *n, f.*, letter.
leur, *dat. pl.* of *il*.
leur (*forms* 98 *a*, *b*; *synt.* 181), *poss. adj.*, their.
lever (*conj.* 112 *b* 1), *v. a.*, to lift, raise, hold; **se —**, to rise.
lever, *n. m.*, rising.

lèvre, *n. f.*, lip.
liberté, *n. f.*, liberty, freedom.
libre, *adj.*, free, exempt.
liège or **liége** (*acc.* 41 *b*, rem. 1), *n. m.*, cork, cork-tree.
lien, *n. m.*, band, bond, strap.
lier, *v. a.*, to bind.
lieu, *n. m.*, place, occasion; *au lieu de*, in place of; *avoir* —, to take place.
lieue, *n f.*, league.
lieutenant, *n. m.*, lieutenant.
lièvre, *n. f.*, hare.
Lille (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 *α*), *p. n.*
limaçon, *n. m.* snail.
limiter (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to limit, bound.
linceul, *n. m.*, shroud, winding-sheet.
linge, *n. m.*, linen, cloth.
linguiste, (*pr.* 64 *a* 2), *n. m.* linguist.
lion, *n. m.*, lion.
lire (*conj.* 119, no. 24), *v. a.*, to read.
lis (*pr.* 75 *c* 1), *n. m.*, lily.
lit, *n. m.*, bed.
Lithuanie, *p. n. f.*, Lithuania.
littérature, *n. f.*, literature.
livre (84 *b*), *n. m.*, book.
livre (84 *b*), *n. f.*, pound.
loger, *v. i.*, to lodge, take lodgings.
loi, *n. f.*, law.
loin, *adv.*, far, far off, remote; **de** (*w. inf.* 251), far from; **que** (*hist.* 144 *c* 3), far from.
Loire, *p. n.*
Londres, *p. n.*, London.
long (*fem.* 90 *c* 2), *ue*, *adj.*, long, tedious.
longtemps, *adv.*, long, a long time.
longueur, *n. f.*, length.
loquace, *adj.*, loquacious, talkative.
Lorraine, *p. n. f.*
lors, *adv.*, then; — *même que* (145 *a* 1), even though; — *que* (*hist.* 144 *e* 2), when, at the time when.
lot (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), *n. m.*, lot, portion, share.
Loth, *p. n. m.*, Lot.
louage, *n. m.*, hire, hiring, letting.
louer (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to let, hire, rent; praise, laud.
Louis, *p. n. m.*
loup, *n. m.*, wolf.
lourd, **e**, *adj.*, heavy, dull, clumsy.
Louveau (*pl.* 87 *a*), *p. n.*
Louvre, *p. n. m.*
loyal, **e**, *adj.*, loyal.
loyalement, *adv.*, loyally.
lugubre, *adj.*, dismal, lugubrious.
lui, *dat. sg.* of **il**, him, to him, to her.
lui (*tonic form* 180), he, him.
lui-même (180 *g*), *pron.*, himself.
luire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *e*), *v. i.*, to shine.
lumière, *n. f.*, light, intelligence.
lundi, *n. m.*, Monday.
lune, *n. f.*, moon.
lut (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), *n. m.*, lute.
luth (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), *n. m.*, lute.
luxe, *n. m.*, luxury.
lyre, *n. f.*, lyre.
lyrique, *adj.*, lyric.
lyrisme, *n. m.*, lyricism, lyric.

m, *pr.* 61, 78 *a* 1; silent, 73 *a*.
ma, *fem.* of **mon**, *my*.
Machiavel (*pr.* 63 *a* 3), *p. n.*, Macchiavelli.
machine, *n. f.*, machine, engine.
maçon (*pr.* 39 *b* 4), *n. m.*, mason, bricklayer, free-mason.
madame, *n. f.*, madam, mistress, my lady, Mrs.
mademoiselle, *n. f.*, Miss.
Madrid (*pr.* 75 *a*) *p. n.*
magister (*pr.* 76 *d* 2), *n. m.*, pedant, schoolmaster.
magnat (*pr.* 65 *a* 2), *n. m.*, magnate, nobleman.
magnifique, *adj.*, grand, magnificent.
mai, *n. m.*, May.
maigre, *adj.*, lean.
main, *n. f.*, hand.
maint, **e** (208 *a*), *adj.*, many.
maintenant, *adv.*, now.

maintenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *a*), *v. a.*, to sustain, keep up; **se** —, to hold out.
maire, *n. m.*, mayor.
mais, *conj.*, but, why.
maïs (*pr.* 75 *e* 1), *n. m.*, maize, Indian corn.
maison (*pr.* 47 *a* 2), *n. f.*, house.
maître, *n. m.*, master, proprietor.
maîtresse, *n. f.*, mistress, proprietress.
majesté, *n. f.*, majesty.
majestueux, **se**, *adj.*, majestic.
major, *n. m.*, major.
majuscule, *n. f.* & *adj.*, capital, large.
mal (*comp.* 94; as *subst.* 164 *b*; — *aux dents*, etc., 273 *b* 2 *α*), *n. m.*, evil, ill, harm, pain, sickness; *adv.*, ill, wrong, badly.
malade, *adj.*, sick.
maladie, *n. f.*, sickness.
malaise, *n. m.*, uneasiness, uncomfortableness.
mâle (82 *a* 3), male.
malédiction, *n. f.*, curse.
malfaire (119, no. 27 *a*), *v. i.*, to do evil.
malgré, *prep.*, notwithstanding, in spite of.
que (*hist.* 144 *c*; *w. subj.* 235 *d*), notwithstanding that.
Malherbe, *p. n.*
malheur, *n. m.*, misfortune, mishap.
malheureux, **se**, *adj.*, unfortunate, unhappy.
malignité, *n. f.*, malice, malignity.
malin (*fem.* 90 *f*), **gne**, *adj.*, malignant, sly.
maman, *n. f.*, mamma.
manche, *n. m.*, handle; *n. f.*, sleeve, channel.
mander (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to write, send word, send for.
manger (*conj.* 112 *a* 2), *v. a.*, to eat.
manger, *n. m.*, food, eating.
manière, *n. f.*, manner, way, fashion.
manquement, *n. m.*, want, failure, omission.
manquer (*w. inf.* 244. 247), *v. i.*, to miss, lack, fail, need.
manufacture, *n. f.*, manufacture, factory.
manuscrit, *n. m.*, manuscript.
maquis, *n. m.*, thicket.
marchand, *n. m.*, shopkeeper, merchant.
marche, *n. f.*, walk, gait, march.
marcher, *v. i.*, to walk, tread. travel.
mardi, *n. m.*, Tuesday.
maréchal, *n. m.* marshal, field-marshal, farrier.
maréchale, *n. f.*, wife of field-marshal.
mari, *n. m.*, husband.
mariage, *n. m.*, marriage.
Marie, *p. n. f.*, Mary.
Marie-Antoinette, *p. n. f.*
marier, *v. a.*, to marry; **se** —, to marry.
marmot, *n. m.*, puppet, monkey, urchin.
marquer, *v. a.*, to mark, stamp, brand.
marquis, *n. m.*, marquis.
marquise, *n. f.*, marchioness.
mars (*pr.* 75 *c* 1), *n. m.*, March, Mars.
Martigny, *p. n.*
masse, *n. f.*, mass, heap, hoard,
mat (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), **e**, *adj.*, dull, heavy, mated; *n. m.*, mate.
mât, *n. m.*, mast, pole.
matin, *n. m.*, morning.
matinée, *n. f.*, morning; afternoon performance.
maudire (*conj.* 119, no. 26 *e*), *v. a.*, to curse.
mauvais (*pr.* 50 *b* 3; *comp.* 94), **e**, *adj.*, bad.
me (*dat.* or *acc.* of *je*; elision 37 *a*), *pron.*, me, to me.
méchant, **e**, *adj.*, bad, wicked, worthless.
méconnaître (*conj.* 119, no. 32 *b*), *v. a.*, not to recognize, disown.
mécontent (*w. inf.* 249 *a*), **e**, *adj.*, dissatisfied.

mécroire (*conj.* 119, no. 30), *v. i.*, to disbelieve.
médicin, *n. m.*, doctor, physician.
médiateur, *n. m.*, mediator.
médire (*conj.* 119, no. 26 *a*), *v. i.*, to slander, to speak ill.
méditer (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to meditate, plan; *v. i.*, to contemplate.
méfaire (*conj.* 119, no. 27 *a*), *v. i.*, to do evil.
mégarde, *n. f.*, mistake, accident.
meilleur (*comp.* of *bon*, 94), **e**, *adj.*, better.
mélange, *n. m.*, mixture, medley.
mêler, *v. a.*, to mingle, mix; **se** — (*w. inf.* 245), to mingle, trouble one's self.
membre, *n. m.*, member, limb.
même (*synt.* 180 *g*, 199, 205), *adj.*, self; same; *adv.*, even, also.
mémoire, *n. m.*, memorandum; *n. f.*, memory.
menace, *n. f.*, threat, menace.
menacer (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to threaten, menace.
ménage, *n. m.*, house, household, housekeeping.
ménager, *v. a.*, to husband, spare, economize, manage.
mendier, *v. a.*, to beg, ask alms.
mener (*conj.* 112 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to lead, bring, guide.
mensonge, *n. m.*, lie, falsehood, illusion.
menteur, **se** —, *n. m.* or *f.*, liar; *adj.*, false, lying.
mentir (*conj.* 119, no. 3), *v. i.*, to lie, tell a lie.
menton, *n. m.*, chin.
Mentor, *p. n. m.*
méprendre (**se**) (*conj.* 119, no. 36 *a*), *v. r.*, to mistake, be mistaken.
mépriser, *v. a.*, to despise.
mer (*pr.* 76 *d* 1), *n. f.*, sea.
mercredi, *n. m.*, Wednesday.
merci, *n. f.*, mercy; *n. m.*, thanks; *adv.*, thank you.
Mercure, *p. n. m.*, Mercury.
mère, *n. f.*, mother.
méridional, **e**, *adj.*, meridional, southern.
mériter (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to deserve, merit.
merveille (*gen.* 82 *b* 2), *n. f.*, wonder, marvel.
merveilleux, **se**, *adj.*, wonderful, marvellous.
mes (*pl.* of *mon*; *pr.* 40 *d*, rem. 1), *poss. adj.*, my.
mésallier, *v. a.*, to disparage, to marry to any one of inferior rank.
messe, *n. f.*, mass.
messeoir (*conj.* 119, no. 21 *c*), *v. i.*, to be unbecoming, not to befit.
mesure, *n. f.*, measure.
mesurer, *v. a.*, to measure, compare.
métal, *n. m.*, metal.
métairie, *n. f.*, small farm.
mètre, *n. m.*, metre.
mettre (*conj.* 119, no. 34; *w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to put, place, lay, invest; **se** —, to put one's self, dress, sit, begin.
Metz (*pr.* 75 *a* 1), *p. n.*
meuble, *n. m.*, piece of furniture.
Mexique (*gen.* 83 *a* 2), *p. n. m.*, Mexico.
Michel-Ange (*pr.* 63 *a* 3), *p. n. m.*, Michael Angelo.
midi, *n. m.*, noon, mid-day, south.
mie (181, rem.), *n. f.*, dear, sweet, love.
mie (*w. ne*, 266 *a*), *adv.*, not.
miel, *n. m.*, honey.
mien (*forms* 98 *b*, *synt.* 184), **ne**, *poss. pron.*, mine.
mieux (*comp.* of *bien* 94; as *subst.* 164 *b* 1; *idiom* 157 *d*), *adv.*, better.
mil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1 α), *n. m.*, millet.
mil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1), *adj.*, one thousand.
milieu, *n. m.*, middle, midst, centre; *au* — *de*, in the midst of.
mille (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 α), *adj.* & *n. m.*, thousand, a thousand, mile.
millier (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 α), *n. m.*, thousand.

million, *n. m.*, million.
mine, *n. f.*, mine.
Minerve, *p. n. f.*, Minerva.
ministre, *n. m.*, minister, clergyman.
Minos, *p. n. m.*
minuit, *n. m.*, midnight.
minute, *n. f.*, minute.
Mirabeau, *p. n. m.*
miracle, *n. m.*, miracle, wonder.
mirer, *v. a.*, to aim, look at.
misérable, *adj.*, miserable, wretched, wicked.
misère, *n. f.*, distress, misery, want, poverty.
mixtion, *n. f.*, mixture.
mobilier, *n. m.*, furniture.
mode, *n. f.*, fashion, mode, way; *n. m.*, mood.
modèle, *n. m.*, model, copy, pattern.
modérer, *v. a.*, to moderate, abate.
mœurs (*pr.* 75 *c* 1), *n. f. pl.*, manners, morals, habits.
moi (*tonic form* 180), *pers. pron.*, I, me.
moi-même (180 *g*), *pron.*, myself.
moindre (*comp.* of *petit* 94), *adj.*, less, least.
moins (*comp.* of *peu* 94; *idiom* 157 *d*), *adv.*, less; *au* —, *du* —, at least; *à* — *que*, cf. *à*.
mois (*pr.* 49 *b* 2), *n. m.*, month.
moitié, *n. f.*, half.
Molière, *p. n. m.*
moment, *n. m.*, moment.
mon (*forms* 98 *a*; *synt.* 189), *poss. adj.*, my.
monarchie, *n. f.*, monarchy.
mondain, e, *adj.*, worldly, mundane.
monde, *n. m.*, world, society, people, mankind; *tout le* —, everybody.
monnaie, *n. f.*, coin, money, mint, change.
monosyllabe, *n. m.* & *adj.*, monosyllable, monosyllabic.
Mons (*pr.* 75 *c* 3), *p. n.*
monseigneur, *n. m.*, my lord.
monsieur (*pr.* 56 *b*, 76 *d*), *n. m.*, sir, gentleman, Mr.
monstre, *n. m.*, monster.
mont, *n. m.*, mountain-peak.
montagne, *n. f.*, mountain.
Montébello, *p. n.*, Montebello.
monter, *v. i.*, to go up, come up, ascend; *v. a.*, to be mounted on, ride, raise.
montre, *n. f.*, watch, show.
montrer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to show, point out, teach.
monument, *n. m.*, monument.
moquer (se) (*w. inf.* 245), *v. r.*, to mock, make game of, ridicule.
moral, *n. m.*, mind, spirit; **e**, *adj.*, moral.
mordre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *a*), *v. a.*, to bite, gnaw; *v. i.*, to bite.
mort, *n. f.*, death.
mort, e, *adj.*, dead.
mortel, le, *adj.* & *n.*, mortal.
mortellement, *adv.*, mortally.
Moscovite, *p. n.*
mot (*w.* **ne**, 266 *a*), *n. m.*, word, expression, saying.
motif, *n. m.*, motive, cause, subject.
motion, *n. f.*, motion.
mou, mol (*fem.* 90 *d*), **molle**, *adj.*, soft.
mouchoir, *n. m.*, handkerchief.
moudre (*conj.* 119, no. 38), *v. a.*, to grind, mill.
moule (84 *b*), *n. m.*, mould, cast, matrix.
moule (84 *b*), *n. f.*, muscle.
mourant, e, *adj.*, dying.
mourir (*conj.* 119, no. 9; *w. p ed. nom.* 134 *b*; *w. inf.* 245), *v. i.*, to die; **se** — (216 *c*), to be at the point of death.
mourrai (*pr.* 61 *c*), *fut.* of *mourir*.
mousse (84 *b*), *n. m.*, cabin-boy.
mousse (84 *b*), *n. f.*, moss, froth; *adj.*, blunt.
mouton, *n. m.*, sheep.
mouvement, *n. m.*, motion, movement.
mouvoir (*conj.* 119, no. 15), *v. a.*, to move, stir.

moyen, *n. m.*, means, way, manner; **ne**, *adj.*, mean, middle.
muer, *v. i.*, to moult, mew.
mule, *n. f.*, she-mule.
mulet, *n. m.*, he-mule.
multitude, *n. f.*, multitude, crowd.
Munich (*pr.* 76 *a* 4), *p. n.*
mur, *n. m.*, wall.
mûr, e, *adj.*, ripe, mature.
muraille, *n. f.*, wall, rampart.
murmurer (*w. inf.* 245), *v. i.*, to murmur, grumble; *v. a.*, to mutter, whisper.
Muse, *n. f.*, Muse.
musée, *n. m.*, museum.
musique, *n. f.*, music.
mutuel, le, *adj.*, mutual.
myrtille (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 *α*), *n. f.*, bilberry.
mystère, *n. m.*, mystery.
mystérieux, se, *adj.*, mysterious.

n, *pr.* 61, 78 *a* 2.
nabab (*pr.* 75 *a*), *n. m.*, nabob.
Nabopharsen, *p. n. m.*
nager, *v. i.*, to swim, float, row.
naïf, ve, *adj.*, naïve, artless.
nain, e, *n. m.* or *f.*, & *adj.*, dwarf, dwarfish.
naissance, *n. f.*, birth, beginning, rise.
naître (*conj.* 119, no. 33; *w. pred. nom.* 134 *b* 2), *v. i.*, to be born, arise, dawn.
Napoléon, *p. n. m.*, Napoleon.
Narbal, *p. n. m.*
narval (*pl.* 86 *c* 1), *n. m.*, sea-unicorn.
nation, *n. f.*, nation.
nationalité (*pr.* 39, rem.), *n. f.*, nationality.
nature, *n. f.*, nature.
naturel, le, *adj.*, natural.
naturel, *n. m.*, nature, naturalness, temper.
naval (*pl.* 92 *c* 1), **e**, *adj.*, naval.
-nce, *fem. end.* 83 *b* 2.
ne (*neg. w. verbs* 124 *a*, 266–270), *adv.*, not, no.
ne — que (*hist.* 145 *c* 4, 268 *c*), only.
né, see *naître*.
néanmoins, *adv.*, nevertheless, however.
néant (208 *c*), nothing, naught.
nécessaire, *adj.*, necessary.
nécessairement, *adv.*, necessarily.
nécessiter (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to compel, force, necessitate.
négliger (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to neglect.
nègre, *n. m.*, negro.
négresse, *n. f.*, negress.
neige, *n. f.*, snow.
neiger, *v. i.*, to snow.
nenni (*pr.* 40 *c*; *synt.* 264), *adv.*, no, not at all.
nerf (*pr.* 76 *b*), *n. m.*, nerve, sinew.
n'est-ce pas? (126 *b*, 186 *b* 1 *γ*), is it not (so)?
net (*pr.* 75 *d* 1; *fem.* 90 *c* 1) **te**, *adj.*, clean, clear, plain.
nettoyer, *v. a.*, to clean, scour.
neuf, ve, *adj.*, new.
neuf (*pr.* 77 *a*, cf. 76 *b*), *adj.*, nine.
neuvième (*form.* 96 *a*), *adj.*, ninth.
neveu, *n. m.*, nephew.
nez, *n. m.*, nose.
ni (142 *a*, 252 *c*), *conj.*, neither, nor; ***ni*** . . . ***ni*** (266 *b*, 268, 282 *c*), neither . . . nor.
nid, *n. m.*, nest.
nier (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.*, 244 *a* 4), *v. a.*, to deny.
Nil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1 *γ*), *p. n. m.*, Nile.
noble, *adj.*, noble, great.
noblesse, *n. f.*, nobility, nobleness.
nœud, *n. m.*, knot.
noir (*posit.* 165), **e**, *adj.*, black, gloomy, base.
noisette, *n. f.*, nut, hazel-nut.
noix (*pr.* 49 *b* 2), *n. f.*, nut, walnut, kernel.
nom, *n. m.*, name.
nombre, *n. m.*, number.
nombrer, *v. a.*, to number.
nombreux, se, *adj.*, numerous.
nombril (*pr.* 67 *b* 1 *β*), *n. m.*, navel.

nommer, *v. a.*, to name, call, nominate, elect; **se** — (*w. pred. nom.* 134 *b* 2), to be called.
non (*synt.* 264, 265), *adv.*, no, not; —*pas*, — *point* (265 *a* 2), no, not, not at all; —*plus* (265 *c*), no more, no longer; — *que* (265 *a* 1; *w. subj.* 234 *a* 1, 235 *d*), not that; — *seulement* (142 *d*), not only, not merely.
nonante, *adj.*, ninety (obsolete).
nonchalant (see *chaloir*), **e**, *adj.*, careless.
nonobstant, *prep.*, notwithstanding, in spite of; — *que* (*hist.* 144 *a* 3, *w. subj.* 235 *d*), although, notwithstanding.
nopal (*pl.* 86 *c* 1), *n. m.*, nopal.
nord, *n. m.*, North.
nord-est (*pr.* 78 *a* 4), *n. m.*, North-East.
nord-ouest, *n. m.*, North-West.
normand, **e**, *adj.*, Norman.
nos (*pl.* of *notre*), *poss. adj.*, our.
notion (*pr.* 71 *a* 1), *n. f.*, notion, idea, knowledge.
notre (*forms* 98 *a*), *poss. adj.*, our.
nôtre (*forms* 98 *b*), *poss. pron.*, ours.
nouer, *v. a.*, to tie.
nourrir, *v. a.*, to nourish, nurse.
nous (see *je*; as editorial we, 172 *a*), *pron.*, we, us, to us.
nous-même(s) (180 *g*), *pron.*, ourselves.
nouveau, nouvel (*fem.* 90 *d*), **nouvelle**, *adj.*, new, recent; *de nouveau*, again.
nouvelle, *n. f.*, news, intelligence, novelet.
Nouvelle Orléans, *p. n. f.*, New Orleans.
novembre, *n. m.*, November.
noyer, *v. a.*, to drown.
-nse, *fem. end.* 83 *b* 2.
nu (*agree.* 162 *a* 3), **e**, *adj.*, nude, naked, bare, open.
nuage, *n. m.*, cloud.
nuement or **nûment** (*acc.* 120 *c* 2), *adv.*, openly, nakedly.
nuire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *d*), *v. i.*, to hurt, annoy, wrong.
nuit, *n. f.*, night.
nul (*fem.* 90 *c* 2; *synt.* 199 *b*, 204; *w. ne*, 266 *b*, 267; cf. 192 *b*), **le**, *adj.*, no, none, no one.
nullement (*w. ne*, 268), *adv.*, not at all, by no means.
numéro, *n. m.*, number, house-number.
nu-pieds, *adv.*, barefoot.
nu-tête, *adv.*, bareheaded.
nymphe, *n. f.*, nymph.

o (ô), *pr.* 43; silent 58 *d*.
ô, *interj.*, oh.
obéir (209 *c* 1 *β*; *pass. voice* 217 *a*), *v. i.*, to obey.
objet, *n. m.*, object, subject, thing.
obliger (*w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to oblige, gratify, compel.
oblong (*fem.* 90 *c* 2), **ue**, *adj.*, oblong.
obsour, **e**, *adj.*, dark, obscure.
obscurcir (**s'**), *v. r.*, to darken, grow dark.
obscurément (*acc.* 120 *c* 1), *adv.*, dimly, obscurely.
obscurité, *n. f.*, darkness, obscurity.
observation, *n. f.*, observation.
observer (*w. inf.* 244), to observe, notice.
obstiner, *v. a.*, to make obstinate; **s'** — (*w. inf.* 246), to be obstinate.
obtenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *a*; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to obtain, get.
occasion, *n. f.*, occasion, opportunity, cause.
occiput (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), *n. m.*, occiput.
occupation, *n. f.*, occupation.
occuper (*w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to occupy, employ; **s'** —, to be busy, occupy one's self.
octante, *adj.*, eighty (obsolete).
octobre, *n. m.*, October.
odorat, *n. m.*, smell, sense of smell.
œ, *pr.* 47, rem. 2, 51 *a* 1.
œil (*pl.* 86 *d* 2), *n. m.*, eye.

œillet, *n. m.*, carnation, pink.
œuf (*pr.* 76 *b*, 51 *b* 1), *n. m.*, egg.
œuvre, *n. f.*, work, act.
Offenbach (*pr.* 76 *a* 4), *p. n.*
officier, *n. m.*, officer.
offrir (*conj.* 119, no. 8 *c*; *w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to offer, present.
offusquer, *v. a.*, to obscure, offend.
oh, *interj.*, oh.
oi, *pr.* 49.
oignon (*pr.* 58 *c*), *n. m.*, onion, bulb, bunion.
oin, *pr.* 31 *g* 1, 51 *a* 1.
oindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *c*), *v. a.*, to anoint.
oiseau, *n. m.*, bird.
oisif, ve, *adj.*, idle; *n. m.*, idler.
oison, *n. m.*, gosling, simpleton.
om, *pr. as nas. vow.* 53, 56.
ombre, *n. f.*, shade, shadow.
omettre (*conj.* 119, no. 34; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to omit.
omnibus (*pr.* 56 *a*, 75 *c* 2), *n. m.*, omnibus.
on (85 *b*; *synt.* 199 *c*, 206), *pron.*, one, they, we, people, somebody.
on, *pr. as nas. vow.* 53, 56.
onc (*w.* **ne**, 268), *adv.*, never.
oncle, *n. m.*, uncle.
onde, *n. f.*, wave.
ongle, *n. m.*, nail.
onze (*pr.* 37 *a* 1, rem., 77 *b*, 78 *a* 7), *adj.*, eleven.
onzième, *adj.*, eleventh.
opération, *n. f.*, operation.
opiat (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), *n. m.*, opiate.
opiniâtrément (*acc.* 120 *c* 1), *adv.*, stubbornly, obstinately.
opiniâtrer (s') (*w. inf.* 246), *v. r.*, to be obstinate.
opposer (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1), *v. a.*, to oppose; **s'—**, to be opposed.
or, *n. m.*, gold.
or, *conj.*, now, but.
orage, *n. m.*, storm, tempest.
Orante, *p. n. m.*
orateur, *n. m.*, orator, speaker.
orch-, *pr.* 63 *a* 2.
Ordener, *p. n. m.*
ordinairement, *adv.*, usually.
ordonner (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1, cf. *b* 2; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to ordain, order, direct, prescribe.
ordre, *n. m.*, order, class.
oreille, *n. f.*, ear.
orgue (*gen.* 84 *c* 1), *n. m.* (*pl. f.*) organ.
orgueil, *n. m.*, pride.
orient, *n. m.*, orient, East.
original, e, *adj.*, original, eccentric.
Orléans, *p. n.*
ornement, *n. m.*, ornament.
orphelin, *n. m.*, orphan.
Orso, *p. n. m.*
os, *n. m.*, bone.
-os, *pr.* 75 *c* 2.
osciller (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 *α*), *v. i.*, to oscillate.
oser (*w. inf.* 244; *w.* **ne**, 269 *a*), *v. a.*, to dare, venture; *v. i.*, to dare.
ôter, *v. a.*, to take off, take away, remove.
ou (**où**, **oû**), *pr.* 52.
ou (142 *b*, 282 *b*), *conj.*, or; *ou* ... *ou*, either ... or.
où (144, 145 *b*; as *rel.* 100 *c*, 145 *b* 1, 146, 193 *b*), *adv.*, where? whither? in which, at which.
que (145 *h* 1; *w. subj.* 235 *d* 1), wherever.
ouaille, *n. f.*, sheep.
ouate (*pr.* 39 *c*), *n. f.*, padding.
oublier (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 247 *b* 5), *v. a.*, to forget.
ouest (*pr.* 75 *a* 2 *α*), *n. m.*, West.
oui (*synt.* 264), *adv.*, yes.
ouïr (*conj.* 119, no. 12 *d*; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to hear.
ours (*pr.* 75 *c* 1), *n. m.*, bear.
outil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1 *β*), *n. m.*, tool, implement.
outrager, *v. a.*, to outrage.
ouvrage, *n. m.*, work, performance.
ouvrier, *n. m.*, workman, artisan.
ouvrir (*conj.* 119, no. 8), *v. a.*, to open.
Ovide (*pl.* 87 *a*), *p. n. m.*, Ovid.

p, *pr.* 60, 75 *a*; silent 73 *c*; linked 78 *a* 3.
page, *n. f.*, page; *n. m.*, page.
païen, ne, *n.* & *adj.*, pagan, heathen.
paillasse (*gen.* 84 *a*), *n. m.* clown; *n. f.*, straw mattress.
paille, *n. f.*, straw.
pain, *n. m.*, bread.
pair, *n. m.*, peer, equal; **e**, *adj.*, even, like.
paire, *n. f.*, pair.
paisiblement, *adv.*, peaceably.
paître (*conj.* 119, no. 32 *c*), *v. a.* & *i.*, to graze, feed.
paix, *n. f.*, peace.
pal, *n. m.*, pale.
pâle, *adj.*, pale, wan.
pâlot (*fem.* 90 *c* 2), **te**, *adj.*, palish.
palpitant (*ps. p.* of *palpiter*), **e**, *adj.*, palpitating.
pan, *n. m.*, flap, skirt, side.
panier, *n. m.*, basket.
panthère, *n. f.*, panther.
paon (*pr.* 58 *d*), *n. m.*, peacock.
pape, *n. m.*, pope.
papier, *n. m.*, paper.
papillon, *n. m.*, butterfly.
Pâque (*gen.* 84 *c* 1), *n. m.*, Easter.
par (277, cf. 217 *b*, 272 *b* 2 *α*, 151 *c* 4; *w. inf.*, 252 *c*), *prep.*, by, through, about.
où (145 *b*, 146, 193 *b*), which way.
paraître (*conj.* 119, no. 32; *w. pred. nom.* 134 *b* 2; as *impers.* 214 *b*, 234 *a* 2; *w. inf.* 244), *v. i.*, to appear.
parapluie, *n. m.*, umbrella.
parasol, *n. m.*, parasol.
parceque (*hist.* 144 *c* 2, cf. 186 *a* 2), *conj.*, because.
parcourir (*conj.* 119, no. 7), *v. a.*, to travel over, run over.
pardessus (*pr.* 40 *c* 3), *n. m.*, overcoat.
pardon, *n. m.*, pardon.
pardonner (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to forgive, excuse.
pareil (*fem.* 90 *c* 1), **le**, *adj.*, like, equal.
parent, *n. m.*, **e**, *n. f.*, relative; *pl.*, parents, relatives.
parfaire (*conj.* 119, no. 27 *a*), *v. a.*, to perfect, complete.
parfum, *n. m.*, perfume, fragrance.
parier (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to bet.
Paris, *p. n.*
parlement, *n. m.*, parliament.
parler (*w. inf.* 245), *v. i.*, to speak, converse.
parmi (190 *a* 2 *β*), *prep.*, among.
parole, *n. f.*, word, speech.
parricide, *n. m.* & *adj.*, parricide, murderous.
part, *n. f.*, share, part, side; *quelque* —, somewhere; *autre* —, elsewhere; *nulle* —, nowhere; *de la* — *de*, on the part of.
partager, *v. a.*, to share, divide.
parti, *n. m.*, party, side, cause; *prendre* —, to resolve, decide.
particulier, ère, *adj.*, peculiar, particular.
partie, *n. f.*, part, match, project.
partir (*conj.* 119, no. 3), *v. i.*, to set out, start, go.
partout, *adv.*, everywhere.
parvenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *b*; *w. inf.* 246), *v. i.*, to attain, reach, arrive.
pas (*w.* **ne**, 266 *a*; *posit.* 267 *a*; without **ne**, 267 *c*), *adv.*, not, no; — *du tout* (267 *d*), not at all; — *un* = *aucun* (204), none, not one.
pas, *n. m.*, step, pace, gait.
pascal (*pl.* 92 *c* 1), **e**, *adj.*, paschal.
passage (*pr.* 39, rem.), *n. m.* passage, arcade.
passager, ère, *adj.*, passing, transient.
passer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.* & *i.*, to pass, pass away, cross, die; **se** — (216 *c*, *w. inf.* 245), to do without.
passion, *n. f.*, passion.

pasteur, *n. m.*, pastor, minister, shepherd.
pâte (*pr.* 76 *d* 2), *n. f.*, paste, dough, temper, sort.
pater (*pr.* 76 *d* 2), *n. m.*, Lord's prayer, paternoster.
pathos (*pr.* 75 *c* 2), *n. m.*, pathos.
patience, *n. f.*, patience.
patient (*pr.* 71 *a* 1), **e**, *adj.*, patient.
pâtre (*form.* 85 *b*), *n. m.*, pastor, herdsman.
patricien, **ne**, *adj.*, patrician.
patrie, *n. f.*, country, fatherland.
patriote, *n. m.*, patriot.
Paul (*pr.* 50 *b* 2), *p. n. m.*
pauvre, *adj.*, poor, wretched, sorry.
pauvreté, *n. f.*, poverty.
payer (*conj.* 112 *e* 2), *v. a.*, to pay, reward.
pays (*pr.* 45 *c*, 47, rem. 1), *n. m.*, country, district.
paysage (*pr.* 45 *e*), *n. m.*, landscape.
paysan (*fem.* 90 *c* 2), **ne**, *n. m.* & *f.*, peasant, countryman, countrywoman.
péché, *n. m.*, sin.
Pédrille, *p. n. m.*
peindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *b*), *v. a.*, to paint, describe.
peine, *n. f.*, penalty, pain, trouble, misery ; *à* —, scarcely, with difficulty.
peintre (*form.* 85 *b*), *n. m.*, painter.
peinture, *n. f.*, painting.
peler (*conj.* 112 *c* 2), *v. a.*, to peel, make bald, pare.
Péloponnèse (*gen.* 83 *a* 2), *p. n. m.*, Peloponnesus.
pénal (*pl.* 92 *c* 1), **e**, *adj.*, penal.
Penarvan, *p. n.*
pencher (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.* & *i.*, to incline, lean, bend ; **se** —, to stoop.
pendant, *prep.*, during ; — **que** (*hist.* 144 *c* 3 ; 145 *a*), *conj.*, whilst, while.
pendre (*conj.*, 119, no. 35 *a*), *v. a.*, to hang.
Pénélope, *p. n. f.*, Penelope.
pénétrer, *v. a.*, to penetrate, enter, pierce.
péniblement, *adv.*, painfully, laboriously.
pensée, *n. f.*, thought.
penser (*w. subj.*, 234 *c* 1 ; *w. inf.* 244, 246), *v. i.*, to think, to be of opinion.
penser, *n. m.*, thought, opinion.
pensif, **ve**, *adj*, pensive, thoughtful.
pensum (*pr.* 54 *b* 2 *γ*, 57 *b*), *n. m.*, task, imposition.
pentagone (*pr.* 54 *b* 2 *γ*), *n. m.* & *adj*, pentagon, pentagonal.
percer, *v. a.* & *i.*, to pierce, bore, penetrate.
percevoir (*conj.* 119, no. 13 *a*), *v. a.*, to receive, gather.
percher, *v. i.*, to perch.
perdre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *a* ; *w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to lose.
perdrix, *n. f.*, partridge.
père, *n. m.*, father.
péril (*pr.* 67 *b* 1), *n. m.*, risk, danger, peril.
périlleux, **se**, *adj.*, perilous, dangerous.
périr, *v. i.*, to perish, die, be lost.
permettre (*conj.* 119, no. 34: *w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; with *inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to allow, permit, let.
persécuter, *v. a.*, to persecute, tease.
persévérer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. i.*, to persevere.
persister (*w. inf.* 246), *v. i.*, to persist.
personne, *n. f.*, person, man, woman, child.
personne (199 *c*, 204; *w.* **ne**, 266, 268), *pron.*, no one, nobody, none.
persuader (*w. inf.* 244, 245), *v. a.* & *i.*, to persuade.
perte, *n. f.*, loss, ruin, waste.
peser, *v. a.* & *i.*, to weigh, consider.
petit (*comp.* 94), **e**, *adj.*, small, little.
petitesse, *n. f.*, smallness, meanness, shortness.

petit-fils, *n. m.*, grandson.
petit-maître, *n. m.*, coxcomb.
peu (*comp.* 94), *adv.*, little.
peuple, *n. m.*, people, nation.
peur, *n. f.*, fear.
peut-être, *adv.*, perhaps.
ph, *pr.* 60.
Phébus (*pr.* 75 *c* 2), *p. n.*, Phœbus.
Phèdre, *p. n.*, Phædrus.
philosophe, *n. m.*, philosopher.
philosophie, *n. f.*, philosophy.
piastre, *n. f.*, piaster, dollar.
pic, *n. m.*, pick.
pièce, *n. f.*, piece, room, trick.
pied, *n. m*, foot.
piédestal, *n. m.*, pedestal.
piège or **piége** (acc. 41 *b*, rem. 1), *n. m.*, snare, trap.
pierre, *n. f.*, stone, flint.
Pierre-le grand, *p. n. m.*, Peter the Great.
piété, *n. f.*, piety.
pieux, **se**, *adj.*, pious, holy.
piller, *v. a.*, to pillage.
pin, *n. m.*, pine, pine-tree.
piquer, *v. a.*, to prick, sting, bite; **se** — (*w. inf.* 245), to pride one's self, to be offended.
pire (*comp.* of *mauvais*, 94), *adj.*, worse.
pis (*comp.* of *mal*, 94; as *subst.* 164 *b* 1), *adv.*, worse.
pistolet, *n. m.*, pistol.
pitié, *n. f.*, pity.
pivot, *n. m.*, pivot, pin.
place, *n. f.*, place, seat, room, square.
placer (*conj.* 112 *a* 1), *v. a.*, to place, put, seat.
plafond, *n. m.*, ceiling.
plaie, *n. f.*, wound, sore, plague.
plaindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37), *v. a.*, to pity; **se** — (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), to complain.
plaine, *n. f.*, plain.
plaire (*conj.* 119, no. 24 *b*; as *impers.* 214 *b*), *v. i.*, to please, delight; **se** — (*w. inf.* 246), to delight in.
plaisanter, *v. i.*, to jest, joke.
plaisanterie, *n. f.*, jesting, joking, jest.
plaisir (*pr.* 47 *a* 2), *n. m.*, pleasure, joy.
planche, *n. f.*, board, plank.
plantain (*gen.* 82 *b* 3), *n. m.*, plantain.
plébéien, **ne**, *adj.*, plebeian.
plein, **e**, *adj.*, full, filled.
pleinement, *adv.*, fully.
pleurs, *n. m. pl.*, tears.
pleurer, *v. a.* & *i.*, to cry, weep, bewail, mourn.
pleuvoir (*conj.* 119, no. 14), *v. i.*, to rain.
plier *v. a.* & *i.*, to bend, fold, yield; **se** — (*w. inf.* 246), to bend, bow.
Pline (*pl.* 87 *a*), *p. n. m.*, Pliny.
plomb, *n. m.*, lead, shot, plummet.
pluie, *n. f.*, rain.
plume, *n. f.*, pen, feather.
plupart, *n. f.*, most, greater part.
plus (in *comp.* 93; *comp.* of *beaucoup*, 94; *w.* **ne**, 266–268), *adv.*, more, moreover; *plus* . . . *plus* (157 *d*), the more . . . the more.
plusieurs (199 *b*), *pron.*, several, many.
Pluton, *p. n. m.*, Pluto.
plutôt *adv.*, rather, sooner.
poêle (84 *b*), *n. f.*, frying-pan; *n. m.*, stove.
poème, *n. m.*, poem.
poésie, *n. f.*, poesy, poetry.
poète, *n. m.*, poet.
poétique, *adj.*, poetic.
poids (*pr.* 49 *b* 2), *n. m.*, weight, burden.
poignard (*pr.* 58 *c*), *n. m.*, dagger, poniard.
poignée (*pr.* 58 *c*), *n. f.*, handful, handle, hilt.
poignet (*pr.* 58 *c*), *n. m.*, wrist.
poil (*pr.* 67 *b* 2 *a*), *n. m.*, hair.
poindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *c*), *v. a.* & *i.*, to sting, dawn, break.
point, *n. m.*, point.
point (*w.* **ne**, 266 *a*; *posit.* 267 *a*, *b*; without **ne**, 267 *c*), *adv.*, no,

not, not-at-all; — *du tout* (267 *d*; see *pas*), not at all.
pois (*pr.* 49 *b* 2), *n. m.*, pea.
poison, *n. m.*, poison.
poisson, *n. m.*, fish.
poitrine, *n. f.*, breast, chest.
poli, **e**, polished, polite, refined.
police, *n. m.*, police.
poliment, *adv.*, politely.
politique, *n. m.*, politician; *n. f.*, politics; *adj.*, politic.
Pollux, *p. n. m.*
polonais, **e**, *adj.*, Polish.
pondre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *a*), *v. a.*, to lay eggs.
pont, *n. m.*, bridge, deck.
populaire, *adj.*, popular, vulgar.
porc (*pr.* 76 *a* 1), *n. m.*, hog, pig, pork.
port, *n. m.*, port, haven.
porte, *n. f.*, door, gate.
porte-monnaie (*pl.* 88 *c*), *n. m.*, flat purse.
porter (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to carry, bear, bring; **se** —, to be, do.
portier, *n. m.*, porter, door-keeper.
portière, *n. f.*, curtain before a door, coach-door.
portrait, *n. m.*, portrait, likeness, picture.
posé que (*hist.* 144 *c* 1; *w. subj.* 235 *c*), agreed that; — *le cas que* (*hist.* 144 *c*), supposing that.
poser, *v. a.*, to place, set, suppose, grant.
position, *n. f.*, position, situation.
posséder, *v. a.*, to possess, own.
possible *adj.*, possible, utmost.
postérité, *n. f.*, posterity.
post-scriptum (*pl.* 88 *c*), *n. m.*, post-scriptum.
pot, *n. m.*, jug, pot, tankard.
pou (*pl.* 86 *b* 1), *n. m.*, louse.
pouding (*pr.* 75 *a*), *n. m.*, pudding.
poudre, *n. f.*, dust, powder.
pouls (*pr.* 76 *c*), *n. m.*, pulse.
pour (278; instead of *pred. nom.* 161 *f* 2; *w. inf.* 252 *d*), *prep.*, for, towards, in order to; — *que* (*hist.* 144 *c* 1; *w. subj.* 235 *b*), in order that; — . . . *que* (145 *h*; *w. subj.* 235 *d* 2), however, although.
pour-boire (*pl.* 88 *c*), *n. m.*, tip, gratuity.
pourquoi, *adv.*, why; *c'est* —, that is why, therefore.
pourrai (*pr.* 61 *c*), *fut.* of *pouvoir*.
poursuivre (*conj.* 119, no. 41), *v. a.*, to pursue, hunt, chase.
pourtant, *adv.*, however, yet, still.
pourvoir (*conj.* 119, no. 20 *c*), *v. a.* & *i.*, to see to, look to, provide, supply.
pourvu que (*hist.* 144 *e* 3; *w. subj.* 235 *c*), provided that.
pousser (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.* & *i.*, to push, drive on, sprout, shoot.
poussière, *n. f.*, dust.
poutre, *n. f.*, beam, mote.
pouvoir (*conj.* 119, no. 16; *quasi-auxil.* 203 *b* 2; *w. inf.* 244; *w.* **ne**, 269 *a*; *impers. w. subj.* 234 *a* 1), *v. i.*, to be able, can, may.
pouvoir, *n. m.*, power, authority.
Prague, *p. n. f.*
prairie, *n. f.*, meadow.
pré, *n. m.*, meadow.
précéder, *v. a.*, to precede.
précieux, **se**, *adj.*, precious, costly, valuable.
précipice, *n. m.*, precipice.
précipiter *v. a.*, to precipitate, throw; **se** —, hurry, rush.
précisément (*acc.* 120 *c* 1), *adv.*, precisely.
préconnaître (*conj.* 119, no. 32 *b*), *v. a.*, to foreknow.
prédire (*conj.* 119, no. 26 *a* (*w. subj.* 234 *e* 1), *v. a.*, to predict.
préférence, *n. f.*, preference, choice.
préférer (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to prefer, choose.
préfix (*pr.* 75 *a*; *fem.* 90 *b* 2), **e**, *n. m.* & *adj.*, prefix, prefixed.
prélire (*conj.* 119, no. 24 *a*), *v. a.*, to read a first time.

prémices, *n. f. pl.*, first-fruits.
premier, ère, *adj.*, first.
prendre (*conj.* 119, no. 36; *w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to take, seize; — *garde, soin*, etc. (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), to take care, etc.; — *plaisir*, etc., (*w. inf.* 246), to take pleasure, etc.
préparatif, *n. m.*, preparation.
préparer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to prepare, get ready.
près, *prep.*, near, almost; *à peu près*, almost; — *de* (*w. inf.* 251), near.
prescrire (*conj.* 119, no. 25; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to prescribe, order.
préséance, *n. f.*, precedence.
présence, *n. f.*, presence, sight, view.
présent, e, *adj.*, present; *à* —, at present, now.
présent, *n. m.*, present, gift.
présentement (*form.* 120 *a* 2 α), *adv.*, now, at present.
présenter, *v. a.*, to present, offer, introduce.
préserver, *v. a.*, to preserve, keep.
président, *n. m.*, president.
présomptif, ve, *adj.*, presumptive.
presque, *adv.*, almost, nearly.
pressentir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *a*; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to have a presentiment.
presser (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to press, hurry, crowd, throng; **se** —, to hurry, press.
présumer (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 244, *a* 4, 245), *v. a.*, to presume, conjecture).
prêt (*w. inf.* 249 *b*), **e**, *adj.*, ready.
prétendant, *n. m.*, suitor.
prétendre (*conj.* 119, no. 35; *w. subj.* 234 *b* 1, *c* 1; *w. inf.* 244, 246), *v. a.*, to claim, pretend, mean.
prêter, *v. a.*, to lend, loan, give.
préterit (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), *n. m.*, preterit.
prêtre (*form.* 85 *b*), *n. m.*, priest.
prévaloir (*conj.* 119, no. 18 *a*), *v. i.*, to prevail.
prévenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *b*), *v. a.*, to go before, precede, anticipate.
prévoir (*conj.* 119, no. 20 *b*; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to foresee.
Priam (*pr.* 54 *a* 1); *p. n. m.*
prier (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1, *w. inf.* 245, 246), *v. a.*, to pray, entreat, beg.
prière, *n. f.*, prayer, request, entreaty.
primo, *adv.*, first, firstly.
prince, *n. m.*, prince.
princesse, *n. f.*, princess.
principe, *n. m.*, principle, source, outset, origin.
printemps, *n. m.*, spring; *au* — (276 *b* 2 α), in the spring.
prix, *n. m.*, prize, price, reward.
probable, *adj.*, probable.
problème, *n. m.*, problem.
procès, *n. m.*, lawsuit, action, trial, process.
prochain, e, *adj.*, neighboring, next; *n. m.* or *f.*, neighbor.
proche, *adj.*, near, next, neighboring.
proclamer (*pr.* 39 *b* 5), *v. a.*, to proclaim, cry out.
prodige, *n. m.*, prodigy, wonder.
prodiguer, *v. a.*, to lavish, squander.
produire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *a*), *v. a.*, to produce.
profès (*fem.* 90 *c* 2), **se**, *adj.*, professed; *n. m.* or *f.*, professed friar, professed nun.
professer (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to profess, practice.
profession, *n. f.*, profession.
profil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1), *n. m.*, profile.
profiter (*w. inf.* 245), *v. i.*, to profit, gain.
profond, e, *adj.*, deep, profound.
profondément (*acc.* 120 *c* 1), *adv.*, profoundly, deeply.
progrès, *n. m.*, progress.
proie, *n. f.*, prey.
projet, *n. m.*, plan, project.

projeter (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to plan, project.
promenade, *n. f.*, walk, promenade.
promener, *v. a.*, to cast, turn (the eyes); **se** —, *v. r.*, to walk, take a walk, promenade.
promeneur, *n. m.*, walker, pedestrian.
promesse, *n. f.*, promise.
promettre (*conj.* 119, no. 34; *w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to promise.
promouvoir (*conj.* 119, no. 15 *a*), *v. a.*, to promote, advance.
prompt (*w. inf.* 249 *b*), **e**, *adj.*, quick, ready, prompt.
promptement, *adv.*, quickly, promptly.
promptitude, *n. f.*, quickness, promptness.
prononcer, *v. a.*, to pronounce, utter.
prophète, *n. m.*, prophet.
propos, *n. m.*, discourse, talk, subject, occasion.
proposer (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to propose.
propre (*w. inf.* 249 *b*), *adj.*, own, very, adapted, clean, fitted.
propriété, *n. f.*, property.
proscrire (*conj.* 119, no. 25), *v. a.*, to proscribe, outlaw.
protéger, *v. a.*, to protect.
protester (*with inf.* 244, *a* 4, 245), *v. a. & i.*, to protest, vow.
provenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *b*), *v. i.*, to proceed, spring, accrue.
proverbe, *n. m.*, proverb, saying.
province, *n. f.*, province.
provincial, **e**, *adj.*, provincial, country-like.
provision, *n. f.*, provision.
provoquer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to provoke, incense.
proximité, *n. f.*, proximity, nearness.
prude, *n. f. & adj.*, prude, prudish.
prudemment, *adv.*, prudently.
prudence, *n. f.*, prudence.
prudent, **e**, *adj.*, prudent.
public (*fem.* 90 *c* 2), **que**, *adj.*, public.
publier (*w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to publish.
pucelle, *n. f.*, maid; *p. n. f.*, the Maid of Orleans.
pudeur, *n. f.*, bashfulness, shame, modesty.
puéril (*pr.* 67 *b* 1), **e**, *adj.*, juvenile, boyish.
puis, *adv.*, then, next, afterwards.
puis, see *pouvoir*.
puisque (*hist.* 144 *c*, 232 *b*, 145 *f*), *conj.*, since.
puissance, *n. f.*, power.
puissant, **e**, powerful.
puits, *n. m.*, well, pit, shaft.
punir (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to punish.
punition, *n. f.*, punishment.
pupille (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 *α*), *n. m.* or *f.*, pupil, ward, apple of the eye.
pur, **e**, *adj.*, pure, clean, genuine.
pusillanime (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 *α*), *adj.*, pusillanimous.
Pyrrhus, *p. n. m.*

q, *pr.* 68, 75 *b*; **qu** interchanged *w.* **c**, 68 *a* 1.
quadrat (*pr.* 68 *b*), *n. m. & adj.*, quadrat.
quadri-, **quadru-**, *pr.* 68 *b*.
quai (*pr.* 47 *a* 2), *n. m.*, quay, wharf.
quaker, *n. m.*, quaker.
qualifier (idiom 272 *a* 6 *α*), *v. a.*, to qualify, call; **se** —, to call one's self.
qualité, *n. f.* quality.
quand, *conj.*, when.
même (145 *a* 1), even though.
quant (à), *adv.* as (to), in regard (to), as (for); *adj.*, in *quantes fois* (208 *b*), as many times as.
quantième, *n. m.*, day, day of the month (cf. 168 *a* 1).
quantité, *n. f.*, quantity, number.
quarante, *adj.*, forty.
quart (167 *d*), *n. m.*, quarter, fourth; *adj.*, fourth.

quarto (*pr.* 68 *b*), *adv.*, fourthly.
quatorze, *adj.*, fourteen.
quatre, *adj.*, four.
quatre-vingts (95 *d*), *adj.*, eighty.
que (100, 190 *b*; pleonastic 132 *c*, 283, rem. 2), *rel. pron.*, whom, that, which, what.
que (101, 197 *b*), *inter. pron.*, what? *adv.*, how? why?
que (introducing subst. clauses 144, cf. 145 *c*, 283, 232 *a*, *b*; introducing adv. clauses 145, cf. 235, 283, 245 *d*), *conj.*, that, etc.
quel (*forms* 101 *c*; *synt.* 196), **le**, *adj.*, what?
que (145 *h* 1, 194 *a*, 235 *d* 1), whatever.
quelconque (199 *a*), *adj.*, whatever, any.
quelque (199 *a*, 203), *indef. adj.*, some, any, a few, whatever.
chose (203), something; **quelqu'un** (199 *a*, 203), some one, somebody.
... **que** (introducing concessive clauses, 145 *h* 1, 203 *a*, 235 *d* 2), whatever, however.
quelquefois, *adv.*, sometimes.
quérir (*conj.* 119, no. 11 *a*). *v. a.*, to fetch.
querre, see *guérir*.
qu'est ce qui (198 *a*), what? (*as subj.*).
question, *n. f.*, question.
qui (*forms* 100 *a*, *synt.* 190 *a*, 191 *c*), *rel. pron.*, who, which, whoever, what.
que (introducing concessive clauses 145 *h* 1, 194 *a*; *w. subj.* 235 *d* 1), whoever.
que ce soit (268 *e*), any person whatever.
qui (*forms* 101 *b*; *synt.* 197 *a*; as *indef. qui . . . qui* 197 *a* 2), *inter. pron.*, who? whom?
quiconque (194), *pron.*, whoever, whosoever.
quint (167 *d*), *adj.*, fifth.
quintette (*pr.* 68 *b*), *n. m.*, quintette.
quintuple (*pr.* 68 *b*), *n. m.* & *adj.*, quintuple, fivefold.
quinzaine, *n. f.*, fortnight.
quinze, *adj.*, fifteen.
quitte (*w. inf.* 251), *adj.*, discharged, quit, free.
quitter, *v. a.*, to quit, leave.
quoi (100; *synt.* 191), *rel. pron.*, which, what.
que (introducing successive clauses, 145 *h* 1, 194 *a*; *w. subj.* 235 *d* 1), whatever.
que ce soit (268 *e*), anything whatever.
quoi (101 *b* 1; *synt.* 197 *c*; *in exclam.* 197 *c* 1), *inter. pron.*, what?
quoique (*hist.* 144 *c*, 232 *b*; *w. subj.* 235 *d*), *conj.*, though, although.

r, *pr.* 61, 74, 76 *d*, cf. 32 *b*.
rabattre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *b*), *v. a.*, to bring down, lower, abate.
race, *n. f.*, race, breed.
Rachel (*art.* 152 *b* 5), *p. n. f.*
Racine (*pl.* 87 *a*), *p. n.*
racine, *n. f.*, root.
raconter (*w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to relate, tell.
radoub (*pr.* 75 *a*), *n. m.*, repair.
raffinement, *n. m.*, refinement.
rage, *n. f.*, rage, fury, mania, rabies.
raide, *adj.*, stiff, tight, steep.
raisin (*pr.* 47 *a* 2), *n. m.*, grape.
raison, *n. f.*, reason, sense, satisfaction.
ramage, *n. m.*, chirping, warbling, prattle.
ramasser, *v. a.*, to pick up.
rang, *n. m.*, row, rank.
Raphaël (*pl.* 87 *a*), *p. n. m.*
rappeler (se) (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 244, *a* 4, 245), *v. r.*, to remember, recall, recollect.
rapporter (*w. inf.* 244), *v. a.* & *i.*, to carry back, recall; **se —**, to refer.
rapprendre (*conj.* 119, no. 36 *a*), *v. a.*, to learn again.
rapt (*pr.* 77 *d* 2 *γ*), *n. m.*, rape, abduction.
rare, *adj.*, rare.

raser, *v. a.*, to shave, pull down.
rassasier (se) (*w. inf.* 245), *v. r.*, to satiate, fill.
rasseoir (*conj.* 119, no. 21 *b*), *v. a.*, to seat again, settle, calm.
rat, *n. m.*, rat.
ratteindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *b*), *v. a.*, to overtake, catch again.
ravi (*w. inf.* 249 *a*), **e**, *p. p.* of *ravir*, transported, enchanted, delighted.
ravoir (*conj.* 105), *v. a.*, to have again, get back.
réaction, *n. f.*, reaction.
réalité, *n. f.*, reality.
rebattre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *b*), *v. a.*, to beat again, repeat.
rebelle, *n. m.* or *f.*, *adj.*, rebel, rebellious.
rébellion, *n. f.*, rebellion.
reboire (*conj.* 119, no. 29 *a*), *v. a.*, to drink again.
rebouillir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *c*), *v. i.*, to boil again.
rebuter (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to repulse, reject.
récemment (*pr.* 40 *c*), *adv.*, recently.
recevoir (*conj.* 119, no. 13), *v. a.*, to receive.
récit, *n. m.*, account, recital.
réclamer (*pr.* 39 *b* 5), *v. a.* & *i.*, to entreat, implore, reclaim, oppose, object,
reclure (*conj.* 119, no. 23 *b*), *v. a.*, to shut up, confine.
recommander (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to recommend, enjoin.
recommencer (*w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to begin again.
recompenser (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to recompense, reward.
réconcilier, *v. a.*, to reconcile, conciliate.
reconduire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *a*), *v. a.*, to reconduct, lead back, show out.
reconnaître (*conj.* 119, no. 32 *b*; *w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 244, *a* 4), *v. a.*, to know, recognize.
reconquérir (*conj.* 119, no. 11 *b*), *v. a.*, to reconquer.
reconstruire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *b*), *v. a.*, to reconstruct.
recoudre (*conj.* 119, no. 39 *a*), *v. a.*, to sew again.
recourir (*conj.* 119, no. 7), *v. i.*, to apply to, have recourse to, run again.
recouvrir (*conj.* 119, no. 8 *b*), *v. a.*, to cover again, mask, hide.
récrire (*conj.* 119, no. 25), *v. a.*, to write over again.
recroître (*conj.* 119, no. 31 *a*), *v. i.*, to grow again.
rectangle, *n. m.*, rectangle.
recueillement, *n. m.*, contemplation, meditation.
recueillir (*conj.* 119, no. 5 *a*), *v. a.*, to gather, reap.
recuire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *c*), *v. a.*, to cook again.
redébattre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *b*), *v. a.*, to debate again.
redéfaire (*conj.* 119, no. 27 *a*), *v. a.*, to undo again.
redescendre (*conj.* 119, no. 35), *v. a.* & *i.*, to take down again, go down again.
redevenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *b*), *v. i.*, to become again.
redevoir (*conj.* 119, no. 13 *b*), *v. a.*, to owe still.
redingote, *n. f.*, frock-coat, great-coat.
redire (*conj.* 119, no. 26), *v. a.*, to repeat, find fault.
redormir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *a*), *v. i.*, to sleep again.
redoubler, *v. a.* & *i.*, to redouble, increase.
redoutable, *adj.*, formidable.
redoutir (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to fear.
reduire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *a*; *w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to reduce, subdue; **se** —, to be reduced.
réel, **le**, *adj.*, real.
réélire (*conj.* 119, no. 24), *v. a.*, to re-elect.
refaire (*conj.* 119, no. 27 *a*), *v. a.*, to do again, remake.
refendre (*conj.* 119, no. 35), *v. a.*, to cleave again, split again.

refleurir, *v. i.*, to blossom again, flourish again.
refondre (*conj.* 119, no. 35), *v. a.*, to melt again, recast.
refrire (*conj.* 119, no. 26 *c*), *v. a.*, to fry again.
réfugier (se) (216 *c*), *v. r.*, to take refuge.
refuir (*conj.* 119, no. 4), *v. i.*, to double.
refuser (*w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to refuse.
régal (*pl.* 86 *c* 1), *n. m.*, feast, treat, pleasure.
regard, *n. m.*, look, regard, glance.
regarder (*w. inf.* 244), *v. a. & i.*, to look at, consider, regard, concern.
régiment, *n. m.*, regiment.
règle, *n. f.*, rule, order, model.
régler, *v. a.*, to rule, regulate.
Regnard (*pr.* 73 *b*), *p. n. m.*
Regnaud, **-ld**, **-lt** (*pr.* 73 *b*), *p. n. m.*
règne, *n. m.*, reign.
régner, *v. i.*, to reign.
regret, *n. m.*, regret.
regretter (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to regret.
rehausser, *v. a.*, to raise, enrich, set off.
reine, *n. f.*, queen.
rejeter, *v. a.*, to reject, throw back, throw again.
rejoindre, (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *c*), *v. a.*, to re-unite, join again.
réjouir (se) (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1, *w. inf.* 245), *v. r.*, to rejoice.
relâche, *n. m.*, intermission, rest, no performance.
relation, *n. f.*, relation, account.
relever, *v. a. & i.*, to raise again, restore, relieve, set off, recover.
religion, *n. f.*, religion.
relire (*conj.* 119, no. 24), *v. a.*, to read again.
reluire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *e*), *v. i.*, to shine, glitter.
remarque, *n. f.*, remark, notice.
remarquer (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1), *v. a.*, to note, observe, notice, mark again.
remercier (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to thank.
remerciments, *n. m. pl.*, thanks.
remettre (*conj.* 119, no. 34), *v. a.*, to put back, restore, wear again; **se** —, to recover.
remonter, *v. a. & i.*, to reascend, remount, rise again.
remordre (*conj.* 119, no. 35), *v. a. & i.*, to bite again, torment.
remoudre (*conj.* 119, no. 38 *a*), *v. a.*, to grind again.
rémoudre (*conj.* 119, no. 38 *a*), to sharpen again.
remourir (*conj.* 119, no. 9 *a*), *v. a.*, to die again.
remplacer, *v. a.*, to replace.
remplir, *v. a.*, to fill.
remporter, *v. a.*, to carry off, carry back.
remuer, *v. a.*, to move, stir, rouse.
renaissance, *n. f.*, re-birth, revival.
renaître (*conj.* 119, no. 33 *a*), *v. i.*, to be born again, rise again.
renard, *n. m.*, fox.
rencontrer, *v. a.*, to meet, meet with.
rendormir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *a*), *v. a.*, to lull, put to sleep.
rendre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *a*), *v. a.*, to give back, return, make, render.
rêne, *n. f.*, rein.
renfermer, *v. a.*, to shut up, confine.
renommée, *n. f.*, fame, renown.
renommer, *v. a.*, to re-elect, name again, make famous.
renoncer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to renounce, give up.
renouer, *v. a.*, to knot again, tie again, resume.
rentier, *n. m.*, stockholder, independent gentleman.
rentraire (*conj.* 119, no. 28 *a*), *v. a.*, to darn.
rentrer (*w. inf.* 244), *v. a. & i.*, to enter again, return, take in, bring in.

renverser, *v. a.*, to reverse, turn upside down.
renvoyer (*conj.* 119, no. 2 *a*), *v. a.*, to send again, return, send back, dismiss.
repaître (*conj.* 119, no. 32 *a*), *v. a.*, to feed, nourish.
répandre (*conj.* 119, no. 35), *v. a.* & *i.*, to spill, shed, scatter, bestow.
reparaître (*conj.* 119, no. 32 *a*), *v. i.*, to reappear.
réparer, *v. a.*, to repair, mend, atone for.
repartir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *a*), *v. i.*, to set out again, reply, answer.
répartir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *b*), *v. a.*, to divide.
repeindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *b*), *v. a.*, to paint again.
repentir (se) (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *a*; *w. inf.* 245), *v. r.*, to repent.
reperdre (*conj.* 119, no. 35), *v. a.*, to lose again.
replet (*fem.* 90 *c* 1 *α*), **ète**, *adj.*, stout, bulky.
répondre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *a*; *w. subj.* 234 *c* 1), *v. i.*, to answer, reply.
réponse, *n. f.*, reply, response.
reporter, *v. a.*, to carry back.
reporter (*pr.* **repǫrtǫ̃r**), *n. m.*, reporter.
repos, *n. m.*, repose, rest.
reposer, *v. a.* & *i.*, to place again, lay again; rest, lie, repose.
reprendre (*conj.* 119, no. 36 *a*; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to take again, resume.
représentation, *n. f.*, representation.
représenter, *v. a.*, to represent.
reprimander (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to reprimand, rebuke.
reprimant, e, *adj.*, repressive.
reproche, *n. m.*, reproach, expostulation.
reprocher (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to reproach, rebuke.
reproduire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *a*), *v. a.*, to produce again, reproduce.
repromettre (*conj.* 119, no. 34), *v. a.*, to promise again.
républicain, e, *adj.*, republican.
république, *n. f.*, republic.
répugner (*w. inf.* 246), *v. i.*, to be repugnant, be contrary.
requérir (*conj.* 119, no. 11 *b*; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to request, beg, require.
réservé, e, *adj.*, reserved, cautious.
réserver (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to reserve, save.
résigner (se) (*w. inf.* 246), *v. r.*, to submit, resign one's self.
resistance, *n. f.*, resistance.
résister, *v. i.*, to resist, oppose.
résolu, e, *adj.*, resolved on, decided.
résolument, *adv.*, resolutely.
résolution, *n. f.*, resolution, decision, solution.
résoudre (*conj.* 119, no. 40; *w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to resolve, solve, melt.
respect (*pr.* 75 *d* 2*β*), *n. m.*, respect, regard.
respecter, *v. a.*, to respect, revere.
respirer, *v. a.* & *i.*, to breathe, respire, inhale.
responsabilité, *n. f.*, responsibility.
ressembler (*pr.* 40 *c* 3), *v. i.*, to resemble, be like.
ressentiment, *n. m.*, resentment, attack.
ressentir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *a*), *v. a.*, to feel, experience, show.
ressortir (*pr.* 40 *c* 3; *conj.* 119, no. 3 *a*), *v. i.*, to go out again.
ressortir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *b*), *v. i.*, to be appealable to a court.
ressouvenir (se) (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *b*; *w. inf.* 245), *v. i.*, to remember.
restaurant, *n. m.*, restaurant.
rester (*w. inf.* 246; *impers. w.*

pred. nom. 34 *b* 2), *v. i.*, to remain, stay.
restreindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *b*), *v. a.*, to restrict, limit.
résulter (*impers.* 214 *b*; *w. indic.* 234 *a* 2), *v. i.*, to result, follow.
résumer, *v. a.*, to sum up.
rétablir, *v. a.*, to restore, repair.
rétard, *n. m.*, delay; **de retard**, late, behind time.
retarder, *v. a.*, to retard, set back; *v. i.*, to go slow (of clocks).
reteindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *b*), *v. a.*, to dye again.
retendre (*conj.* 119, no. 35), *v. a.*, to bend again, stretch again.
retenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *a*; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to get again, retain, keep.
retentissant, e, *adj.*, resounding.
retirer, *v. a.*, to draw again, withdraw; **se —**, to retire, withdraw.
retondre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *a*), *v. a.*, to shear again.
retordre (*conj.* 119 no. 35), *v. a.*, to twist again.
retour, *n m.*, return.
retourner (*w. inf.* 244), *v. a. & i.*, to return, go again, turn over.
retraire (*conj.* 119, no. 28 *a*), *v. a.*, to redeem (an estate).
retrait, *n. m.*, withdrawal, redemption.
retraite, *n. f.*, retreat, refuge, retirement.
retrouver, *v. a.*, to find again, recover.
réussir (*w. inf.* 246), *v. i.*, to succeed, prosper.
revaloir (*conj.* 119, no. 18 *a*), *v.a.*, to return like for like, be even with.
rêve, *n. m.*, dream, vision.
révéler, *v. a.*, to reveal, disclose.
revendre (*conj.* 119, no. 35), *v. a.*, to sell again.
revenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *b*; *w. inf.* 244, 245), *v. i.*, to come again, recover, be restored.
revenu, *n. m.*, income, revenue.
rêver (*w. inf.* 247 *d* 6), *v. i.*, to dream, rave, think.
révéré, e, *p. p.* of *révérer*, revered.
rêverie, *n. f.*, musing, revery.
revers, *n. m.*, back, reverse.
revêtir (*conj.* 119, no. 6), *v. a.*, to clothe, invest, dress.
revivre (*conj.* 119, no. 42), *v. i.*, to revive.
revoir (*conj.* 119, no. 20 *a*), *v. a.*, to see again, review.
révolution, *n. f.*, revolution.
revue, *n. f.*, review, magazine, survey.
rh, *pr.* 66 *b*.
Rheims (*pr.* 75 *c* 3), *p. n.*
rhéteur, *n. m.*, rhetorician.
Rhin, *p. n. m.*, Rhine.
rhum (*pr.* 57 *b*), *n. m.*, rum.
riche, *adj.*, rich.
Richelieu, *p. n.*
richesse, *n. m.*, riches.
ridicule, *n. m. & adj.*, ridicule, ridiculous.
rien (199 *c*, 204; *w.* **ne**, 266, 268; *posit.* 267 *a*, *b*), *indef. pron.*, nothing, anything; *n. m.*, trifle.
rigoureux, se, *adj.*, rigorous, stern.
rimant, *pres. part.*, rhyming.
rime, *n. f.*, rhyme.
rire (*conj.* 119, no. 23; *w. inf.*, 245), *v. i.*, to laugh.
rire, *n. m.*, laughter.
ris, *n. m.*, laugh, smile.
risquer (*w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to risk, venture.
rivage, *n. m.*, shore, beach, bank.
rive, *n. f.*, shore, bank.
rivière, *n. f.*, river.
robe, *n. f.*, dress, robe, gown.
roche, *n. f.*, rock.
Rochelle (*art.* 152 *a*), *p. n. f.*
Rodrique, *p. n. m.*, Roderick.
roi, *n. m.*, king.
roide (*pr.* 49 *d*), *adj.*, stiff, tight, steep.
rôle, *n. m.*, roll, part, character.
romain, e, *adj.*, Roman.
roman, *n. m.*, novel, romance.
rompre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *c*), *v. a.*, to break, dissolve.

rose, *n. f.*, rose.
roseau, *n. m.*, reed.
rosser, *v. a.*, to thrash, belabor.
rossignol, *n. m.*, nightingale.
rôti, *n. m.*, roast.
rouge, *adj.*, red.
rouge-gorge, *n. m.*, redbreast.
rougir (*w. inf.* 245), *v. i.*, to blush, color, redden.
rouler, *v. a.*, to roll, wind, revolve.
route, *n. f.*, road, way, route.
rouvrir (*conj.* 119, no. 8 *a*), *v. a.*, to open again.
roux (*fem.* 90 *b* 1), **sse**, *adj.*, reddish.
royal, **e**, *adj.*, royal.
royaume, *n. m.*, kingdom.
royauté, *n. f.*, royalty.
rr, *pr.* 61 *c*.
Rubens (*pr.* 54 *b* 2 *γ*, 75 *c* 3), *p. n.*
rude, *adj.*, rough, harsh, hard.
rue, *n. f.*, street.
ruer, *v. i.*, to kick.
ruine, *n. f.*, ruin, decay, overthrow.
ruiner, *v. a.*, to ruin, spoil.
ruisseau, *n. m.*, stream, brook, rivulet.
rumeur, *n. f.*, report, rumor.

s, *pr.*, 69, 75 *c*.
sa, *fem.* of *son*, his, her, its.
Sabine, *p. n. f.*
sabre, *n. m.*, sabre.
sacrifice, *n. m.*, sacrifice.
sacrifier, *v. a.*, to sacrifice.
sacrilège, *n. m.*, sacrilege.
sacristain, *n. m.*, sexton.
sage (*posit.* 165 *c*), *adj.*, sage, wise, steady, well-behaved.
sagesse, *n. f.*, wisdom, goodness.
saigner, *v. a.*, to bleed.
saillir (*conj.* 119, no. 5 *b*), *v. i.*, to project, jut out.
saint, *n. m.*, saint.
Sainte-Beuve, *p. n.*
Saint Jean (*art.* 152 *b* 6), *p. n. m.*, Saint John.
Saint-Michel (*art.* 152 *b* 6), *p. n. m.*, Saint Michael.
Saint-Pierre, *p. n. m.*, Saint Peter.
sais, **sait** (*pr.* 47 *a* 2), see *savoir*.
saisir, *v. a.*, to seize, catch, take.
saison, *n. f.*, season.
salaire, *n. m.*, wages, hire, pay.
salle, *n. f.*, hall, room.
Salomon, *p. n. m.*, Solomon.
salpêtre, *n. m.*, saltpetre.
saluer, *v. a.*, to salute, greet.
samedi, *n. m.*, Saturday.
Sanche, *p. n.*, Sancho.
sang, *n. m.*, blood.
sanglant, **e**, *adj.*, bloody.
sanglier, *n. m.*, wild-boar.
sans (274 *a* 1; *w. inf.* 251 *e*; repeated 281; *w. neg.* 268 *b*, 204 *e*, 281 *b*), *prep.*, without.
que (*hist.* 144 *c* 1; *w. subj.* 235 *c*), *conj.*, without.
santé, *n. f.*, health.
Saone (*pr.* 58 *a*), *p. n. f.*
satiété (*pr.* 71 *a* 3), *n. f.*, surfeit, satiety.
satisfaction, *n. f.*, satisfaction.
satisfaire (*conj.* 119, no. 27 *a*), *v. a.*, to satisfy, please.
satisfait (*w. inf.* 249 *a*), **e**, *adj.*, contented, satisfied.
sauf (*w. inf.* 251), *prep.*, save, except.
sauter, *v. i.*, to leap, jump; *faire* —, to blow up.
sauvage, *n. m.* & *adj.*, savage.
sauver, *v. a.*, to save, rescue; **se** —, to escape; run away.
sauveur, *n. m.*, saver, deliverer, Saviour.
savant, **e**, *adj.* & *n.*, learned, scholar; learned person.
savoir (*conj.* 119, no. 17; *as mod. auxil.* 213 *b* 4; *w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; **sache** in phrases, 236 *c*, 233 *a*; *w. inf.* 244; *w.* **ne**, 269 *a*), *v. a.*, to know, be able.
Saxon, *p. n. m.*
se, *pr.* 70 *a*.
scandale, *n. m.*, scandal, offence.
scandaliser, *v. a.*, to scandalize; **se** — (*w. inf.* 245), to be scandalized.
scélérat, **e**, *adj.* nefarious; *n.* villain, scoundrel.
scène, *n. f.*, scene, stage.
sch, *pr.* 70 *b*.

schène (*pr.* 70 *b* 2), *n. m.*, *schena* (measure of length).
schérif, *n. m.*, sheriff.
schisme, *n. m.*, schism.
Schlesswig (*pr.* 75 *a*), *p. n.*
scholastique (*pr.* 70 *b* 2), *adj.*, scholastic.
scholie (*pr.* 70 *b* 2), *n. f.*, scholium.
science, *n. f.*, science.
scorpion, *n. m.*, scorpion.
scrupule, *n. m.*, scruple.
scrutin, *n. m.*, ballot, balloting.
sculpter (*pr.* 73 *c*), *v. a.*, to carve, sculpture.
sculpteur (*pr.* 73 *c*), *n. m.*, sculptor.
Scythe, *p. n.*, Scythian.
se (*synt.* 177), *pron.*, himself, herself, itself, themselves, one's self, one another.
séance, *n. f.*, seat, sitting.
séant (see *scoir*), *p. p.* fitting, becoming.
sec (*fem.* 90 *c* 2, rem.), **sèche**, *adj.*, dry, lean.
sécher, *v. a.*, to dry.
second (*pr.* 62 *c*; *synt.* 167 *e*), **e**, *adj.*, second.
secourir (*conj.* 119, no. 7), *v. a.*, to aid, succor.
secours, *n. m.*, aid, help; succor, assistance.
secret (*fem.* 90 *c* 1 *α*), **ète**, *adj.*, secret; *n. m.*, secret.
secrètement, *adv.*, secretly.
séduire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *a*), *v. a.*, to seduce, delude.
seigneur, *n. m.*, lord, the Lord.
sein, *n. m.*, bosom, heart, breast.
Seine, *p. n. f.*
seize, *adj.*, sixteen.
sel, *n. m.*, salt.
selle, *n. f.*, saddle, stool.
selon, *prep.*, according to, conformably to; — *que* (*hist.* 144 *c*); *conj.*, according as, as.
semaine, *n. f.*, week.
semer, *v. a.*, to sow.
semblable, *n.* & *adj.*, like, alike, fellow.
sembler (*w. pred. nom.* 134 *b* 2; *w. inf.* 244; *w. subj.* 234 *a* 1, cf. 2; *impers.* 214 *b*), *v. i.*, to seem, appear.
semi-ton (*pl.* 88 *b*), *n. m.*, semitone.
semondre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *a*), *v. a.*, to invite.
sénat *n. m.*, senate.
sénéchal, *n. m.*, seneschal.
sens (*pr.* 75 *c* 1), *n. m.*, sense, intellect, opinion, way, direction.
sensation, *n. f.*, sensation.
sentiment, *n. m.*, feeling, sensation, sentiment, sense.
sentinelle (*gen.* 82, rem.), *n. f.*, sentinel, sentry.
sentir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *a*; *w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to feel, smell, taste (cf. 209, rem.); **se** — (*w. inf.* 245), to feel, be conscious.
seoir (*conj.* 119, no. 21 *c*), *v. i.*, to suit, become.
séparer, *v. a.*, to separate.
sept (*pr.* 77 *a*), *adj.*, seven.
septante (95 *c*), *adj.*, seventy (obsolete).
septembre (*pr.* 73 *c*), *n. m.*, September.
septième (*pr.* 73 *c*), *adj.*, seventh.
serein, **e**, *adj.*, serene; *n. m.*, night-dew.
sergent, *n. m.*, sergeant.
sérieux, **se**, *adj.*, serious, grave.
serment, *n. m.*, oath.
sermon, *n. m.*, sermon, admonition.
serrer, *v. a.*, to press, be snug.
serval (*pl.* 86 *c* 1), *n. m.*, serval.
servante, *n. f.*, servant-maid.
service, *n. m.*, service, duty, divine service, course.
servir (*conj.* 119, no. 3 *a*; *w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to serve, attend; **se** — (**de**), to make use (of).
ses (*pr.* 40 *d*, rem. 1), *pl.* of *son*, his, her, its.
seul, **e**, *adj.*, alone, one, single, mere.
seulement, *adv.*, only.
sève, *n. f.*, sap, vigor.
sévère, *adj.*, severe.
sévèrement, *adv.*, severely.

sexe, *n. m.*, sex.
si (elision 37 *c*), *conj.*, if, whether.
non (145 *g*), unless; *si ce n'est que*, 144 *c*.
si (264), *adv.*, so, so much, yes; *si fait* (264 *b*), yes, indeed.
tot que (*hist.* 144 *c*, rem.), as soon as.
...**que** (145 *h* 2; *w. subj.* 235 *d* 2), so . . . as, so . . . that.
Sicile, *p. n. f.*, Sicily.
siècle, *n. m.*, century.
siège or **siége** (64 *b*, rem. 1), *n. m.*, seat, bench.
sien (*form.* 98 *b*; *synt.* 184), **ne**, *poss. pron.*, his, hers, its.
siffler, *v. i.*, to whistle.
signal, *n. m.*, signal.
signe, *n. m.*, sign, mark, nod.
signer, *v. a.*, to sign.
signet (*pr.* 73 *a*), *n. m.*, small sign, tassel, mark.
signifier, *v. a.*, to signify, mean.
silence, *n. m.*, silence, stillness.
Silvia, *p. n. f.*
simple (*posit.* 165 *c*), *adj.*, simple, single, only, mere, common.
simplicité, *n. f.*, simplicity.
singe, *n. m.*, ape, monkey.
singulièrement, *adv.*, singularly, peculiarly.
sire (*form.* 85 *b*), *n. m.*, sire.
situation, *n. f.*, situation, site.
six (*pr.* 59 *a* 3, 77 *a*), *adj.*, six.
sixième (*pr.* 77 *b*), *adj.*, sixth.
sobriété, *n. f.*, sobriety, soberness.
social, **e**, *adj.*, social.
société, *n. f.*, society.
Socrate (152 *b* 2), *p. n. m.*, Socrates; (*fig.*) philosopher.
Sodom, *p. n.*
sœur (*form.* 85 *b*), *n. f.*, sister.
soi (*tonic form.* of *se*, 180 *h*), *pron.*, one's self, itself; *soi-même* (180 *g*), one's self.
soie, *n. f.*, silk.
soif, *n. f.*, thirst.
soin, *n. m.*, care, attention.
soir, *n. m.*, evening.
soit (*subj.* of *être*, as *conj.* 142 *b*), *conj.*, either, whether; *soit* . . . *soit* (233 *b*, 282 *b* 2), either . . . or, whether . . . or.
que (*w. subj.* 235 *d*), *conj.*, whether.
soixante (*pr.* 72 *b*, 77 *b*), *adj.*, sixty.
soldat, *n. m.*, soldier.
soleil, *n. m.*, sun.
solennel, **le**, *adj.*, solemn.
solive, *n. f.*, joist.
solliciter (*w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to solicit.
somme (84 *b*), *n. m.*, nap.
somme, *n. f.*, sum, burden.
sommet, *n. m.*, summit.
sommeil, *n. m.*, sleep.
sommer (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to summon.
son (*forms* 98 *a*; *synt.* 181, 182), *poss. adj.*, his, her, its.
son, *n. m.*, sound.
songer (*w. inf.* 246), *v. i.*, to dream, muse; *v. a.*, to dream, think.
sort (*gen.* 82 *b* 3), *n. m.*, fate, destiny.
sortir, *v. i.*, to go out, proceed; *v. a.* (209, rem. 2), to take out.
sot (*pr.* 75 *d* 1; *fem.* 90 *c* 2), **te**, *adj.*, stupid, silly.
sottise, *n. f.*, foolishness.
souci, *n. m.*, care, anxiety.
soucier (**se**) (*w. inf.* 245), *v. r.*, to care, mind, be anxious.
soucieux, **se**, *adj.*, anxious.
soudain, **e**, *adj.*, sudden, unexpected.
soudre (*conj.* 119, no. 40 *a*), *v. a.*, to solve.
soudure, *n. f.*, solder.
souffle, *n. m.*, breath.
souffrance, *n. f.*, suffering, endurance.
souffrant, **e**, *adj.*, suffering, patient.
souffrir (*conj.* 119, no. 8 *c*; *w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 247), *v. a.*, to suffer, endure, bear.
souhaiter (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 244, 247), *v. a.*, to wish, long for.
soûl (*pr.* 76 *c*), **e**, *adj.*, glutted, drunk.

soulever, *v. a.*, to raise, excite.
soulier, *n. m.*, shoe.
souloir (*conj.* 119, no. 22; *w. inf.* 244), *v. i.*, to be wont, used.
Soult (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *γ*), *p. n.*
soumettre (*conj.* 119, no. 34), *v. a.*, to subdue, submit; **se** —, to yield.
soupçonner (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to suspect.
souper, *v. i.*, to sup.
souper, *n. m.*, supper.
soupir, *n. m.*, sigh.
soupirail (*pl.* 86 *c* 2), *n. m.*, air-hole.
source, *n. f.*, source, spring, fountain.
sourcil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1 *β*), *n. m.*, eye-brow.
sourd, e, *adj.*, deaf, dull.
sourdre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *a*), *v. i.*, to spring, issue.
sourire (*conj.* 119, no. 23 *a*), *v. i.*, to smile.
souris (84 *b*), *n. m.*, smile.
souris (84 *b*), *n. f.*, mouse.
sous (279 *b*), *prep.*, under.
souscrire (*conj.* 119, no. 25), *v. a.*, to subscribe, sign.
soussigné, *p. p.* of *soussigner*, undersigned.
soustraire (*conj.* 119, no. 28 *a*), *v. a.*, to take away, remove.
soutenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *a*; *w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to support, sustain.
soutirer, *v. a.*, to rack, draw off.
souvenir (se) (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *b*; *w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. r.*, to remember.
souvenir, *n. m.*, remembrance, souvenir, recollection.
souvent, *adv.*, often.
soyeux, se, *adj.*, silky.
spalt (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *γ*), *n. m.*, spalt.
spectacle, *n. m.*, play, spectacle.
spectateur, *n. m.*, spectator.
spirituel, le, *adj.*, spiritual, mental, witty, ingenious.
ss, *pr.* 69 *a* 4.
St.-Michel, see *Saint-Michel*.
stable, *adj.*, stable, solid, lasting.
stagnant (*pr.* 65 *a* 2), **e**, *adj.*, stagnant.
statue, *n. f.*, statue.
stipuler, *v. a.*, to stipulate, contract.
strict (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *β*), **e**, *adj.*, strict.
Stuart (*pl.* 87 *a*), *p. n.*
stupeur, *n. f.*, stupor.
stylet, *n. m.*, probe, stiletto.
subir, *v. a.*, to undergo, submit to.
sublime, *adj.*, sublime.
suborneur, se, *n. m.* & *f.*, suborner, briber.
subtil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1), **e**, subtile, thin, fine, acute.
subvenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *b*), *v. i.*, to relieve, help, aid.
succéder, *v. i.*, to succeed, follow.
succès, *n. m.*, success.
successeur, *n. m.*, successor.
successif, ve, *adj.*, successive.
succinct, e, *adj.*, succinct, brief.
sucre, *n. m.*, sugar.
sucrier, *n. m.*, sugar-bowl.
sud (*pr.* 75 *a*), *n. m.*, South.
Suède, *f.* Sweden; *n. p. m.*, Swede.
suédois, e, *adj.*, Swede, Swedish.
Suez (*pr.* 75 *a* 1), *p. n.*
suffire (*conj.* 119, no. 26 *d*; *w. subj.* 234 *a* 1; *w. inf.* 246), *v. i.*, to suffice.
suffoquer, *v. a.*, to suffocate.
suggérer (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to suggest.
suif, *n. m.*, tallow.
suivre (*conj.* 119, no. 41), *v. a.*, to follow.
sujet, te, *n.* & *adj.*, subject.
Sund (*pr.* 57 *a*), *p. n.*
superbe, *adj.*, superb.
supplier (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to beseech, entreat.
supporter, *v. a.*, to endure, sustain.
supposé (*agree.* 162 *a* 5), *p. p.* of *supposer*, supposed; — *que hist.* 144 *c*; *w. subj.* 235 *c*), supposing that.
supposer (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1), *v. a.*, to suppose.

suprême, *adj.*, supreme.
sur (279 *a*), *prep.*, over, on, upon, above; *sur ce que*, 186 *a* 2.
sûr (*w. inf.* 249 *a*), **e**, *adj.*, sure, certain.
surcroître (*conj.* 119, no. 31 *a*), *v. a.* & *i.*, to increase beyond measure, grow out.
sûrement, *adv.*, surely, certainly.
sureté, *n. f.*, safety, security.
surfaire (*conj.* 119, no. 27 *a*), *v. a.*, to ask too much, overcharge.
surgir, *v. i.*, to arise, land, spring up.
surprendre (*conj.* 119, no. 36 *a*; *w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to surprise, overtake.
surpris (*w. inf.* 249 *a*), **e**, *p. p.* of *surprendre*, surprised.
surseoir (*conj.* 119, no. 21 *d*), *v. a.* & *i.*, to suspend, delay.
surtout, *adv.*, especially.
survenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *b*), *v. i.*, to supervene, happen unexpectedly.
survivant, **e**, *n.* & *adj.*, survivor, surviving.
survivre (*conj.* 119, no. 42), *v. i.*, to survive.
sus (*pr.* 75 *c* 1), *prep.*, upon.
suspect (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *β*), **e**, *adj.*, suspected, suspicious.
syllabe, *n. f.*, syllable.
synonyme, *n. m.*, synonym.
syntaxe, *n. f.*, syntax.

t, *pr.* 71, 75 *d*; movable, 107 *b*; doubled in *decl.*, 90 *c*, *d*, 98; in *conj.*, 112 *c*.
ta, *fem.* of *ton*, thy.
tabac (*pr.* 76 *a* 2), *n. m.*, tobacco, snuff.
table, *n. f.*, table.
tableau, *n. m.*, picture.
tâcher (*w. inf.* 247), *v. i.*, to try, endeavor.
taciturne, *adj.*, taciturn.
tact, *n. m.*, tact, feeling, touch.
Tad, *p. n. m.*
taille, *n. f.*, cutting, cut, size, shape, waist.
tailleur, *n. m.*, tailor.
taire (se) (*conj.* 119, no. 24 *a*), *v. r.*, to be silent.
talent, *n. m.*, talent, power.
tandis que (*hist.* 144 *c*), *conj.*, whilst, while.
tant, *adv.*, so much, so many, as much.
que (*hist.* 144 *c*; *w. subj.* 235 *a*, cf. *a* 1), *conj.*, as long as. ...**que**, *w. subj.* 235 *d* 2.
tante (*form.* 181, rem.), *n. f.*, aunt.
tantôt, *adv.*, presently, by and by, soon; *tantôt...tantôt* (142 *a*), at one time...at another time.
taon (*pr.* 58 *a*), *n. m.*, gadfly.
tapis, *n. m.*, carpet.
taquinner, *v. a.*, to tease.
tard, **e**, *adj.*, late.
tarder (*impers. w. subj.* 234 *a* 1; *w. inf.* 247), *v. i.*, to delay, tarry, put off.
Tartufe, *p. n. m.*
tasse, *n. f.*, cup.
Tasse (*art.* 152 *b* 5), *p. n. m.*, Tasso.
tâtonner, *v. i.*, to grope.
taureau, *n. m.*, bull.
te (elision 37 *a*), *dat.* or *acc.* of *tu*.
-té, *fem. end.* 83 *b* 2.
teindre (*conj.* 119, no. 37 *a*), *v. a.*, to dye.
teint, *n. m.*, dye, complexion.
tel (*fem.* 90 *c* 1), **le**, *indef. pron.*, such; *tel...tel* (207 *b*), as the... so the; *tel quel*, 207 *c*.
tellement, *adv.*, so, so much.
témoigner (*w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to testify, show.
témoin, *n. m.*, witness.
tempérament, *n. m.*, constitution, temper.
tempête, *n. f.*, tempest.
temple, *n. m.*, temple, church.
temps, *n. m.*, time, weather; *de — en —*, or *de — à autre*, from time to time.
tendre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *a*; *w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to stretch, bend, spread.
tendre, *adj.*, tender, soft, fond.
tendresse, *n. f.*, affection, fondness, tenderness.

tenez (238, rem. 5), *imv.* of *tenir* as *interj.*, look here ! there ! now then !
tenir (*conj.* 119, no. 10; *w. inf.* 246; impers. phrases, *w. subj.* 234 *a* 1), *v. a.* & *i.*, to hold, have, contain, hang, stick.
tenter (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to attempt, try, tempt.
terme, *n. m.*, term, bound, end, termination.
terrain, *n. m.*, ground, piece of ground, land.
terre, *n. f.*, earth, land, ground.
terreur, *n. f.*, terror, awe.
terrible, *adj.*, terrible, awful.
tes (*pr.* 40 *d*, rem. 1), *pl.* of *ton*, thy.
testament, *n. m.*, testament, will.
tête, *n. f.*, head.
th, *pr.* 66 *b*, 71 *b*, 73 *d*, 75 *d*.
Thad, *p. n. m.*
thé, *n. m.*, tea.
théâtral (*pl.* 92 *c* 1), **e**, *adj.*, theatrical.
théâtre, *n. m.*, theatre.
théisme, *n. m.*, theism.
thème, *n. m.*, exercise.
-tial, **-tie**, **-tiel**, **-tien**, **-tient**, **-tieux**, *pr.* 71 *a* 1.
-tié, *fem. end.*, 83 *b* 2.
tiède, *adj.*, tepid, lukewarm.
tien (*forms* 98 *b*; *synt.* 184; as *pred. adj.*, 184 *a* 1), **ne**, *poss. pron.*, thine.
tiens (238, rem. 5), *imv.* of *tenir* as *interj.*, hold ! look here ! now then !
tiers, (*fem.* 90 *f*), **tierce**, *adj.*, third.
tigre, *n. m.*, tiger.
tillac, *n. m.*, deck.
tilleul, *n. m.*, linden-tree.
-tion, *pr.* 71 *a* 1.
tirer, *v. a.*, to draw, fire, infer, pull.
tiroir, *n. m.*, drawer.
tistre (*conj.* 119, no. 43 *b*), *v. a.*, to weave.
titiller (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 *α*), *v. a.*, to tickle.
titre, *n. m.*, title, right.
toi (*form.* 18 *a*; *tonic form* of *tu*, 180), *pron.*, thou, thee.
toile, *n. f.*, cloth, canvas.
toi-même (180 *g*), *pron.*, thyself.
toit, *n. m.*, roof, top.
tolérance, *n. f.*, toleration.
tombeau, *n. m.*, tomb.
tomber, *v. i.*, to fall.
tome, *n. m.*, volume.
ton (*forms* 98 *a*; *synt.* 181), *poss. adj.*, thy.
ton, *n. m.*, tone, note.
tondre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *a*), *v. a.*, to shear, clip.
tonneau, *n. m.*, tun.
tonner, *v. i.*, to thunder.
tonnerre, *n. f.*, thunder.
tordre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *a*), *v. a.*, to twist.
torrent, *n. m.*, torrent.
tort, *n. m.*, wrong.
tôt, *adv.*, soon.
totalement, *adv.*, totally.
totaliser, *v. a.*, to form a total of.
toucher, *v. a.*, to touch, receive.
toujour, *adv.*, always, continually, still.
tour, *n. m.*, trick.
Touraine, *p. n. f.*
tourment, *n. m.*, torment.
tourner, *v. a.*, to turn.
tous (*pr.* 59 *a* 3, 75 *c* 1), *pl.* of *tout*, all.
Toussaint (*art.* 152 *b* 6), *n. f.*, All-Saints' Day.
tout (*pl.* 92 *d*; *synt.* 199 *b*, 202; *w. gerund* 202 *b* 1, 258 *c*, rem. 2), **e**, *adj.* & *pron.*, all, whole, each, every, every one, everything.
  le monde (202 *c*), everybody.
  à l'heure, presently, immediately.
  de suite, immediately, at once.
  à fait, wholly, entirely; *du tout* (as *neg.*, 267 *d*), not at all.
  ...que (145 *b* 2, 202 *b* 2; *w. subj.* 235 *d* 2).
toutefois, *adv.*, however, yet.
tout-puissant (*infl.* 162 *c*), *adj.*, all-powerful.

trace, *n. f.*, track, trace, step.
tradition, *n. f.*, tradition.
traditionel, le, *adj.*, traditional.
traduire (*conj.* 119, no. 25 *a*), *v. a.*, to translate, render.
trahir (*w. inf.* 245), *v. a.*, to betray, discover.
traire (*conj.* 119, no. 28), *v. a.*, to milk.
trait, *n. m.*, arrow, missile, draught.
traitement, *n. m.*, treatment, reception, usage.
traiter (272 *a* 6 *α*), *v. a.*, to treat, use, call, come to terms.
traître, *n. m.*, traitor.
tranchant, e, *adj.*, sharp, cutting, incisive.
tranquille (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 *α*), *adj.*, tranquil, quiet.
trans-, *pr.* 69 *b* 2.
transaction, *n. f.*, transaction.
transcrire (*conj.* 119, no. 25), *v. a.*, to transcribe.
transept (*pr.* 69 *b* 2), *n. m.*, transept.
transformer, *v. a.*, to change, transform.
transgresser, *v. a.*, to transgress, violate.
transir (*pr.* 69 *b* 2), *v. a. & i.*, to chill, benumb, be chilled.
transit, *n. m.*, transit.
transmettre (*conj.* 119, no. 34), *v. a.*, to convey, transmit.
transport, *n. m.*, transport.
transporter, *v. a.*, to transport.
Transylvanie (*pr.* 69 *b* 2), *p. n. f.*, Transylvania.
travail (*pl.* 86 *c* 2), *n. m.*, work.
travailler (*w. inf.* 246), *v. i.*, to work.
traverser, *v. a.*, to traverse, cross.
treille, *n. f.*, vine-arbor.
treize, *adj.*, thirteen.
trembler (*w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245, 247), *v. i.*, to tremble.
trente, *adj.*, thirty.
très, *adv.*, very.
trésor, *n. m.*, treasure.
trésorier, *n. m.*, treasurer.
tressaillir (*conj.* 119, no. 5 *b*), *v. i.*, to start, leap.
tribun, *n. m.*, tribune.
triompher, *v. i.*, to triumph.
triste (*w. inf.* 249 *b*), *adj.*, sad, dull, dark.
triumvir, *n. m.*, triumvir.
trois, *adj.*, three.
troisième, *adj.*, third.
tromper, *v. a.*, to deceive; **se —**, to be deceived.
trompette, *n. f.*, trumpet; *m.*, trumpeter.
trône, *n. m.*, throne.
trop (*pr.* 78 *a* 3), *adv.*, too much, too many.
trouble, *adj.*, thick, muddy, dull, troubled; *n. m.*, confusion.
troubler, *v. a.*, to trouble, muddle.
troupe, *n. f.*, troop, band, company.
trouver (*w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 246), *v. a.*, to find; **se —**, to be, feel, find one's self.
bon, étrange, etc., *w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 245.
troyen, ne, *adj.*, Trojan.
tu (*forms* 97; *synt.* 171 *ff.*), *pron.*, thou.
tudesque, *adj.*, Teutonic.
tuer, *v. a.*, to kill; **se —** (*w. inf.* 247), to commit suicide.
turc, (*fem.* 90 *c* 2) **turque**, *adj.*, Turk, Turkish.
tutoyer, *v. a.*, to thee and thou (i.e., speak in the second person singular).
type, *n. m.*, type, symbol.
tyran, *n. m.*, tyrant.
tyrannie, *n. f.*, tyranny.

u (**û**), *pr.* 44, silent 58 *g*.
ue, *pr.* after *c* and *g*, 51 *a* 1.
um, *pr. as nas. vow.* 53, 57.
un (*forms* 81 *b*; *synt.* 155–157), **e**, *art.*, a, an.
un (95, *synt.* 167 *a*), **e**, *adj.*, one; cf. 199 *b*, 200 *a*.
un, *pr. as nas. vow.* 53, 57.
unanimement, *adv.*, unanimously.
uniformément (*acc.* 120 *c* 1), *adv.*, uniformly.

union, *n. f.*, union, concord.
unique, *adj.*, unique, only.
univers, *n. m.*, universe.
universel, le, *adj.*, universal.
université, *n. f.*, university.
-us, *pr.*, 75 *c* 2.
usage, *n. m.*, custom, practice, use.
ut (*pr.* 75 *d*), *n. m.*, ut.
utile (*w. inf.* 249 *b*), *adj.*, useful.
Uxelles (*pr.* 72 *b*), *p. n.*

v, *pr.* 60.
va (238, rem. 5), *imv.* of *aller* as *interj.*, go, be gone.
vacances, *n. f. pl.*, vacation.
vacant, e, *adj.*, empty, vacant.
vache, *n. f.*, cow.
vaillance, *n. f.*, valor, courage.
vain, e, *adj.*, vain, empty.
vaincre (*conj.* 119, no. 35 *d*), *v. a.*, to conquer, defeat.
vainement, *adv.*, vainly.
vais, see *aller*.
vaisseau, *n. m.*, ship, vessel.
val, *n. m.*, vale, valley.
valet, *n. m.*, footman, valet; — *de chambre*, footman.
valoir (*conj.* 119, no. 18; *impers.* 214 *b*), *v. i.*, to be worth, be as good as, yield; *il vaut bien, mieux*, etc., *w. subj.* 234 *a* 1.
vantail (*pl.* 86 *c* 2), *n. m.*, window-shutter, leaf of a folding door.
vanter (se) (*w. inf.* 245), *v. r.*, to boast, vaunt.
vapeur, *n. f.*, steam, vapor; *n. m.*, steamboat.
vaquer, *v. i.*, to be vacant, void, be in vacation.
vase, *n. m.*, vase, vessel, urn.
Vasile, *p. n. m.*
vaste, *adj.*, vast, great.
vaudeville (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 *α*), *n. m.*, ballad, vaudeville.
Vaugelas (*pr.* 75 *c* 3), *p. n.*
vautour, *n. m.*, vulture.
végétation, *n. f.*, vegetation.
véhémentement (*form.* 120 *a* 2 *α*), *adv.*, strongly, vehemently.
veille, *n. f.*, watch, eve, vigil.
veiller, *v. a. & i*, to watch, watch over, wake, sit up.
veine, *n. f.*, vein.
vendange, *n. f.*, vintage.
vendre (*conj.* 119, no. 35), *v. a.*, to sell.
vendredi, *n. m.*, Friday.
vengeance, *n. f.*, vengeance, revenge.
venger, *v. a.*, to revenge, avenge.
venir (*conj.* 119, no. 10 *b*; *w. inf.* 244, 247 *d* 7), *v. i.*, to come; — *de* (*w. inf.* 213 *a* 2, 244 *c* 3), to have just; — *à*, to happen to; *s'en* — (175 *c*).
vent, *n. m.*, wind.
ventru, e, *adj.*, big-bellied, pot-bellied.
Vénus (*pr.* 75 *c* 2), *p. n. f.*, Venus.
ver, *n. m.*, worm; *ver à soie*, silk-worm.
verge, *n. f.*, rod, switch.
vergogne, *n. f.*, shame.
véritable, *adj.*, true, veritable.
vérité, *n. f.*, truth.
vers, *n. m.*, verse.
vers (280 *a*), *prep.*, towards, about, to.
verser, *v. a.*, to pour, shed.
vert, e, *adj.*, green.
vertu, *n. f.*, virtue, power.
vertueux, se, *adj.*, virtuous.
Vésuve, *p. n. m.*, Vesuvius.
vêtement, *n. m.*, garment, garb, dress, clothes.
vêtir (*conj.* 119, no. 6), *v. a.*, to clothe, array; **se** —, to put on one's clothes.
veuf, ve, *adj. & n.*, widower, widow, widowed.
viande, *n. f.*, meat, viand.
vice, *n. m.*, vice, fault.
victime (*gen.* 82, rem.), *n. f.*, victim, sufferer.
victoire, *n. f.*, victory.
victorieux, se, *adj.*, victorious.
vie, *n. f.*, life; *de la* — (= *jamais*, 268 *e*, 272 *b* 1 *γ*), ever, never.
vieillard, *n. m.*, old man.
vieillesse, *n. f.*, old age.
vieillir, *v. i.*, to grow old.

vieillot (*fem.* 90 *c* 2), **te**, *adj.*, oldish.
viennent, see *venir*.
vieux, vieil (*fem.* 90 *d*, rem.), **vieille**, *adj.*, old.
vif, vive, *adj.*, alive, live, quick, smart.
vigne, *n. f.*, vine, vineyard.
vil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1), **e**, *adj.*, vile, base.
vilain, e, *adj.*, ugly, vile, piteous, shabby, naughty.
village (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 *α*), *n. m.*, village.
villageois, e, *n. m.* & *f.*, villager.
ville (*pr.* 67 *a* 1 *α*), *n. f.*, town, city.
Villehardouin, *p. n.*
vin, *n. m.*, wine.
vingt (*vingts*, 167 *b*), *adj.*, twenty.
vingt-deux (*pr.* 77 *b*), *adj.*, twenty-two
violon, *n. m.*, violin, violinist.
viril (*pr.* 67 *b* 1), **e**, *adj.*, manly, male, virile.
vis (*pr.* 75 *c* 1), *n. f.*, screw.
visage, *n. m.*, face, visage.
vis-à-vis (*pl.* 88 *c*), *n. m.*, opposite, opposite dancer.
viser (*w. inf.* 246), *v. a.* & *i.*, to aim at, aim.
visite, *n. f.*, visit, call.
vite, *adv.*, quickly.
vitesse, *n. f.*, quickness.
vitrail (*pl.* 86 *c* 2), *n. m.*, glass windows.
vivacité, *n. f.*, vivacity.
vivement, *adv.*, quickly, sharply.
vivre (*conj.* 119, no. 42; cf. 139 *a*), *v. i.*, to live.
vivre, *n. m.*, living
vœu, *n. m.*, vow, wish, prayer.
vogue, *n. f.*, fashion, reputation, rate of motion.
voici (173 *a* 1, 189, rem., 238, rem. 5), see here, here is, here are, behold.
voilà (173 *a* 1, 189, rem., 238, rem. 5), there is, there are, behold.
. . . que, 269 *c* 3.
voile, *n. m.*, veil; *n. f.*, sail.
voir (*conj.* 119, no. 20; *w. subj.* 234 *c* 1; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to see.
voisin, e, *n.* & *adj.*, neighbor, neighboring.
voisinage, *n. m.*, neighborhood.
voiture, *n. f.*, carriage.
voix, *n. f.*, voice, vote.
vol, *n. m.*, theft, flying, flight.
volatil (*pr.* 67 *b* 1), **e**, *adj.*, volatile, light.
voler (*w. inf.* 244), *v. i.*, to fly; *v. a.*, to rob, steal.
voleur, *n. m.*, robber, thief.
volonté, *n. f.*, will, wish.
volontiers (*pr.* 76 *d*), *adv.*, willingly.
Voltaire, *p. n. m.*
vont, 3*d pl. pres.* of *aller*.
vos, *pl.* of *votre*, your.
votre (*forms* 98 *a*; *synt.* 181, 182), *poss. adj.*, your.
vôtre (*forms* 98 *b*; *synt.* 184), *poss. pron.*, yours.
vouer, *v. a.*, to vow, devote; **se** — (*w. inf.* 246), to devote one's self.
vouloir (*conj.* 119, no. 19; *w. subj.* 234 *b* 1; *w. inf.* 244), *v. a.*, to wish, be willing; *en* — (175 *c*; (*w. inf.* 245), to bear a grudge against.
vous (*forms* 97; *synt.* 171 *ff.*), *pron.*, you, to you.
vous-même (s) (180 *g*), *pron.*, yourself, yourselves.
voyage, *n. m.*, journey, voyage.
voyager, *v. i.*, to travel.
voyageur, *n. m.*, traveller.
voyons (*imv.* of *voir* as *interj.*, 238, rem. 5), come, come now.
vrai, e, *adj.*, true, real.
vraiment, *adv.*, really, truly.
vu, *p. p.* of *voir*; *vu . . . que*, 144 *c* 1), considering that.
vue, *n. f.*, sight, view.

w, *pr.* 61.
wagon, *n. m.*, railway-carriage.
wh, *pr.* 61 *d*.
whig (*pr.* 61 *d*, 75), *n. m.*, Whig.
whiskey (*pr.* 61 *d*), *n. m.*, whisky.

whist (*pr.* 61 *d*, 75 *b* 2 *α*), *n. m.*, whist.

x, *pr.* 72, 75 *a*; as *pl.* sign, 86, rem.
Xaintrailles (*pr.* 72 *b*), *p. n. m.*
Xavier (*pr.* 72 *a*), *p. n. m.*
Xénophon (*pr.* 72 *a*), *p. n.*, Xenophon.
Xerxès (*pr.* 72 *a*, *b*, 75 *c* 2), *p. n. m.*, Xerxes.
xilographie (*pr.* 72 *a*), *n. f.*, wood-engraving.

y, *pr.* 45, 61; *i* & *y*, 45, rem., 112 *c*, etc.
y (97 *f*; *synt.* 176, 178 *b*), *adv.* & *pron.*, there, to it, at it, thither, for them, to them, to him, to her.
y compris (*agree.* 162 *a* 5), included.
yacht (*pr.* 45 *a*), *n. m.*, yacht.
Yémen, *p. n.*, Yemen.
yeux (*pl.* of *œil*), *n. m.*, eyes.
ym, *pr. as nas. vow.*, 53, 55.
yn, *pr. as nas. vow.*, 53, 55.

z, *pr.* 60, 75 *a*.
zèle, *n. m.*, zeal.
zénith (*pr.* 75 *d* 1), *n. m.*, zenith.
zéro, *n. m.*, zero.
zest (*pr.* 75 *d* 2 *α*), *interj.*, nonsense, pshaw.
zigzag (*pr.* 75 *a*), *n. m.*, zigzag.
zone, *n. f.*, zone.

ENGLISH-FRENCH VOCABULARY.

a, un, e; (distributively) *a* (*week*), par (semaine).
abide (by), se tenir (à).
able, be, pouvoir.
abode, take up one's, s'installer.
absence, absence, *f.*
absent, absent, e.
accept, accepter.
accident, accident, *m.*; mégarde, *f.*
account, récit, *m.* (recital); compte, *m.*; *on — of*, à cause de, par.
ache, mal, *m.*; *head—*, mal à la tête, etc.
acknowledge, avouer.
acquaintance, connaissance, *f.*
act, agir.
actress, actrice, *f.*
add, ajouter.
addition, addition, *f.*
address one's self, s'adresser.
admiration, admiration, *f.*
admire, admirer.
admit, admettre, avouer.
adversary, adversaire, *m.*
advice, conseil, *m.*
affair, affaire, *f.*
affianced, fiancé, e.
afraid, be, avoir peur.
after, *prep.*, après; *conj.*, après que; *go —*, aller chercher.
afternoon, après-midi, *m.* or *f.*
again, encore, de nouveau.
against, contre.
age, old, vieillesse, *f.*
ago, il y a; *ten days —*, il y a dix jours.
agree, convenir.
agreeable, agréable.
aim, *but, *m.* (*end*).
all, tout, e, *tous, toutes.
allow, permettre.
almost, presque; à peu près.
alone, seul, e.
already, déjà.
also, aussi.
although, quoique, bien que.
always, toujours.
ambassador, ambassadeur, *m.*
America, Amérique, *f.*
amiable, aimable.
among, parmi.
amuse, divertir.
ample, large.
an, un, une; cf. *a.*
and, *et.
animal, animal, *m.*
apartments, appartement, *m.*
appear, paraître.
apply, s'adresser.
April, *avril, *m.*
arm, bras, *m.*
arm-chair, fauteuil, *m.*
around, autour de.
arrival, arrivée, *f.*
arrive, arriver.
art, art, *m.*
artist, artiste, *m.* or *f.*
as, comme; *as — as*, aussi — que.
ashamed, be, avoir honte.
ask, demander; prier.
at, à, chez (*at the house of*, etc.).
attain, atteindre.
August, août, *m.*
aunt, tante, *f.*
avow, avouer.
awaken, éveiller.

baker, boulanger, *m.*
balcony, balcon, *m.*
ball, balle, *f.*
band, compagnie, *f.*

banker, banquier, *m.*
base, bas, se.
be, être; se trouver; — *well*, se porter bien; (*of weather*) faire; *cf.* devoir.
beat, battre.
beautiful, beau, bel, belle.
because, parce que; — *of*, à cause de.
become, devenir; (*of clothes*, etc.) seoir.
bed, go to, se coucher.
before, *prep.*, avant (*time*); devant (*place*); *conj.*, avant que; *w. inf.*, avant de.
beg, prier (*ask*); mendier (*alms*).
begin, commencer; débuter.
behave, se conduire.
behavior, conduite, *f.*
believe, croire.
belong (to), appartenir (à); être (à).
beneath, au *dessous de.
bent, be, (on, upon,) s'obstiner (à).
beside, à côté de.
best, meilleur, e.
betrothed, fiancé, e.
better, *adj.*, meilleur, e; *adv.*, mieux; *be* —, valoir mieux; (*of health*) se porter mieux.
between, entre.
bishop, évêque, *m.*
black. noir, e.
blue, bleu, e.
boast, se vanter.
book, livre, *m.*
born, be, naître.
borrow, emprunter.
boulevard, boulevard, *m.*
boy, garçon, *m.*
bread, pain, *m.*
break, briser; casser.
breakfast, déjeuner, *m.*
bright, clair, e.
bring, apporter; amener.
broad, large.
brother, frère, *m.*
brown, brun, e.
build, bâtir.
business, affaires, *f. pl.*
but, mais.
buy, acheter.
by, par; de; *eight by ten*, huit par dix.

call, appeler; *be called, named*, s'appeler; *pay a call*, rendre visite.
calm, calme.
can, pouvoir, savoir.
cannon, canon, *m.*
capital, capitale, *f.*
card, carte, *f.*
care, soin, *m.*
carpet, tapis, *m.*
carriage, voiture, *f.*
carry back, reporter.
case, cas, *m.*; cause, *f.*
cash, comptant.
cast (*eyes*), promener.
catch cold, s'enrhumer.
cathedral, cathédrale, *f.*
ceiling, plafond, *m.*
celebrated, célèbre.
century, siècle, *m.*
certain, certain, e; sûr, e.
chair (easy), fauteuil, *m.*
chance, chance, *f.*
change, changer.
chapel, chapelle, *f.*
character, caractère, *m.*
charge, take, (of,) se charger (de).
check, chèque, *m.*
child, enfant, *m.* or *f.*
choose, choisir.
church, église, *f.*
circus, cirque, *m.*
city, ville, *f.*
city-house, hôtel, *m.*
clap (of thunder), coup, *m.*
classic, classique.
clear, *net, te.
clothe, vêtir; *be clothed*, se vêtir.
coat, habit, *m.*
coffee, café, *m.*
cold, froid, e; *to be cold*, avoir froid; *catch cold*, s'enrhumer.
collect, cueillir.
college, université, *f.*; collège, *m.*
color, couleur, *f.*
come, venir.
comedy, comédie, *f.*
commence, commencer.
companion, compagnon, *m.*; camarade, *m.*

company, compagnie, *f.*
comrade, camarade, *m.*
conceal, cacher.
conceive, concevoir.
concern one's self (about), se charger (*de*).
condemn, condamner.
condition, *on — that*, à condition que.
conduct, conduite, *f.*
conduct, conduire.
confess, avouer, confesser.
confession, confession, *f.*
consequence, conséquence, *f.*
consider, tenir pour.
constrain, contraindre
consult, consulter.
contain, contenir.
content, content, e.
continue, continuer.
convent, couvent, *m.*
convict, forçat, *m.*
cook, cuisinière, *f.*
counsel, conseil, *m.*
country, campagne, *f.*; *pays, *m.*
country-house, château, *m.*
courage, courage, *m.*
court, cour, *f.*
cousin, cousin, *m.*; cousine, *f.*
cover, couvert, *m.*
credit, créance, *f.*
crime, crime, *m.*
criticism, critique, *f.*
cry, cri, *m.*

danger, danger, *m.*
dark, grow, s'obscurcir.
darken, obscurcir.
daughter, fille, *f.*
day, jour, *m.*; journée, *f.*
dead, mort, e.
dear, cher, chère.
death, mort, *f.*
debt, dette, *f.*
December, décembre, *m.*
decide, décider; se décider.
delighted, ravi, e; enchanté, e.
demand, demander; exiger.
dentist, dentiste, *m.*
depart, s'en aller.
describe, décrire.
desire, envie, *f.*
desire, désirer.
desk, bureau, *m.*
despair, désespoir, *m.*
die, mourir.
dine, dîner.
dinner, take, dîner.
discontented, mécontent, e.
discourage, décourager.
discourse, discourir.
discover, découvrir.
dissatisfied, mécontent, e.
distance, *put at a distance*, éloigner.
do, faire.
doctor, médecin, *m.*
dog, chien, *m.*
door, *next — to*, à côté de.
double, double.
doubtful, douteux, se.
dress, robe, *f.*
dress, vêtir; *be dressed*, se vêtir.
drink, boire.
drive, aller en voiture; — *away*, chasser.
duke, duc, *m.*
during, pendant.
dust, poussière, *f.*
duty, devoir, *m.*
dwell, demeurer; — *in*, habiter.

each one, chacun, e.
eager, be, s'empresser.
ear, oreille, *f.*
early, de bonne heure.
earn, gagner.
earth, terre, *f.*
easily, facilement.
eat, manger.
education, éducation, *f.*
eight, *huit.
eighteen, *dix-huit.
eighty, quatre-vingts.
either . . . or, ou . . . ou.
eleven, *onze.
empire, empire, *m.*
enchanted, ravi, e; enchanté, e.
end, fin, *f.*; bout, *m.*; (*aim*) *but, *m.*
endow, douer.
endure, supporter.
England, Angleterre, *f.*
enough, *assez.
enthusiasm, enthousiasme, *m.*

epoch, époque, *f.*
equal, pareil, le.
escape, échapper.
Europe, Europe, *f.*
evening, soir, *m.*
everybody, tout le monde; chacun, e.
every one, chacun, e; tout le monde.
everywhere, partout.
exact, exiger.
exalted, élevé, e.
excite, exciter.
exculpate, exculper.
excuse, pardonner; excuser.
exercise, thème, *m.*
expect, attendre.
expiate, expier.
explain, expliquer; décrire.
explanation, explication, *f.*
expression, expression, *f.*
extend, tendre.
extreme, extrême.
eye, œil, *m.*; *pl.* yeux.

face, figure, *f.*
fair, foire, *f.*
false, faux, sse.
fame, renommée, *f.*
family, famille, *f.*
famous, célèbre.
fast, *go too* —, (*of clocks*) avancer.
father, père, *m.*
favor, grâce, *f.*
favor, faire l'honneur, faire la grâce.
favorable, favorable.
fear, peur, *f.*
fear, avoir peur.
February, février, *m.*
fetch, aller chercher.
fifteen, quinze.
fifty, cinquante.
find, trouver; *find one's self* (*be*), se trouver.
finish, finir.
first, premier, ère, *adj.*; d'abord, *adv.*
five, * cinq.
flower, fleur, *f.*
follow, suivre.
foolish, sot, te.
foolishness, sottise, *f.*
foot, pied, *m.*
footman, valet de chambre.
for, *prep.*, pour, par, de.
for, *conj.*, car.
force, forcer, obliger, contraindre.
forget, oublier.
former, ancien, ne.
formerly, autrefois.
formidable, redoutable.
fortnight, quinzaine, *f.*
fortunate, heureux, se.
fortune, fortune, *f.*
forty, quarante.
four, quatre.
fourteen, quatorze.
franc, franc, *m.*
France, France, *f.*
Franco-Prussian, franco-prusse.
free, libre.
freeze, geler.
French, français, e.
Friday, vendredi, *m.*
friend, ami, *m.*; amie, *f.*
furniture, mobilier, *m.*; meubles, *m. pl.*

gain, gagner.
gain time (*of clocks*), avancer.
gallery, galerie, *f.*
garden, jardin, *m.*
gather, cueiller.
get up, se lever.
girl, fille, *f.*
give, donner.
give back, rendre.
glad, content, *e.*
glove, gant, *m.*
go, aller.
go away, s'en aller.
go for, aller chercher.
go forth, sortir.
go to bed, se coucher.
go too fast (*of clocks*), avancer.
go too slow (*of clocks*), retarder.
good, bon, ne; sage; aimable.
good-bye, adieu.
good-bye, say, faire les adieux.
goodness, bonté, *f.*
government, gouvernement, *m.*
grand, magnifique.
grandfather, grand-père.
grandson petit-fils.

grass, herbe, *f.*
grief, chagrin, *m.*; douleur, *f.*
ground, terre, *f.*
guilty, coupable.
gun, canon, *n.*

hair, cheveu, *m.*, *pl.* cheveux.
half, demi, e, *adj.*; moitié, *f.*
hand, main, *f.*
happen, arriver.
happy, heureux, se; content, e.
harm, dommage, *m.*
haste, 'hâte, *f.*
hasten, accourir; se 'hâter; s'empresser.
hastily, à la 'hâte.
hat, chapeau, *m.*
have, avoir.
he, il, lui.
head, tête, *f.*
headache, mal à la tête.
hear, entendre.
heart, cœur, *m.*
heartily, de bon cœur.
heat, chaleur, *f.*
heaven, ciel, *m.*
height, 'hauteur, *f.*
help, aide, *f.*; secours, *m.*
help, aider; = *keep from*, s'empêcher.
her, son, sa, ses.
here, ici, y.
here is, **here are**, voici.
hero, 'héro, *m.*
heroine, héroine, *f.*
hers, sien, ne.
hide, cacher.
high, 'haut, e.
his, son, sa, ses; sien, ne.
history, histoire, *f.*
hit, frapper.
hold, tenir.
home, **at**, à la maison; chez.
honor, honneur, *f.*
hope, espérer.
horror, horreur, *f.*
horse, cheval, *m.*
hospital, hôpital, *m.*
hotel, hôtel, *m.*
house, maison; château (*country-*); hôtel (*city-*).
house-number, numéro, *m.*
how, que.
however, cependant; quelque.
hundred, cent.
hungry, **be**, avoir faim.
hurry, presser.
hurt, dommage, *m.*
husband, mari, *m.*; époux, *m.*
hymn, hymne, *m.*

I, je, moi.
idle, oisif, ve.
idler, oisif, *m.*; oisive, *f.*
if, si.
image, image, *f.*
immediately, tout de suite.
important, **be**, importer.
impossible, impossible.
in, dans; en; à.
income, revenu, *m.*
indignation, indignation, *f.*
infamous, infâme.
inform, avertir.
inhabit, habiter.
ink, encre, *f.*
inn, auberge, *m.*
innocent, innocent, e.
instead of, au lieu de.
intend, avoir l'intention.
intention, intention, *f.*
interest, intérêt, *m.*
interest, intéresser; divertir.
interesting, intéressant, e.
interrupt, interrompre.
interview, interrogatoire, *m.*
introduce, introduire.
invent, inventer.
invite, inviter.
it, il, elle, ce.
Italian, italien, ne.
Italy, Italie, *f.*
its, son, sa, ses; sien, ne.

James, Jacques.
January, janvier, *m.*
John, Jean.
join, joindre; rejoindre.
journey, voyage, *m.*
judge, juge, *m.*
Julia, Julie.
July, juillet, *m.*
June, juin, *m.*

kill, tuer.
kind, espèce, *f.*

kind, bon, ne; aimable.
kind, *what — of?* quel?
kindness, bonté, *f.*
king, roi, *m.*
know, savoir; connaître.

lake, lac, *m.*
land, terrain, *m.*
large, grand, e; large.
last, dernier, ère; passé, e.
last (*hold out*), tenir.
late, tard.
Latin, latin, e.
laugh, rire.
law, loi, *f.*; droit, *m.*
lawsuit, cause, *f.*; procès, *m.*
lawyer, avocat, *m.*
least, moins.
leave, quitter.
lend, prêter.
length, longueur, *f.*
less, moins.
letter, lettre, *f.*
library, bibliothèque, *f.*
lie, mentir.
life, vie, *f.*
lift, lever.
like, pareil, le.
like better, aimer mieux.
listen to, écouter.
literature, littérature, *f.*
little, *adj.*, petit, e; *adv.*, peu.
live, vivre; (*reside*) demeurer.
living, vivre, *m.*
loan, prêter.
lodge, loger.
lodgings, **take**, loger.
long, long, ue.
longer, *no* —, ne . . . plus.
look at, regarder.
lose, perdre; — *time* (*of clocks*), retarder.
loss, perte, *f.*
love, amour, *m.*
love, aimer.
low, bas, se.
lyric, *adj.*, lyrique; *n.*, lyrisme, *m.*
lyricism, lyrisme, *m.*

magnificent, magnifique.
majority, plupart, *f.*
make, faire.
man, homme, *m.*
manner, manière, *f.*; façon, *f.*
manuscript, manuscrit, *m.*
many, beaucoup; *as — as*, autant; *how* —, combien; *so* —, tant.
March, *mars, *m.*
marriage, mariage, *m.*
marry, marier; épouser.
marvellous, merveilleux, se.
mass, messe, *f.*
matter (*be of consequence*), importer; *what is the matter with you?* qu'avez-vous? etc.
mayor, maire, *m.*
me, me, moi.
meadow, prairie, *f.*
mean, vouloir dire.
means, moyen, *m.*
merchant, négociant, *m.*; marchant, *m.*
metre, mètre, *m.*
midday, midi, *m.*
midnight, minuit, *m.*
midst, *in the — of*, au milieu de.
million, million, *m.*
mind, esprit, *m.*
mine, mien, ne.
mine, mine, *f.*
minute, minute, *f.*
misfortune, malheur, *m.*
mistake, mégarde, *f.*
Monday, lundi, *m.*
money, argent, *m.*
month, mois, *m.*
monument, monument, *m.*
more, plus; *no* —, ne . . . plus.
morning, matin, *m.*
most, plus.
mother, mère, *f.*
mount, monter.
mountain, montagne, *f.*; —*-peak*, mont, *m.*
move, mouvoir; émouvoir.
Mr., *monsieur, *m.*
Mrs., madame, *f.*
much, beaucoup; grand'chose; *as — as*, autant; *how* —, combien; *so* —, tant.
museum, musée, *m.*
musing, rêverie, *f.*
must, devoir.
my, mon, ma, mes.

name, nom, *m.*; *one's name is*, on s'appelle.
name, appeler; *be named*, s'appeller.
narrow escape, have a, échapper belle.
nature, nature, *f.*
near, près de.
nearly, presque, à peu près.
necessary, be, falloir.
need, besoin, *m.*
neighborhood, voisinage, *m.*
neither . . . nor, (ne) ni . . . ni.
never, (*ne*) jamais.
news, nouvelle, *f.*
newspaper, journal, *m.*
next, prochain, e.
next day, lendemain, *m.*
nice (*colloquial*), *gentil, le.
night, nuit, *f.*
nine, *neuf.
nineteen, *dix-neuf.
ninety, quatre-vingt-dix.
no, *adv.* non; *adj.*, (ne) nul, le; aucun, e; pas un, e.
no one, (ne) personne; nul, le; aucun, e.
nobody, (ne) personne.
noon, midi, *m.*
not, (ne) pas.
not that, non que.
nothing, (ne) rien.
notwithstanding that, malgré que.
November, novembre, *m.*
now, maintenant, présentément.
number, nombre, *m.*; numéro, *m.*
nurse, garde-malade, *m.* or *f.*; *wet-* —, nourrice, *f.*

object, objet, *m.*
oblige, obliger.
observation, observation, *f.*
observe, observer.
obtain, obtenir.
occasion, occasion, *f.*; propos, *m.*
occupy, occuper; — *one's self* (*with*), se charger (de).
o'clock, heure, *f.*
October, octobre, *m.*
of, de.
offer, offrir.
office, cabinet, *m.*
officer, officier, *m.*
often, souvent.
oh, oh.
old, vieux, vieil, le; âgé, e; ancien, ne.
old man, vieillard, *m.*
on, sur.
only, seulement.
open, ouvrir.
opinion, avis, *m.*
opponent, adversaire, *m.*
oppose, opposer.
or, ou.
order, *in — to*, pour; afin de; *in — that*, pour que; afin que.
other, autre.
otherwise, autrement; d'ailleurs.
ought, see *owe*.
our, notre, nos.
ours, nôtre.
overcoat, paletot, *m.*; *pardessus, *m.*
overwhelm, accabler.
owe, devoir.
own, propre.

pain, douleur, *f.*
paint, peindre.
painter, peintre, *m.*
painting, peinture, *f.*; tableau, *m.*
pair, paire, *f.*
paper, papier, *m.*
pardon, pardonner.
parent, parent, *m.*
parish priest, curé, *m.*
part, greater, plupart, *f.*
pass, passer.
passion, passion, *f.*
pay, payer.
peak, mont, *m.*
peal, (*thunder*) coup, *m.*
peculiar, étrange.
pedestrian, promeneur, *m.*
pen, plume, *f.*
people, monde, *m.*
per, par (semaine, etc.).
perhaps, peut-être.
period, époque, *f.*
permit, permettre.
persist (in), s'obstiner (à).
person, personne, f.

philosopher, philosophe, *m.*
physician, médecin, *m.*
pick, cueillir.
picture, tableau, *m.*
pious, pieux, se.
pity, be a, être dommage.
place, lieu, *m.*; *pays, *m.*; *take*—, avoir lieu.
place, placer.
plain, *net, te.
play, jouer.
pleasant, agréable.
please, plaire; *if you* —, s'il vous plaît; veuillez, *w. inf.*
pleased, content, e.
pleasure, plaisir, *m.*
poet, poète, *m.*
poetic, poétique.
point, point, *m.*
police, police, *f.*
poor, pauvre.
pope, pape, *m.*
portrait, portrait, *m.*
possession, *take — of*, s'emparer de.
possible, possible.
poverty, pauvreté, *f.*; misère, *f.*
prefer, préférer; aimer mieux.
preference, préférence, *f.*
preparation, préparatif, *m.*
prepare, préparer.
present, présent, *m.*
present, présent, e; *at* —, à présent.
present, présenter.
present, be, assister.
press, serrer.
presumptive, présomptif, ve.
pretty, joli, e; *gentil, le.
prevent, empêcher.
priest, curé, *m.*
prince, prince, *m.*
princess, princesse, *f.*
print, imprimer.
profession, profession, *f.*
promise, promettre.
property, propriété, *f.*
propose, proposer.
provided that, pourvu que.
province, province, *f.*
publish, publier.
punish, *punir.*
punishment, punition, *f.*
pupil, élève, *m.* or *f.*
purpose, *but, *m.*
purse, bourse, *f.*
pursue, poursuivre.
put, mettre.

quality, qualité, *f.*
quarter, quart, *m.*
question, question, *f.*
questioning, interrogatoire, *m.*
quickly, à la hâte.
quiet, *tranquille.

rain, pluie, *f.*
rain, pleuvoir.
raise, lever; élever.
rare, rare.
rather, plutôt.
reach, atteindre.
read, lire.
rebirth, renaissance, *f.*
receive, recevoir.
recital, récit, *m.*
recollection, souvenir, *m.*
red, rouge.
refrain from, s'empêcher.
refuse, refuser.
regard, regarder.
regiment, régiment, *m.*
region, *pays, *m.*
reign, règne, *m.*
reign, régner.
relate, raconter.
relative, parent, *m.*
remain, rester.
remember, se souvenir.
remembrance, souvenir, *m.*
remove, éloigner.
renown, renommée, *f.*
replace, remplacer.
reply, réponse, *f.*
reply, répondre.
reporter, reporter, *m.* (*pr.* **reportẽ·r**).
represent, représenter.
representation, représentation, *f.*
require, demander; exiger.
resistance, résistance, *f.*
resolve, résoudre.
respect, *respect, *m.*
response, réponse, *f.*
rest, appuyer.
restaurant, restaurant, *m.*

retire (*to bed*), se coucher.
return, retour, *m.*
return, retourner.
return home, rentrer.
revery, rêverie, *f.*
rich, riche.
riches, richesse, *f.*
ride, monter.
right, *adj.*, droit, e; *n.*, droit, *m.*
right, be, avoir raison; (*of clocks*) être à l'heure.
righteous, vertueux, se.
rise, se lever.
rising, lever, *m.*
robber, voleur, *m.*
room, chambre, *f.*
rose, rose, *f.*
rouse, éveiller.
ruin, ruine, *f.*
run, courir.
run to, or **up**, accourir.

sad, triste.
saloon, cabaret, *m.*
same, même.
Saturday, samedi, *m.*
say, dire.
scene, scène, *f.*
school, école, *f.*
sculptor, *sculpteur, *m.*
seat, asseoir.
second, *second, e; deuxième.
see, voir.
see again, revoir.
seek, chercher.
seem, sembler.
Seine, Seine, *f.*
seize, saisir; s'emparer de.
sell, vendre.
send, envoyer.
send away, renvoyer.
send for, envoyer chercher.
sensation, sensation, *f.*
September, septembre, *m.*
servant, domestique, *m.* or *f.*
set (*sun*), se coucher; (*table*) mettre (le couvert).
set ahead (*clocks*), avancer.
set back (*clocks*), retarder.
set out, partir.
setting (*sun*), coucher, *m.*
seven, *sept.
seventeen, *dix-sept.
seventy, *soixante-dix.
several, plusieurs.
severely, sévèrement.
she, elle.
shopkeeper, marchand, *m.*
show, montrer.
sick, malade.
side, côté, *m.*
siege, siège, *m.*
signify, vouloir dire.
silence, silence, *m.*
silk, soie, *f.*
silver, argent, *m.*
simplicity, simplicité, *f.*
since, *prep.* & *adv.* depuis; *conj.*, puisque (*causal*), depuis que (*temporal*).
sing, chanter.
sir, *monsieur, *m.*
sister, sœur, *f.*
sit, s'asseoir.
situation, situation, *f.*
six, *six.
sixteen, seize.
sixty, *soixante.
sky, ciel, *m.*
sleep, dormir.
sleepy, be, avoir sommeil.
smile, sourire.
snow, neige, *f.*
snow, neiger.
so, si.
so many, tant.
so much, tant.
social, social, e.
soldier, soldat, *m.*
some, quelque.
some one, quelqu'un, e.
something, quelque chose, *m.*
son, *fils, *m.*
soon, bientôt.
sorrow, chagrin, *m.*; douleur, *f.*
sort, espèce, *f.*
Spanish, espagnol, e.
speak, parler.
spend, dépenser; (*time*) passer.
staff, bâton, *m.*
stage, scène, *f.*
start, partir.
start out, sortir.
state, état, *m.*
statue, statue, *f.*
stay, rester.

stick, bâton.
still, encore.
St. Michael, St.-Michel.
story, histoire, *f.*
story (*of a house*), étage, *m.*
strange, étrange.
stream, ruisseau, *m.*
street, rue, *f.*
stretch out, tendre.
strike, frapper.
stroke, coup, *m.*
strong, fort, e.
study, étudier.
subject, sujet, *m.*; propos, *m.*
success, succès, *m.*
such, tel, le; pareil, le.
suit, cause, *f.*; procès, *m.*
suit, seoir.
suitor, prétendant, *m.*
sum, somme, *f.*
summer, été, *m.*
summit, sommet, *m.*
sun, soleil, *m.*
Sunday, dimanche, *m.*
sunrise, lever (*m.*) du soleil.
support, appuyer.
supreme, suprême.
sure, sûr, e; certain, e.
surround, entourer.

table, table, *f.*
table, set the, mettre le couvert.
tailor, tailleur, *m.*
take, prendre.
take possession (of), s'emparer (de).
tale, histoire, *f.*
talent, talent, *m.*
talk, parler.
tall, grand, e.
tea, thé, *m.*
teacher, maître, *m.*
tell, raconter; dire.
ten, *dix.
terror, terreur, *f.*
thanks, remerciments, *m. pl.*
that, *pron.*, ce, cet, cette.
that, *conj.*, que.
that one, celui; celui-là.
the, le, la, les.
theatre, théâtre, *m.*
their, *leur, leurs.*
theirs, *leur.*
then, alors; *donc.
there, là, y.
therefore, *donc; c'est pourquoi.
there is, *there are*, il y a; voilà.
these, ces; ceux, celles; ceux-ci, celles-ci.
they, ils, elles; on.
thief, voleur, *m.*
thine, tien, ne.
thing, chose, *f.*; objet, *m.*
think (of), penser (à).
thirsty, be, avoir soif.
thirteen, treize.
thirty, trente.
this, ce, cet, cette.
this one, celui; celui-ci.
those, ces; ceux; ceux-là.
thought, pensée, *f.*
thousand, *mil, *mille.
three, trois.
throw, jeter.
thunder, tonnerre, *m.*
Thursday, jeudi, *m.*
thy, ton, ta, tes.
till, *prep.*, jusque; *conj.*, jusqu'à ce que.
time, temps, *m.*; époque, *f.*; *at the same* —, en même temps; *from* — *to* —, de temps en temps; de temps à autre; *a long* —, longtemps; *before the* —, avant l'heure.
time, fois, *f.*; (*four*) *times*, (quatre) fois.
to, à; (*in order to*) pour.
to day, aujourd'hui.
together, ensemble.
tomb, tombeau, *m.*
to-morrow, demain.
tooth, dent, *f.*
touch, toucher.
town, * ville, *f.*
tradition, tradition, *f.*
train, élever.
tranquil, * tranquille.
travel, voyager.
traverse, parcourir.
tree, arbre, *m.*
trouble, peine, *f.*
true, vrai, e.
truth, vérité, *f.*
try, essayer.
try on, essayer.

Tuesday, mardi, *m.*
turn (*the eyes*), promener.
twelve, douze.
twelve o'clock, midi, *m.* (*noon*); minuit, *m.* (*night*).
twenty, *vingt.
two, deux.

umbrella, parapluie, *m.*
uncertain, incertain, e.
uncle, oncle, *m.*
under, sous.
undergo, subir.
understand, comprendre.
undress, se déshabiller.
unfortunate, malheureux, se.
unhappy, malheureux, se.
university, université.
unless, à moins que.
until, jusqu'à ce que.
untrue, faux, sse.
us, nous.
use, employer; se servir de.
use, *make — of*, se servir de.
usually, ordinairement.
utmost, possible, *m.*
utter, jeter.

vacation, vacances, *f. pl.*
vain, do in, beau faire.
very, très; bien.
view, vue, *f.*
vile, bas, se.
virtuous, vertueux, se.
visit, rendre, visite.
vivacity, vivacité, *f.*
voice, voix, *f.*
voyage, voyage, *m.*

wait for, attendre.
waken éveiller.
walk, se promener; marcher; aller à pied.
walker, promeneur, *m.*
wanting, moins.
war, guerre, *f.*
warm, be, avoir chaud.
warn, avertir.
watch, montre, *f.*
way, manière, *f.*
we, nous.
wear, porter.
weather, temps, *m.*
wed, marier; épouser.
Wednesday, mercredi, *m.*
week, semaine, *f.*
what, *adj.*, quel, le; *pron.*, quoi; ce qui, ce que.
whatever, *adj.*, quelconque; *pron.*, quoi que.
when, quand.
where, où.
which, *adj.*, quel, le; *pron.*, qui; lequel.
while, pendant que; tandis que.
white, blanc, che.
who, qui; lequel.
whoever, qui que.
whole, tout, e; entier, ère.
whom, qui; que; lequel.
wide, large.
width, largeur, *f.*
wife, *femme, *f.*; épouse, *f.*
willing, be, vouloir.
win, gagner.
winter, *hiver, *m.*
wish, envie, *f.*; vœu, *m.*
wish, vouloir; désirer.
with, avec; chez.
without, sans.
woman, *femme, *f.*
wonderful, merveilleux, se.
wood, bois, *m.*
word, mot, *m.*; parole, *f.*
work, travail, *m.*
work, travailler.
workman, ouvrier, *m.*
world, monde, *m.*
worth, be, valoir.
write, écrire.
wrong, be, avoir tort.

year, an, *m.*; année, *f.*
yellow, jaune.
yes, oui.
yesterday, hier.
yet, cependant.
you, vous.
young, jeune.
your, votre vos.
yours, vôtre.

INDEX.

(References are to paragraphs.)

Absolute constructions w. part., 161 *g*, 259.
Accent, 20, 38; primary and secondary, 20 *a*.
— -marks, 36 *a*, 40, 41; and see vowels individually,
Address, pronouns of, 172 *b*.
Adjective, decl., 89–92; comp., 93, 94, 166; as adv., 121; as nouns, 164; agreement, 162, 163; place of, 148 *a*, 1, 2, 165; w. inf., 249.
— clause, 143 *c*, 146; instead of ps. p., 146 *d*, cf. 244 *b* 3; place of, 148 *a* 2; subj. in, 236.
Adverb, formation, 120, 121; comp , 93 *b*, 94; syntax, 261–270; of quantity w. *de*, 262, 272 *a* 4 *β*; place of, 263; responsives, 264; negative, 265–270.
Adverbial clause, 143 *b*, 145.
Agency, prepositions of, 217 *b*, 272 *b* 2 *α*, 277 *c* 1, 2.
Agreement, 138; subj. and v., 139, 140; art., 162; adj., 162, 163; part., 162, 253 *a*, *b*, 257; w. *nous* = I, 172 *a*.
Alphabet, 33; phonetic —, 31, 32.
Analogy, 12 *b* 2, 18 *b*, 105 remarks; and passim.
Apostrophe, use of, 36 *e*.
Apposition, 161 *d*; place of noun in, 148 *a* 2.
Article, the, 81; syntax, 151–158; w. proper names, 152; partitive, 153, 154; indefinite, 155; repetition of, 156; omission of, 157, 158.
Auxiliary verbs, conj., 107, 108; synt., 209 *a* 1, 210–212 quasi-aux., 213, 244 *d*.
Capitals, use of, 34.
Cardinal numbers, 95.
Case, history, 85 *a*, *b*; syntax, 160, 161; cf., Pronouns.
Causal clauses, 145 *f*; — relative clauses, 146 *c* 4.
Causation, verbs of, 217 *d*, 244 *b*.
Cedilla, use of, 36 *b*.
Cognate or inner obj. w. intrans. verbs, 209, rem. 3.
Comparison, 80 *b*, 93, 94, 166.
Compound tenses, 103 *e*, 109, 231.
Concession, clauses of, 145 *h*, 146 *c* 6; w. subj., 235 *d*.
Conditional mood, hist., 104 *b* 2, 105, rem. 9; syntax, 228–231.
— clause, 145 *g*; w. subj., 235 *c*.
— sentence, 145 *g* 1.
Conjugation, 80 *c*; forms of, 103–119.
Conjunctions, 142, 144, 145; 282, 283.
Consecutive clause, 145 *c*. 146 *c* 3; w. subj., 235 *b*.
Consonants, history of, 22–29: sounds, 32; pronunciation of, 60–78.
Coördination, 142.
Declension, 30 *a*.
Demonstratives, 99; 185–189.
Dentals, 24.
Diæres's, use of, 36 *c*.
Digraphs, 46–52.
Diphthong, 46.
Elision, 37.
Epenthetic *i*, 22 *b*, *d*, *e*, *g*, *h*.

Final clauses, 145 *d*, 146 *c* 2, 235 *b*.
French, modern, 11; literature, beginnings of, 9.
Folk-Latin, relative to Literary Latin, 5.
Future, see Tense.
Gender of nouns, 82–84; of adjectives, 87–90.
Gerund, hist., 105 *b* 7; syntax, 255 *c*.
Hyphen, use of, 36 *d*, 95 *b*, 185 *a*.
Hypotaxis, 143–146.
Imperative mood, 104 *b* 3; synt., 238.
Imperfect, see Tense.
Impersonal verbs, see Verbs.
Indicative mood, 104 *b* 1; synt., 218; tenses of, 219 ff.
Infinitive mood, 104 *b* 5; synt., 239–252.
Inversion, 125–127, 149.
Labials, 23.
Linking of final consonants, 78.
Liquids, 27.
Loan-words, 12 *a* 2.
Local clauses, 145 *b*.
Modal clauses, 145 *e*.
Mood, see Indicative, etc.
Nasals, 26.
Negative, 124 *a*; synt., 265–270.
Nouns, gender, 82–84; number, 85, 86; syntax, 159–161.
Number, of nouns, 85, 86, 159; of adjectives, 91, 92.
Numerals, 77, 95, 96; syntax, 167, 168.
Ordinal numbers, 96.
Orthographic signs, 36.
Palatalized cónsonants, 29.
Palatals, 25.
Parataxis, 142.
Participle forms, 104 *b* 6, 105 *a*; syntax, 253–260.
Partitive article, 153, 154, 272 *a* 4.
Passive voice, forms, 116; syntax, 217.
Phonetic alphabet, 31, 32, 79.
Phonetic law, changes wrought by, 12 *b* 1.
Phonology, 18 ff.
Plural of nouns, 85–88; of adjectives, 91, 92; of numerals, 95 *d*.
Predicate, 134; expanded, 136 *b*; modifiers of, 137 *b*; acc., 161 *f*, 244 *a* 5.
Prepositions, 271–281.
Prepositional phrase, 137 *a* 1, *b* 3; position, 148 *a* 2, *b* 4; cf. 180.
Present tense, forms, 104 *b*; syntax, 219.
Preterit tense, forms, 103 *b*; syntax, 220, 222.
Pronouns and pronominal adjectives, forms, 97–101; syntax, 169–208.
— Personal, forms, 97; syntax, 170–180; reflexives, 177.
— Possessive, forms, 98; syntax, 181–184.
— Demonstrative, forms, 99; syntax, 185–189.
— Relative, forms, 100; syntax, 190–195.
— Interrogative, forms, 101; syntax, 196–198.
— Indefinite, 199–208.
Questions, 123 *b*; inversion in, 126, 127; indirect, 144, 196, 197, 218 *a*; circumlocution, 198.
Repetition of articles, 156; of subject, 126, 132, 179 *a*; of object, 137 *b* 1 *α*, 179 *b*.
— of adjectives, 165 *d*; of possessives, 183; of demonstratives, 185 *b*; of prepositions, 281.
Romance languages, 4.
— literature, beginnings of, 7.
Sentence, syntax of, 123 ff.
Sibilants, 28.
Strassburg oaths, 9.
Subject, syntax of, 131 ff.; omitted, 183; inversion, 149; pronoun-subject, 171, 172.
Subjunctive mood, forms, 104 *b* 4; syntax, 232–237.
Subordination (hypotaxis), 143, 142, rem., 283.
Substantive clause, 143 *a*, 144; cf. 234.

Syllables, open and closed, 20 *b*.
Syllabification, 35.
Temporal clauses, 145 *a*, 235 *a*.
Tense, hist., 104 *a*; endings, 105, 106; tenses of the indicative, 219–227; of the subjunctive, 237.
Trigraphs, 46.
Velars, 25 *c*.
Verbs, conjugation, 103–119; auxiliary, 107, 108; regular, 111–114; irregular, 117–119; syntax, 209–260; reflexive, 115, 209 *c* 1 *α*, 212, rem. 1, 216; impersonal, 214, 215; of naming, etc., construction with, 161 *f*.
Voice, passive, 116, 217.
Vowels, history of, 19–21; sounds, 31; pronunciation of, 39 ff.; silent, 58; nasal, 53–57.
Word-order, 147–150; adjective and noun, 165; object-pronouns, 178; position of adverb, 263; of negative, 266, 267 *a*, *b*.

GERMAN AND FRENCH DICTIONARIES.

WHITNEY'S (W. D.) COMPENDIOUS GERMAN AND ENGLISH DICTIONARY. *Cheaper Edition.* 538 + 362 pp. 12mo. $1.50, *retail.*

The standard American German dictionary.

It defines some 60,000 words in such a manner as to give command over a vastly larger number by (1) Placing the original meaning first and exhibiting the development of secondary meanings; (2) Marking historical correspondences between German and English words (a particularly helpful device); and (3) Indicating etymologies, particularly the derivation of German words from one another.

GASC'S (F. E. A.) STUDENTS' DICTIONARY OF THE FRENCH AND ENGLISH LANGUAGES. *Cheaper Edition.* 1186 pp. 12mo. $1.50, *retail.*

It is full, modern, idiomatic, and accurate. It defines thousands of French words found in no other French and English dictionary. Space for these has been made by the judicious omission of words alike in both languages, by giving only one of two or three English renderings almost exactly synonymous, and by various devices in arrangement. All the shades of significance a word assumes in various connections (those of recent origin in particular) are carefully canvassed, and its force in each one fully explained. Words that have many idiomatic applications get an unusual proportion of space.

GASC'S LIBRARY FRENCH AND ENGLISH DICTIONARY. 956 pp. (3 columns.) 8vo. $4.00, *net.*

An expansion of the author's Students' Dictionary. It compares favorably, both for completeness and convenience, with any French and English dictionary extant.

GASC'S POCKET DICTIONARY OF THE FRENCH AND ENGLISH LANGUAGES. 647 pp. 18mo. $1.00, *net.*

This edition differs from the Students' Dictionary chiefly in being in much smaller type. The number of words treated, and of idiomatic uses noted, is somewhat smaller.

BELLOWS' (J.) FRENCH AND ENGLISH DICTIONARY. 605 pp. 12mo. $1.00, *net.*

Of the Pocket Edition (Teachers' price, $2.55 and $3.10) Dr. HOLMES says: "I was fairly astonished that such an atom of a book could be such a cyclopædia of phrases."

HENRY HOLT & CO., 29 West 23d St., New York.
378 Wabash Ave., Chicago.

VII '98

A Few Unhackneyed Texts in

MODERN FRENCH LITERATURE.

LOTI: SELECTIONS (CAMERON).
Authorized Edition. vii + 185 pp. 16mo. 70 cents, *net.*

The stories Chagrin d'un vieux forçat and Viande de boucherie, and representative episodes, that stand out vivid and complete in themselves, from Le Mariage de Loti, Le Roman d'un Spahi, Mon frère Yves, Pêcheur d'Islande, Madame Chrysanthème, Japoneries d'automne, and Au Maroc.

L. Oscar Kuhns, Professor in Wesleyan University, Conn.:—The edition is in every way an excellent one, and ought to be largely used. I myself think that few modern writers are more adapted to be used by learners of French than Loti, and I hope next year to make use of your edition.

COPPÉE AND DE MAUPASSANT: TALES (CAMERON).
With two portraits. xlviii + 188 pp. 16mo. Cloth. 75 cents, *net.*

Includes: COPPÉE—Le Morceau du Pain, Deux Pitres, Un Vieux de la Vieille, Les Vices du Capitaine, Scenario, La Robe Blanche, La Remplaçant, Un Enterrement Dramatique, etc. DE MAUPASSANT—La Peur, La Main, Garçon, un Bock, En Voyage, Apparition, Les Idées du Colonel, etc.

Prof. Wm. K. Gillett, of N. Y. University:—The students are unanimous in saying that they have never been better pleased with any text-book.

Prof. A. H. Edgren, of the University of Nebraska:—Cameron's excellent biographies of Coppée and Maupassant will do their part to make these authors appreciated.

COPPÉE'S ON REND L'ARGENT (BRONSON).
A novel giving vivid pictures of the Paris of to-day. With eight illustrations. 184 pp. Narrow 16mo. Cloth. 60 cents, *net.*

Joseph S. Ford, of Phillips Exeter Academy: It is attractive in every way, and is moreover thoroughly French in appearance. The notes are well done and show a knowledge of Paris at first hand, a requirement particularly necessary in an editor of Coppée. I have wanted something of this kind for a long while, and shall certainly make use of the present edition.

OHNET'S LA FILLE DU DÉPUTÉ (BECK).
v + 204 pp. 16mo. 50 cents, *net.*

A vigorous, colloquial story of love and politics in the French capital by the author of Le Maître de Forges, enlivened by touches of delicious humor, and giving excellent training in French conversation.

Otis G. Bunnell, Instructor in Yale University:—I found La Fille du Député to be a simple yet charming story, and one that I enjoyed reading. I am sure every one who reads it will be of the same opinion.

MUSSET'S LE MERLE BLANC (WILLIAMS and COINTAT).
iv + 50 pp. Boards. 30 cents, *net.*

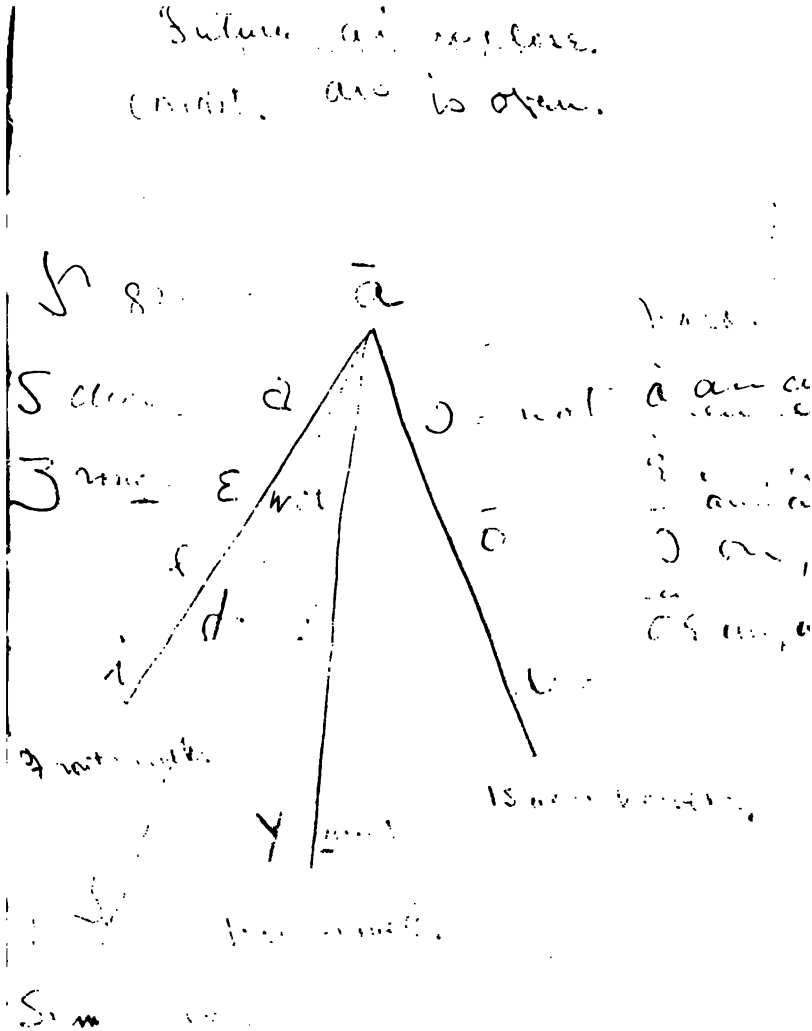
This exquisite story of Musset's is uncommonly interesting and sympathetic, and has been found to be admirably suited to second-year classes.

TOEPFFER'S LE BIBLIOTHÈQUE DE MON ONCLE.
No Notes. 176 pp. Cloth. 50 cents, *net.*

A delightfully humorous tale that has been repeatedly used with Freshmen in some of our leading colleges. Mr. Robert L. Taylor, of Yale University, is preparing a brief introduction and notes for this edition.

Full Descriptive List of Foreign Language Books Free.

HENRY HOLT & CO., 29 West 23d St., New York.
378 Wabash Ave., Chicago.



THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY
REFERENCE DEPARTMENT

This book is under no circumstances to be taken from the Building

Form 418